

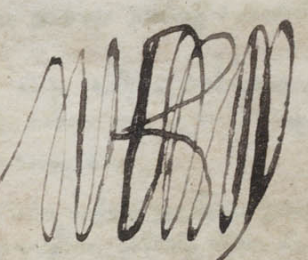
1486
A 2)
H m d m
R. 5



R. 5

22. 11. 81
B. 2. 81

John H. Munn




Large edition of W. G. L.
see Vol. 2 Comb. Hist. of Bible p. 397
June 1 5-14

Refert Josephus in diente dno egyptu non fuisse templu ⁊ egypto m q nō cadet ⁊ cōfringere aliq̃ idoluꝝ iſſay
In dente egyptu ⁊ cōmouebatur ſimulacra ei⁹
plurimaꝝ annuꝝ rex p̄herant Aſpiciat ſc̄pt̄ p̄ſſe dñs
A ſcolonia neceꝝ queros anteq̃m iohenn
⁊ iariſoboli ⁊ nepos herodis magni
Agrippa iacobu claudenſ in carcere poerū

Here bigynne we newe testamēt

Born as he is putt first i orde
so first he wrote ye gospel in ier
is langage whos clepis to god wa
fro puplicans dedis he takege bi
fore. ye bigynnyngis of tikeyne. i
brahm & davn in genacioun of cit.
of coon fis abrahm of ye which ye
furte articulacioun was in fleuth of
anof davn whos eleccion was actu
herthe of bove fadris forefore cit we
born & so ye noubre of fourtene y
es putt. he strecchege for ye bigyn
nyng. fro ye seip of bilemyge was
in abrahm into ye tyme of chesing
was in davn & dreslinge fro chesig.
anoon unto ye day of tynnyngcioun. &
dyspyge fro ye day of tynnyngcioun.
anoon ito cit. he shewip ye genaci
oun of ye comyg of cit. fulfild epi
passinge in reuynng & he makige god
od bove to ye noubre & to ye tyme bo
ve shulde shewe hi self what he be
re and in hym self mynistrige ye
werk of god. also in hem whos kyn
rede he putte of shulde not denye
ye witnesse of cit. worchige fro ye
bigynnyng of alle. whiche yigis ye
tyme ye orde ye noubre ye dispo
sicion ef ye releson is & cit is god.
pat is necessarie to ye seip ye whi
ch was maid of albmman maid on
du laue. born of amaye sustre
in fleuth al pig fathid i ye croll
& he oonmyge pulke pigs in hy
siff rplige in body bove ye name
of ye fadn. in fadus to ye sone. &
ye sones name to ye fadn. restori
ge in sones wyoute bigynnyng. w
oute endyng shewynge ye fadn.

to be oon wyf hi for he is oon in ve is
hich gospels it is profitable to me de
sirige god so to knowe ye furste ye
mydmette of ye laste v^e yei redige
bi alle pigis vnderstonde bope ye
clepynge of ye apostle & ye werk of ye
gospel & ye loue of god kenneynge i fle
with and yei beknowe in hym in ye wh
ich yei be knowe & desirir to knowe
to us forsope it was to studie of pre
nyge bope to take ye fear of yis do
& not to be stille to me lechige bily
liche ye ordynance of god wordhige
to be vnderstonde // **Here endy ye**
prolog: & bigynner ye gospel of mat


 The booke of re / generationū of thū
 ēat: ve lone of **Dauid**
 ve lone of **Abrahā** **A**
 brahā gedurē oz bigat
 ac **h**at forlore bygāt **Jacob** **J**a
 cob forlore bygāt **Judas** **J**me
 bywerē **Judas** forlore bygāt **pha**
 res **z**aram of thainar **f**ares for
 lore bygāt **eliom** **E**liom forlo
 re bygāt **aram** **A**ram forlore
 bygāt **amnadab** **A**mnadab for
 lore bygāt **naidon** **N**aidon for
 lore bygāt **salmon** **S**almon forlore
 bigat booz of raab **B**ooz forlore
 bigat obeth of rith **O**beth forlo
 re bigat ielle **J**elle forlore bigat da
 uid **D**auid forlore re big
 bigat salomon of **s** **romā** **r** was
 vries **w** **Salomō** forlore bigat
 roboam **R**oboam forlore bigat ab
 as **A**bas forlore bigat ala **A**la for
 lore bigat iolaphach **I**olaphach forlo
 re bigat iozam **I**oram forlore bigat
 ohas **O**has forlore bigat ioathan
Ioathan forlore bigat achaz **A**chaz

in q. 2 roachim et chadim
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

do ad fons p. m. b. h. e.
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

den filia fup. d. p. b. h. e.
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

arta p. m. b. h. e. p. b. h. e.
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

in m. d. e. p. b. h. e. p. b. h. e.
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

in m. d. e. p. b. h. e. p. b. h. e.
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

forlore bigat ezechie. Ezechie for
lope bigat manasses. Manasses for
lope bigat amon. And forlore bi
gat iohas. Iohas forlore bigat ie
couyas. E hile berpen into ye tū
migraciō of babiloyne. And af
te tūmigraciō of babiloyne.
Iecoyas bigat salatiel. Salatiel
forlore bigat zorobabel. Zorobabel
forlore bigat abut. Abut for
lope bigat elyachy. Elyachy for
lope bigat asor. Asor forlore bigat
sador. Sador forlore bigat achym.
Achym forlore bigat elyut. Elyut for
lope bigat eleasar. Eleasar forlore
bigat mathan. Mathan forlore by
gat jacob. Jacob forlore bigat ioseph
ye hōlebonde of marie. of which
marie he was born. Yis clepid e
pfore alle genaciōis from abrahā
til to dāny. ben fourtene genera
ciōis. E from dāny til to tūmigraci
ciō of babiloyne. ben fourtene ge
naciōis. And fro ye tūmigraci
ciō of babiloyne til to e. ben fo
tene genaciōis. forlore ye gena
ciō of e. was pus. **W**hile ma
rie his mod was spousid to ioseph
bifore y rei came to gize. she was
fouidū hānyge of ye hooly gost in
ye wombe. Ioseph forlore hū hōle
bonde whāne he was mit mā oz
rist ful. E wolde not purpūthe hū.
wolde p. p. neli forlake hū. Ioseph
while he pouste pes p. gis. lo ye an
gel of ye lord. apperide in sleep
to hy. E seide. Ioseph ye lone of da
ny. nyle p. d. e. to take marie in
wyf. for yat p. g. y is born i hū.
is of ye hooly gost. Ioseph she shal
bere a sone. E pou shal depe his
name ihe. for he shal make his

name ihe. for he shal make his
peple saf fro her synes. forlope
al p. g. was don. Y it shulde be
fulfillid y was seid of ye lord bi a
phete seynge. lo a virgyn shal ba
re in wombe. E she shal bere a sone.
E rei shulen depe his name ema
nuel. Y is interpretid oz ex pōitid
god wip us. Ioseph roos fro
sleep. E dū as ye angel of ye lord
comandide hū. E took marie his
wyf. And he bare hū. not tū she
hadde born hū. fūthe genidū lōne
E clepid his name ihe. **W**hile ihe was bo
zū in betleem of iuda. in
ye dayes of king eroude.
Too kyngis oz wyle mē came fro re
eest to ierlm. E seide. wher is he y
is born king of ierlm. for we han
seyn his ster in ye eest. E we comē
for to worshipe hym. Ioseph king
eroude herde. E was tūtblid. E al
ierlm wip hy. And he gedūte to gy
de alle ye p. nces of p. ntes. E arbi
of ye peple. E enqueride of hem.
where e. shulde be born. E rei se
den to hym. in betleem of iuda.
for so it is writū bi a profete. E y
betleem ye lond of iuda. art not
ye lēste in ye p. nces of iuda. for of
ye a duke shal gon out. Y shal
gouverne my peple of ierlm. vāne e
roude depide p. n. y. E kyngis. E ler
nede blyth of hem ye tyme of ye
ster. yat apperide to he. E he sente
hem ito betleem. E septe goze.
axe ze blyth of ye child. E whāne ze
han fouidū. telle aen to me. Y
I come. E worshipe hym. whiche
wylis rei hadden herd ye kyng.
wentū asey. And lo ye ster. whiche

neq. domus rei sapien in ye eest. wente bifore he.
til it cam. E stood aboue wher ye child
was. forlore rei syen ye ster. And
joyete wip a ful greet ioye. And rei
entritū into ye hous. E fouiden ye
child. wip marie his modir. E rei
felten don. E worshipe hym. E
whāne rei hadden openyd her tre
sours. rei ofūte to hi. zittis gold en
teule. E mir. E whāne rei hadden
take anlyer in sleep. Y rei shul
den not tū aen to eroude. rei tū
neten aen aen bi anoy. wye ito
her. cūte. And whāne rei hadde go
awey. lo ye angel of ye lord apper
ide in sleep to ioseph. E seide. rylt up
E take ye child. E his modir. E flee
into egypt. E be pou p. e. til y seie
to pee. for it is to come. Y eroude
seke ye child for to leste hym. whiche
ioseph roos. E took ye child. E his
modir bi nyxt. E wente into egypt.
E he was pere til to ye deap of erou
de. Y it shulde be fulfillid y was
seid of ye lord bi ye phete seynge.
fro egypt. I have clepid my sone.
vāne eroude seynge. y he was stor
myd oz dysseyued of ye kyngis. was
greetly wroop. E he sente. E slow.
alle ye childre y were in betleem
E in alle ye endis of it. fro tuo jee
age. E wip yne. afur ye tyme y he
hadde souyt out. of ye kyngis. vāne
it was fulfillid yat was seid bi ye
reunye ye p. fete seynge. a vois is
herd an hū. wip y. E moche weylig.
rachel by wip y. hū sones. E she
wolte not be coufortid for rei be
not. **S**orely whāne eroude was de
ed. lo ye angel of ye lord apperide
i sleep to ioseph i egypt. E seide. ryl
le up. E take ye child. E his modir.
E go into ye lond of ierlm. for rei

pat souyte re lff of re child. be teed
whiche ioseph roos. E took ye child. E
his modir. E cam ito ye lond of ier
rael. forlore ye herde y archelaus
regnede in iude for eroude his fa
dir. E drebde for to go ridir. And
he was monettid in sleep. E wen
te into ye parties of galilee. E he
cam. E dyette in a citee. E is clepid
nalsareth. Y it shulde be fulfillid.
yat was seid bi profetes. forwh he
shal be clepid nalsareth. **E** m. i. a. n. g.
I. ye ilke dayes iohn baptis
cam. E p. e. h. t. e. in ye deleyt
of iude. E seide. do ze penan
ce. for ye kyngdom of heueneis shal
neze oz come nyz. for yis is he of
whom it is seid bi iane ye profete
seynge. a. v. o. i. s. o. f. a. t. r. i. e. t. e. in. t. e. l. e. t.
make ze redy ye weyes of ye lord.
make ze rytful ye paris of hy. for
lope p. l. k. e. i. d. n. hadde a. c. t. o. y. of ye l. e. e.
ris of camels. E a gardil of oley. for
aboute his lēdis. Ioseph his me
te was locustis of ye wode. E hom
vāne ierulale wente out to hym
E al iude. E al ye cunt. aboute ier
dan. E rei were waitū of hū in iuda.
E knowlechte her synes. Ioseph he
biz manye of familes. E of sadu
tees. compge to his baptem. E sei
de to he. ge. n. a. c. i. o. n. i. s. of. e. d. d. n. s. w. h. o.
shewide to zū. for to fle fro ierap
ye to come. Y foz do ze wropt. fū
tis of penance. E nyle ze seie wip
fne zū. we han ye fadr abrahā
for y seye to zū. y god is myt y
to reyle up. of pes foonies. ye
sones of abrahā. for noy ye a
is put to ye roote of ye tree. so
rely enery tree yat makir not
good frunt. shal be kut don. E
shal be sent into fier. forlope

20. ano herodis nat. e. d. a.
et c. p. b. p. b. p. b. p. b.

n. d. n. e. t. e. q. n. a. d. i. s. t. i. n.
p. l. a. t. u. s. m. i. s. t. i. s. a. v. a. m.

f. i. r. e. t. e. n. e. n. a. v. p. l. o. s. d. e. v. a.
n. g. a. d. s. b. a. f. e. s. a. m.

o. t. a. m. a. l. a. a. n. t. e. b. a. p. a. b. i.
e. d. e. q. n. a. d. o.

l. o. g. e. p. o. r. t. e. f. l. o. g. e. a.
e. l. a. m. a. s. i. n. d. u. s. i. s. a. a. n. t. e.
e. x. p. d. i. g. n. a. l. o. g. e. f. l. a.

z. o. n. e. m. i. d. e. o. y. s. o. l. e. t. z. e. l. a. n. c. e.
l. o. c. u. s. t. e. g. n. a. a. l. i. a. a. d. m. e. t.

n. f. i. n. o. n. e. s. s. i. n. o. s. p. f. e. d. a. c. o. n. i.
c. o. m. e. d. i. s. s. e. t. n. i. x. o. s. o. s. m. i. d. e. a.
v. o. c. e. m. e. x. p. l. e. t.

v. h. i. m. i. l. l. a. q. u. a. c. o. l. l. a. t. a. e. i.
s. u. s. a. p. e. n. t. d. e. n. o. t. a. t. i. o. n. e.

q. f. o. r. i. s. p. i. c. h. m. e. f. u. e. n. e. n. o. s. f.
i. n. h. o. c. c. o. n. s. i. d. e. r. e. t.

q. d. e. d. e. n. t. i. s. q. a. p. o. i. s.
i. n. h. o. c. c. o. n. s. i. d. e. r. e. t.

q. u. e. d. y. v. i. p. p. e. t. i. s. a. t.
o. b. z. o. d. a. p. i. s. r. a. t. i. o. n. e. s. e. i.

q. u. e. d. y. v. i. p. p. e. t. i. s. a. t.
o. b. z. o. d. a. p. i. s. r. a. t. i. o. n. e. s. e. i.

I wanthe 3on i watu into penaunce
but he pat shal come after me. is for
onger ran / whos shoon I am not
worri to ber / he shal baptise or etne
3on in pe hooly gost & fier whos wif
newbig dop or tan is i his hond. & he
shal fully deuse his corn flooz & shal
gader his whete ito his berne. but
chathis he shal brene wif fier unque
chable or pene shal be quenched

D. I rane ihc cam fro gahle into jorda
to John. for to be etened of hy / sove
li John forbed hy & seide / I owe forto
be etened of pec. & you comest to
me / forlope ihu answeride & seide
to hy / suffer now / for so it bitomep
us to fulfille al myshulnesse / pane
John leet hy or sufferide hy forlope
ihc was etened & stey up anoo fro
pe watu / and lo hevenes were o
penid to hy. & he sz pe spirt of god
comyge dou as a culver. & comyn
ge on hy / & lo a wop fro hevenes
seynge / pis is my loved sone. i whi
ch I have plesid to me

A. Anne ihc was led of a spi
rit into desert. p he shul
de be teptid of pe deupl / & wha
ne he hadde fastid fourty day
es. & fourty nyttis. afterward
he hyngride & pe teptur cam myz.
& seide to hym / if you art godis sone
sepe p pes stoones be maid lozes
which answeride & seide to hym / it
is writun / ama hyngr not i breed al
doone. but in every woz pat comep
forz fro pe moyn of god / pane pe
deupl took hi into an hooly citee. &
sethde hi on pe pynacle of pe tem
ple & seide to hi / if p art godis so
ne. leude p don / for it is writun / for
to his angelis he comandite of pec.
& pei shulen take pec in hondis.

ego pmitto ille dabit.

met johem pla a so fusle
tygati f e

mm q baptizati pater p fiant
f apparitio

f bala fulgor tader duram
f dnu pma wop andur

panes fuit cu diua dila
te audire

centis e ordme p gese
me teptatur ade f ang

i magis certandu e qm
calis

destina tecta plana habet
in roas ne qf tatur labet

inades p pceptu no p
p. tauru ad fusa. ioh
le tept de capite qf bene
corpor

lest peranetun p harte vi foot at
a stoon / estloone ihu seide to hy / it is
writun / p shalt not tepte p i loz god
estloone pe deupl took hi into a ful
hiz hil. & thewite to hym alle pe rev
mes of pe world. & pe gloze of hem.
& seide to hy / alle pes pigns i shal
zyne to pec. if p falle dou & woridh
pe me / pane ihc seide to hi / go i jor
nas / for it is writun / pon shalt wor
idhepe p i loz god. & to hi gloone p
shalt lerne / pane pe deupl seide hi
and lo angelis camen myz. & lerne
to hi

S. Soreli whane ihc hadde be
rd. p ioh was takit. he wente into
gahle & he seide pe citee of nardreth
& cam & dwelte in pe citee of catar
nau blyth pe se. in pe endis of sabi
lon & nephalym / p it shulde be
fulfild pat was leid by flape re
pfete / pe lond of sabulon & pe lond
of nepthalym. pe weye of pe see of
jordan. of gahle of heven me. pe pe
ple p walkide i der thellis. hys greet
lyt / and while me lanten i pe ciur
of nardreth of deop. hys roos to he
fro peins forz ihc began to preche
& seide / do ze penaunce / for pe kyngd
of hevenes shal come myz

S. Sorely ihc walkide i hysdis pe see of ga
hile. & hys twey bypen. symon pat
is clepid petre. & andrew hys brof.
puttuge nett into pe see / for pei we
re fyszheris / & he seide to hem / co
me ze after me. & i shal make you
to be maid fyszheris of me / & anoo
pei forloken her nettis. & fueden
hym / & he zede forz fro p place. &
sz tweyne ope bypen. James of
sebede. & john hys brof. in pe shup
wif sebede her cadn. malige aen
or beetige hor nettis / & he depide he
lopeth anoo pei forloken pe nettis

apti vocati sut pmo i simplia noticiu / johi domi
lhyuare lueq. ceruo i aptatu / h 2 me 4

E. & pe sadu. & hiede hi and ihc euy
roynede al gahlee. techige in pe
synagogis of hem. & prechige pe
gospel of kyngdom & heilige al
sowz or actie. & al sybenelle i re
peple / & hys opnyon of fame. wen
te into al ttre. & pei bronzte to hi
alle me hange puel takii wif
dyuerle lozvis & turmetris. & he
pat hadde denelis. & innatyk me
& me in palasie. & he hee lide he
and p fueden hi many cipames
of gahle & of decapoly. & of ierlin.
of Jude & of byzoute jordan

E. Helus forlope sz ci / & he
pampes. & wente up. ito an hil
and whie he hadde sete. hys disti
plis came myz to hym / & he openide
hys mouz & taunte hem & seide / ble
sid be pe pore in spirt. for pe ky
ngdom of hevenes is hern / blid be
impe me. for pei shulen welde pe
erpe. bleid be pei pat mochen for
pei shulen be confortid / bleid be
pei pat hugren & pynken ryzwif
nelle. for pei shule be fulfild / ble
sid be merciful me. for pei shule
gete myz / bleid be pei pat be of
dene herte. for pei shule se god
bleid be peible me. for pei shu
len be clepid pe sonis of god / ble
sid be pei pat suffren perlecution
for ryzfulnesse. for pe kyngdom of he
venes is hern / ze shule be bleid
whane me shulen carle you. & shu
len purhie you. & shule sepe al puel
azens you. & he for me / joye ze wif
me. & glade ze wipoute forz. for you
re mede is plenteuous in hevenes
for lo pei han purhied allo pfetis
pat weren bifoze you

E. Ze ben salt of
the erpe / p if pe salt vampe the aures.
wher me shal it be saltid / to no pig

caule air dnm curba scda fnt
ere tollendo

magis pigns dactum
magis pigns dactum

magis pigns dactum
magis pigns dactum

magis pigns dactum
magis pigns dactum

magis pigns dactum
magis pigns dactum

it is wozp eney. no but p it be cast
ont & be de toud of me he ben lzt
of pe world / a citee put ou an hu
may not be hid / ney me tenden a
lant ne. & putte it rudir a bul thel.
but ou a candilstake pat it zyne lzt
to alle pat ben i pe hous / so shyne
zour lzt bifoze me. & pei se zour
goode werkis. & glozif zour cadn
which is in hevenes

E. While ze geile
or deme p / I cam to vndo or distre
pe lake or profetie / I cam not to
do pe lame. but to fulfille / forlope
I seie to you treime. til hevene & er
pe palle. con / I se pe see the letre.
or o titil. shal not palle fro pe lame.
til alle pigns be don / pfore he pat vn
dor or beekp oon of pes see the man
demetris. & techy pus me. shal be
clepid pe see the me. & he
nemes / forlope pis pat dom & techy
shal be clepid greet i pe kyngdom of
hevenes

E. forlope I seie to you p
no but zour ryzfulnesse be more
plenteuous. pa of arabis & farusee
ze shulen not entri into kyngdom of
hevenes / ze han herd p it was leid
to elde me you shalt not sle forso
pe he p sleep. shal be gilty of dom
but I seie to you for ech ma pat is
wroz to his brof. shal be gilty of
dom / forlope he pat leyn to his brof
rara p is a word of storn. shal be
gilty of conceit / soreli he pat leyn fool.
shal be gilty of pe fyre of helle / p
fore if you offrit p zifte at pe aut
& pei byenka. p p broper hap lii
what azen / pec loef pei p zifte by
fore pe auter. & ge turt forto be
reconceid to p brof or accord / &
pane you shalt come. & shalt of
fre p zifte / be you consentige to
p aduersarie soone pe while you

fat qf lupo
falditay vite
et amode tepaly

leg pnt dabit ad dedm / a m
phla ad sand / bonid / o pado
her rededox. illa tchoant / h
fryuxit. dnu completit
elemen mite & tmitabile

motus. epo 21
ira & malus motus necesse a
surpge & veniale dnt ex bdi
ex pnt msa. ut q a dit cdu
a motalis & veniale a pte ex
gratiam q dnt ex pte a pte
pntum videte & motalis

gu q honora dnm de tua
de apo

ad concordia
a ad concordia

eres iudiciu & distictio ead qn culpa & carita. Cosilue distictio sine qn culpa & nota
marta Gehena & excentio sine qn ta culpa & pena nota e

cūtre of mē of gerasa: twey men ha
upnge denels rimen to hi & zete out
fro biuels & weren ful fiers or wic
kid so p^r no man myzte passe bi par
weye: & lo rei crieden seynge/ what
to us & to see ihu ye sone of god/ ha
st pou comū hidur bifoze ye tyme
foz to turme us/ sopen a flok
oz droue of many hoggis leseri
ge was not fer fro hem/ but ye
denels priede hi & seide/ if pou cal
tist out us fro hēms: sente vs i
to ye droue of hoggis/ and he seide
to hē/ go ze/ & rei zete out & wente
into ye droue of hoggis/ & so in a
greet hur. al ye droue wente heed
lynge into ye see: & rei were ded
in watris/ forsope ye heerdis fled
den a wey: & rei came into ye cite
& telden alle res pigis. & of hem p^r
hadden ye feudis/ & lo al ye cite
wente out azens ihu/ & whāne rei
hadden seyn hym. rei prieden hym
if he wolte passe fro her coostis.

And ihc wente **cap. 11.**
up into aboot: & pallide
on ye watir. & cam ito
his cite/ and lo rei brouste to hi
ama syl in paleste: liggynge i a
bedd/ forsope ihc syz ye fery of hē.
& seide to ye ma syl in palastie/ lo
ne hane pou trist: i synes ben
forzoun to pee/ & lo sūme of ye
scribis: seiden wy tūe hem oif/
rys blafemey/ and whāne ihc had
de seyn her pouztis: he seide/ wher
to penken ze yuele pigis i zour
hertis/ what is it lyter to sepe
i synes ben forzoun to pee: of to sepe
ryle p^r & walke/ forsope p^r ze wite pat
man sone hap power. to forzyne
synes on erpe/ p^rue he seide to ye sy
be ma i paleste/ ryse up & take ri
bed. & go ito ri hols.

And he roos: & wente into his hon
sopen ye cūpanyes syzen & dreb
den & glorifieden god pat zaf such
power to mē. **cap. 12.** And whāne ihc pa
sside fro rēms: he syz ama mad
by name sittige in a tollboze/ &
he seide to hē/ sūme pou me and
he roos & folowide hym/ & it was don
ye whils he sat at ye mete in ye ho.
lo many purplicas & syful men
came & satten at ye mete wy ihu
& hile dylupis/ and farilees syze.
& seiden to hile dylupis/ whi ety
zour maistr wy purplicas & sy
ful mē/ & ihc herde & seide/ a lēthe
is not nedeful to mē. **cap. 13.**
faren wel. but to mē hānyge yue
le/ but go ze & lerne what it is. i
wole mercy & not sacrifice/ for i
cam not to clepe ryzful mē: but
syful mē. **cap. 14.** pāne ye dylupis of
john came nyz. to hē & seiden/ whā
ne & farilees fasten ofte. but pi
dylupis fasten not/ and ihc seide
to hem/ wher ye sones of ye spou
se oz holebonte moyn weile oz mo
ne. as longe as spoule is wy hē.
sopen daves shulen come. whā
ne ye spoule shal be takū away
fro hem: & pāne rei shule faste
sopen no mā sendyng a medlyng
of rude oz uerpe cloy into an old
foz he taky away. ye plente of
it fro ye cloy. & a werse kyttyng
is maad/ ney mē senden neibe
wyn into olde vessels/ ellis ye
vessels ben brokū. & ye wyn is sh
ed out & ye wyn vessels perusth
but mē senden neibe wyn ito ne
we wyn vessels: & bope ben kept.
Whāne ihu spak res pigis to hē.
lo o p^rince cam. & worathpide hē
& seide/ lord my douzter is now

dead: but come pou & putte ri
hond on hū. & she shal lyue/ &
ihc roos & sūbede hē. & hile dyl
upis sūeden/ and lo ama p^r hē
fride flur oz rēnyng of blood th
elue zee: neyete blynde & tou
chide ye hem of his cloy/ for she sei
de wy tūe hū sūf. & i shal tou
che conly ye cloyis of hym. i shal
be sūf/ & ihc turayde & syz hū.
& seide/ douzter hane pou trist. p^r
few har maad pee sūf. & ye wō
ma was maad sūf fro p^r our. &
whāne ihc cam ito ye hous of ye
pnce. & syz mynstrels & ye cūpa
ny makige noyle: he seide/ go ze
away/ for ye wenche is not deed.
but slepy: & rei stornede hym.
and whāne ye cūpany was cast
out: he entride. & heeld hū hond/
& ye wenche roos up/ and p^r fa
me wente out into al pat lond/ &
whāne ihu pallide fro yē twey bly
de mē cryge sūeden hē & seynge/ p^r
sone of daup hane mercy on us/ so
peli whāne he cam into ye hous: ye
blynde mē camen nyz to hē. & ihc
seide to hē. what wolen ze pat i do
to zou/ & rei seiden lord. p^r our yzen
be openyd/ & ihc seide/ blynde ze: p^r
i may do ris pig to zou/ rei seide
to hym/ zhe lord/ pāne he touchide
her yzen: & seide/ up zour fery: be
it don to zou/ & ye yzen of hē were
openyd/ & ihc p^retende hē. & seide/
ze ze p^r no mā wite/ but rei zeden
out & deffampte hē p^rour al pat lod/
sopen whāne rei were gon out: lo
rei brouste to hym adoub mā hāny
ge a denel/ & whāne ye denel was
cast out: ye doub mā spak/ & ye
cūpanyes wondride seynge/ it
apperide neibe so i ihc/ but ye fa

risees seiden/ in ye pnce of denels
he casty out denels/ And ihc cū
pallide aboute alle entees & castels.
redhige in synagogis of hē/ & p^r
chige ye golpel of kyngdom. & hee
hige al langwytthig oz acte & al sy
kenes/ forsope ihc syz cūpanyes &
hadde reipe on hem: for rei were
tranelid & liggynge. as i sheep not
hānyge a sheparde/ pāne he seide
to hile dylupis/ sopen yis moche
rype corn. but ferpe werkmē/ &
foze p^rere ze ye lord of ye rype corn.
he seide werkmē into his rype
corn. **cap. 15.**

And whāne hile twelue dyl
upis were clepid to gi
oze: he zaf to hē power of vndene
spurtis. & rei shulde caste hē out.
& p^r rei shulden heele al ache & al
syk nelle/ forsope res ben ye na
mes of twelue apostlis/ ye firste
symoūt pat is seid petre & andrew
his brop/ james of sebede: & iohn
his brop/ philip & bartholomey.
thoms & matheu purpican. & ja
mes alsey & tadee. symoūt cana
ne. & judas itarioth which betray
ede cit/ ihc sente res twelue. & co
mandite to hem & seide/ go ze not
into ye weye of here men. & entri
ze not into ye citers of samari
tans: but raze go ze to ye sheep
of ye hous of yrael pat perusthete/
sopen ze goynge p^reche. seynge.
foz ye kyngdom of heuenes shal nene/
heele ze syke men. reple ze deed mē.
cleuse ze mesels. caste ze out deue
lis/ freh ze hantakū. freh zyne
ze/ nyle ze welde gold. ney siluer
ne money in zour gublis. not a
drip in ye weye. ney twey coostis.
neyr shoon ney azerte/ for a wer

be don in ture & sydon: su tyme pei
hadde do penance in here & arth
nepeles & seie to zoi. it shal be
more softere. or lesse peyne. to ty
re & sydon: in re day of dom pa to
zoi. and you casarnai. wher til
into heuene you shalt be verid
up. & shalt go don til into hel
le for if ye vertues. pat ben do
in pee. hadde be don in sodom. p
mentin. rei shulden haue dibel
lid til into visday. nepeles & seie
to zoi. for co peloud of sodom it
shal be softere or lesse peyne in
pe day of dom. pan to pee. In
pille tyme ihc answeride & seyde
de. & knowleche to pee fadir. lord
of heuene & erre. for p. hast lid
ves pigis fro wise men & war
or slez me. & hast shewid hem
to meke me. so fadir. for whi. so
it was plesyge to fore pee. alle
pigis ben zoiu to me of my fa
dir. & no ma knew ye sone. no
but ye fadir. ney ony ma knew
ye fadir. no but ye sone. & to wh
om ye sone wolde shewe. alle
ze pat cruele & ben chargid.
come to me. & i shal refreulthe.
or fulfille zoi. take ze my zok
on zoi. & lerne ze of me for i am
mylde & meek in herte. & ze shu
len fynde reste to zoi. soulis
for my zok is swete & my charge

In pat tyme ihc wente
by cornes in ye sabot day
forloze hile discipulis higringe.
bigimen to plucke eeris of corn
& to ete. sovely farisees seynge.
seiden to hym. lo pi discipulis doe
pat ring rat is not leetful to he
for to do in sabotis. and he seide

to hem. wher ze han not redd.
what damp dide. whane he hu
gride. & rei pat weren wy hy.
how he entride into ye hous of
god. & eet loones of pposicion. whi
che loones it was not leueful
to hym to ete. ney to hem pat
weren wy hy. no but to prestis
aloone. or wher ze han not rad
in ye large. for in sabotis. prestis
in ye temple de foulen ye sabo
tis. & rei ben wy outh greet sy
ne. & seye. i seie to zoi. for here
is more pan ye teple. forloze if ze
wisten what it is. i wole merce
not sacrifice. ze shulden neuere
haue condepnd innocentis. for
mans sone is lord. he of ye sa
bot. and whie he passide fro pen.
he cam into ye synagoge of hem.
& lo ama haupge a drye hond. &
rei aride hy & leyden. wher it is
leetful to heele in ye sabot. pat rei
shulde accuse hym. sovely he seide
to he. who shal be ama of zoi. pat
hay o sheep. & if it falle down into
a dich in ye sabotis. wher he shal
not holde. & lyfte it up. how mo
che more is ama bett. pa a she
ep. ver fore it is leetful to do go
od in ye sabotis. pane he seide to
ye uia. streathe for pi hond. &
he strauzte for. & it was resto
rid to heelp as yetour. forloze
farisees goynge out made a cou
cel azens hym. how rei shulden
leele hym. sovely ihc wryte. we
te away fro pen. and manye su
weden hym. & he heelde hem alle
and he comaudide to hem. pat rei
shulden not make hym knowu.
pat pat pig shulde be fulfild.
pat was seid by i saye ye ptere

seynge. lo my child whom i ha
ue chosi. my derlyng in whom
it hay wel plesid to my soule. i
shal putte my spirit ou hym.
& he shal telle dom to hepe men.
he shal not aryue ne crye. ney
ony man shal heer his voys in
streetis. he shal not bzeke to gi
der. a shak. i rehed. & he shal
not quenche smokige flez. til
he caste out dom to victorie. & he
yen me shulden hope in his na
me. pane a blind ma. & doib ha
upge a deucl. was brynt to hy.
& he heelde hym. so pat he spak
& sey. and alle cupanyes wondri
den & seide. wher pis be ye sone
of damp. but ye farisees heer
ge. leyden. he pis castip not out
fendis. no but in bellebub pnce
of fendis. sovely ihc wryte her
poustis. seide to hem. ech kingdo
departid azens it self. shal be
desolatid. and ech citee or hous
departid azens it self. shal not
route. & if sathanas castip out
sathanas. he is departid azens
hi self. pfore how shal his king
dom ronte. & if i in bellebub
caste out deuclis. in whom zoi
re sones casten out. pfore rei
shulden bezour domelme. forloze
if i in ye spirit of god caste out fe
dis. ver fore ye kingdom of god
is come into zoi. epr. how may
ony ma entre into ye hous. of
a strong ma. & take away hile
vells. no but first he bynde
ye strong ma. & rane he shal
raupsthe his hous. he pat is
not wy me. is azens me. & he
pat gaderip not to gidre wy

me. & aterly a brood pfore i seie
to zoi. al syne & blasfemye shal
be forzoiu to me. but blasfemye
of ye spirit. shal not be forzoiu.
and who eu seiy a word azens ma
is sone. & shal be forzoiu. &
who eu seiy a word azens ma
is sone. & shal be forzoiu to
hym. forloze if ama shal seye a
word azens ye hooky gost. & shal
not be forzoiu to hym. ney i vis
world ne in ye toyr. epr. make
ze ye tre good & his fruyt good.
epr. make ze ye tre puel & his
fruyt puel. forloze a tre is kno
we of ye fruyt. ze generacioi
of eddis. how moun ze speke
goode pigis. whie ze ben puele.
for ye moun speke of ye greet
plente of herte. a good ma bri
gy for goode pigis of good tre
sour. and an puel ma brigr for
puele pigis of puel tre sour. for
loze i seye to zoi. forwhi. of epr
pdel word pat me spoken. rei shu
len zelde relou pof in ye day of dom.
for of pi wordis you shalt be iusti
fied. & of pi wordis you shalt be
dampned. pane aume of ye arbis
& farisees. answeride to hym & sei
den. ozant. we wolen se a tokene
of pee. which anliueryge. seide to
hem. an puel genacioi. & auoutr
se. seky a tokene. and a tokene
shal not be zoiu to it. no but ye
tokene of jonas ye profete. for
as jonas was in ye wombe of a
whal. ye dayes & ye nyztis. so
mans sone shal be in ye herte
of ye erre. ye dayes & ye nyztis.
ozen of nymne shulen ryle in
dom wy pis generacioi. & shule

condempne it. for peiiden penaunce
in ye prechynge of jonas and so her
is more pa jonas pe queene of ye
sony thal ryle in dom wyris ge
neracion & thal condempne it. for
she cam fro ye eendis of ye erpe
for to heer ye wysdom of salomo
and lo her is more van salomon
forlope whane au vncleue spirit
hay gon out from ama. he gon bi
dye placis. & sekyp rest & fyndy
not pane he ley / j thal turue a
zen into myn hous. fro whens j
wente out and he comey & fyndy
it vopde. deusid wy besines. &
maid farr pane he gon & taky
wy hym seueue ower spiritis
woyse van hym self. & rei entre
dikelen pet. And ye laste pigis
of pat ma. ben maid. woyle pan
ye former. so it thal be & to ris
woylte generacion. 3it while he
spak to ye cupanyes of peple.
lo his modur & his bzperen stode
wyoute forp sekige for to speke
to hym. sodely su ma seide to hy
lo ri modur & pi bzperen stonden
wyouten forp. sekige pee and
he answeryge to ye ma seynge
to hym. seide / who is my modur.
& who ben my bzperen. and he
holdige forp his hond into hile
dystuplis. seide / lo my modur &
my bzperen. for who enere don
ye wille of my fadir pat is in he
neues. he is my brop & silt & mod.
¶ **E. xij.** rat day ihc goyn
ge out of ye hous. sat bypdis
ye see. and many cupanyes of pe
ple were gadrid to hym. so pat
he stizunge up into aboot. sat / &
al pe cupany stood in ye bynke

and he spak to hem many vigs
in parabis seynge / lo he rat lo
wy zede out to soue his seed. &
ye while he souy. sime seedis
felde bypdis ye wepe. & byddis of
ye eyr camen. & eeten hem / lope
li ower seedis felden into stoon
placis. where pei hadden not moche
erpe. & anon pei sprugen up. for
pei hadden not tepnelle of erpe. so
pei whane ye sime was risi. pei
swalide & brent for heere. and
for pei hadden not roote. pei dy
eden up. forlope ower seedis felde
amog. pornes. & pornes woxen
up & straghte hem / but ower see
dis felden into good lond. & zamen
fruyt. su an hndrid fold. anoy
ty fold. anoy vytti fold. he rat
ceeris of heerig heer. he and dyl
phie comyge ny. seiden to hy. wh
spektu you in parabis to hem. th
ich answeryge seide to he. for to
it is jouu forto knowe ye priny
tees of ye kyngdom of heuenes.
but it is not jouu to hem. for it
thal be jouu to hym. & he
thal haue plente. treuly if ama
hay not. alld pat ryg rat he hay
thal be taku avey fro hym. per
fore j speke to hem i parabis. for
pei seynge sen not. & rei heerig
heeren not. ne p vndurstonde.
pat ye profetie of jhaye seynge
be fulfillid in hy wy heerig. &
thulen heer. & ze thulen not v
durstonde. & ze seynge thule se.
& ze thulen not se. for ye herte
of ye peple is greetly farrid.
& rei herten grenouilly wy eer.
& rei han clod her yzen. lest su
tyme rei seen wy men. & wy

ceeris heeren. & vndurstonde i her
te. & rei be couitid ey to gudre tur
urd. & j heele hem. forlope zoure
yzen pat seen ben bleid. & zoure
ceeris pat heeren. forlope j seie treu
re to zou. for many phetis & iust
me coneytde to se ye vris pat
ze seen. & rei spen not. and to hee
re ye vris pat ze heere. & rei her
den not. perfore heere ze ye para
ble of ye lower. & j pat heerip ye
word of reuue. & vndurstonde not.
ye puel spirit comey & ranysthey
pat y is souu in his herte. vis it is
souu bypdis ye wepe. sodely he pat
is souu on stoon lond. vis it is pat
heerip ye word of god. & anoy wy
oye taky it. forlope he hay not ro
ote in hym self. but he is tepozal.
pat is it lasty no but al. til tyme
but whane tribulacion & persecu
cion is maid for ye word. anoy he
is thlandrid. sodely he pat is souu
in pornes. is vis pat heerip ye wo
rd. & ye bypnesse of ye word. &
ye falluesse of richelis straghty
ye word. & it is maid wyoute fr
uyt. but he pat is souu into go
od lond. is vis pat heerip ye word
& vndurstonde. & byngy forp
fruyt. and sodely su maky an
hndrid fold. treuly anoy luty
fold. forlope anoy vytti fold.
¶ **E. xij.** Anoy parable ihc putte forp
to hem. & seide / ye kyngdom of he
neues is maid lych to ama pat
sew good seed in his feeld. forlope
whane men slepten. his enem
cam & sew aboue. darnel or coc
kil in ye myddil of whete. & we
te avey. sodely whane ye eerbe
hadde growid & maid fruyt. pa
ne ye cocklis or darnels apperi

den. forlope ye seruaitis of ye ho
sebonde man comyge ny. seide to
hym / lord wher you hast not souu
good seed in ye feeld. wherof pfore
hay it darnel or cockil. & he seide
to he / ye ma enemy. hay do vis pig
treuly ye seruaitis leyden to hi.
wolt you we go. & getere hem. &
he seide / nay. lest pauerature ze ga
drynge darnels or cocklis. danye
up by ye roote to gpdze wy he
also ye whete. soufre ze hem bove
were til to rypp corn. & in tyme of
rypp corn. j thal seye to repenis.
first gadze ze to gudre darnels or
cocklis. and bynde hem to gudre i
knychtis or smale byddis. for to
be brent. but gadze ze whete into
my berne. anoy parable ihc put
te forp to hem. & seide / ye kyng
dom of heuenes is lyk to acorn
of seueuey. which ama took &
sew in his feeld. which treuly is
ye leste of alle seedis. but wha
ne it hay wore. it is ye mooste
of alle wortis. & is maid a tree.
so r byddis of ye eyr come & dyd
len i bolwis or braunchis perof. &
noy parable ihc spak to hem. ye
kyngdom of heuenes is lyk to sou
dou. which a woma took & hyde in
ye meluris of mele. til it were
al toundrid. jhc spak alle pes
ygis in parabis to ye cupanyes
of peple. & he spak not to hem
oute parabis. pat it thulde be
fulfillid pat is seid by ye profete
seynge / j thal opyne my mouy
in parabis. j thal telle out hyd
ygis. fro making of ye world.
pane he leste ye cupanyes. & he
cam into an hous. & hile dystuplis
came ny to hym. & seide. & pou

ne to us ve parable of darnels. or
cockles of ve feeld which answere
te & seide he rat souer good seed
is mans sone / sovel pe feeld is
pe world / but ve good seed: ves be
sones of pe kingdom / for sove dar
nels or cockles: ves ben yuele so
nes / but ve enemy pat souer hem
is pe fend / but ve ripe corn: is pe
endig of pe world / sovel pe repe
ris: ben angels / pfore as darnels
ben gadrid to gidre & ben hent
in fier: so it shal be in endyng
of pe world / ozams sone shal sen
de his angels / & pei shulen gadre
fro his reikme alle stoundis. & he
hem pat don wickidnesse / & pei
shulen sende he into pe chyme
nepe of fyer / ver shal be wepig
& betyng to gidre of teep / rane
mit me shulen shyne as pe son
ne. in pe reikme of her fadir / he
pat hay eeris of heerig: heer he
pe kingdom of heuenes is lyk
to tresour hid: in a feeld / which
aman pat fyndit: hydyt / & for iope
of it: he goyt & siler alle pigis
pat he hay: & byer vilke feeld / est
lones pe kingdom of heuenes
is lyk to aman marthaut: sek
ge goode margaritis / sovel wha
ne he har foude o precious marga
rite: he wente & seide alle pigis p
he hadde: & boupte it / est pe kingdo
m of heuenes is lyk to anett sent i
to pe see: & gadrynge of alle kyn
de of fyshis / which me ledde out:
whane it was fulfillid / & pei sitti
ge bysdis pe bynke: chelide ve
goode into her vessels: but pei sen
ten out pe yuele / so it shal be i
pe endyng of pe world / angels
shulen gon out: & shulen depar

te yuele me: fro pe myddil of w
men: & pei shulen sende hem to
pe chymenepe of fyer / ver shal
be wepyng: & betyng to gidre
of teep / hau ze vnderstonde alle
ves pigis: / pei seyen to hym / he
he seip to hem / ver fore euery we
ter taunt in pe kingdom of heu
nes is lyk to an husebonde man:
pat byngit for of his tresour:
newe yngis & elde: & it was don
whane ihc hadde endid ves para
blis: he passide fro pems / and he
comynge into his cuntre: taunte he
in her synagogis: so pat perroun
diden & leyden / wherof to hy pis
wylsom & vertues: wher is
not pis ve sone of a synp or car
penter: wher his modir be not led
marie: & hile brisen james & jos
eph: & symon & judas: and his sil
tris wher pei alle ben not at us:
ver fore wherof to hym alle ves
pigis: and so pei weren stoundid
in hy / for sove ihc seide to hem / appo
fete is not wyoute worthip: no
but in his owne citre: & in his
owne hous / and he dide not per
many vertues for pe vublene
of hem // = C. xij. //

In pat tyme eroude pry
ce of pe fourpe part: her
de pe fame of ihu: & leyde to his ch
ildren / pis is john baptist: he har
rulu fro deed me: & ver fore otn
es worchyn in hym / for eroude
heeld john: & booud hym & putte
de hym into prison: for erodias
pe wyf of his broy / for john seide
to hym / it is not leestful to yee:
for to haue hur / and he willige
to sle hym dreedde pe peple: for
pei hadden hym as a profete / for

sove in pe day of erodias byr pe
ve donitir of erodias dailide in
pe myddil: & pleide to eroude / wh
er fore wy an op he byhste for to
zyue to hyr: what euer yng / the
hadde aaid of hym / & she bifore
monettid or warned of hyr modir:
seide / zyue you to me hidur: pe
heed of john baptist in a dynt
& pe fying was sozeifful / but
for pe oop: & for hem pat laten
to gidre at pe mete: he coman
dide to be zoun / and he sente: & bi
heedide john baptist / & his heed
was bouzt in a dynt: & it was zo
nii to pe wenche: & she bar it to hy
modir: & his discipulis came nyz:
& token his body: & buried it: &
pei camen & tolden to ihu: & wha
ne ihc hadde herd pis yng: he
wente fro pems in a boot into
desert place bysdis: & whine pe
cipanyes of peple hadde herd:
pei folowide hy on her feet fro
citre: & ihc goynge out syz a gr
et cipanye & hadde reupe on
hem: & heelide ve syke me of he
sovel whane ve enentid was
maad: hile discipulis came nyz to
hym & leyden / pe place is desert:
& pe our hay now pallid / leue
you pe cipanyes of peple: pat
pei go unto castels & bye metis
to hem / for sove ihc seide to hem
pei han not nede to go / zyue ze
to hem for to ete / pei answere
we han not her: no but fyne loo
nes & twey fyshis / which seide
to hem / bynge ze hem hidur to
me / And whane he hadde coman
did ve cipanye for to sitte to
mete on pe hep: he took fyne loo
nes & twey fyshis: and he byhol

dige into hemene: blestide brot: & zat
to hile discipulis / sovel pe discipulis
zaunen to pe cipanyes / and alle
eeten & were fulfillid: & pei toke
pe rehfs of brot: & gobatis: twelf
coffyns ful / for sove pe noubre of
men etynge: was fyne pouland
of me: out taku wyemen & lytle
children // And anoo ihc compel
lide pe discipulis: for to go up into
aboot: & go bifore hym ou pe see:
til he leste pe cipanyes: & whane
pe cipany was left: he stude al
oone: into an hil for to prey: sove
ly whane ve enenyege was maad:
he was vere aloone / sovel pe bo
ot in pe myddil of pe see: was pro
wyrp wawis / for sove pe wynd
was contrarie to hem / but in pe
fourpe wakig of pe nyzt: he cam
to hem walkig: aboue pe see: &
pei seynge hym walkig aboue
pe see: weren disturbid seynge
for it is a fantu: & for dzed pei cri
eden: & anoo ihc spak to he: & sei
de / haue ze trist / I am: wyle ze die
de / sovel petre answeryge: sei
de / lord if you art: comande me
for to come to yee: on pe watris
and he seide / come you / and petr
goynge dou fro pe boot: walkide
ou pe watris: for to come to ihu
treuly he seynge a strong wynd:
was a feerd: & whine he bigan for
to be drenchid: he cryede seynge
lord make me seaf: & anoo ihc
holdige for pe hond: faunte hy
& seide to hy / you of lytil fery: wh
hast p donitid: & whane he hadde
stude into pe boot: ve wynd ce
side / sovel pei pat were in pe bo
ot: camen & worshipede hy & sei
den / verily: p art godis sone //

whāne þei hadden passid ou þe see:
þei camē into þe lond of geneſar
and whāne mē of þat place hadde
knowē hȳ. þei ſentē into al þat
cūtreȳ. & þei brouȳtē to hȳ alle ha
uȳge yuele. & þei p̄ciēden hȳ
þat þei ſhuldē touche þe hēme
of his cloȳg. And who eue touchē
den: weren maad laſt. **C. xv.**

And whāne scribis & farisees
camen up to hȳm fro
iheruſ. & ſeyden: whi breke
þi diſciplis þe tradiciōis of eld̄re
mē. for þei wantē not hondis.
whāne þei eten breed: soȳeli he
anſwerige ſeide to hem: whi & ze
breken þe cōmaūdemēt of god. for
zoūr tradiciōn. for whi god ſeide.
honoure þi fadir & þi modir. & he
þat curliȳ fadir oȳ modir: dȳe bi
deȳ. but ze ſeyen: who euer ſey
to fadir oȳ modir: what eū zift
is of me: it ſhal profite to þee.
and he ſhal not worlthȳe his fa
dir oȳ his modir. & ze han maad þe
cōmaūdemēt of god voyde: for
zoūr tradiciōn. **ppocritis.** I laye
þe profete profeciede wel of zoūr.
& ſeyde: þis peple honouriȳ me
wȳ lypis: for loȳe her herte is
fer fro me: treuȳ þei worlthȳe
me wȳoutē caule. & techen þe
doct̄rȳs & maūdemētis of mē.
& whāne þe cūpanȳes of peple we
ren clepid to gidȳe to hȳ: he ſeide
to hem: heere ze & vnderſtōde not
þat piḡ þat entriȳ into þe moȳ.
defouliȳ aman: but þat piḡ þat
comēȳ forȳ fro þe moȳ: fouliȳ
amā. þāne hile diſciplis camen
up: & ſeiden to hȳm: woost þou
for bi þis word herd. farisees bē
ſlaūdr̄d. & he anſwerige ſeide:

euȳ plaiūtiȳ: which mȳ fadir of
heueue: hap not plaiūtd: ſhal be
draȳn up bi þe roote: & ſuffre ze
hem. þei ben bliūde & led̄eris of
bliūde mē: soȳeli if a bliūde mā
zyȳep ledȳng to a bliūde mā: bo
þe fallen doū into þe dȳch. for lo
þe petre anſweride: & ſeide to hȳ:
ex̄pōne to us þis parable. & he
ſeide: zit & ze ben wȳoutē vnder
ſtōndiȳ. **wher ze vnderſtōden**
not for al þis þat entriȳ into þe
moȳ: goȳ into þe wombe: & is
ſent out into þe goȳng: anȳȳ: but
þo piḡis þat comen forȳ fro þe
moȳ: goen out of þe herte: &
þo yingis defoulen amā. for of
þe herte goen out: yuele yonȳis.
māſleyngis. auouȳries. forȳ
caciōis. þe ſcis. fall witneſſiȳ.
blaſfemes. þes piḡis it ben: þat
defoulen aman: soȳeli for to ete
wȳ hondis not wȳaſhiȳ. **defou**
liȳ not amā. **And** iſc̄ zede out
fro þem: & wente into þe par
tis of tyre & ſidon: and lo a wom
mā of canane zede out of þo coſ
tis: & criede ſeyȳng to hȳm: lord
þe ſone of dauid: haue mercy on
me: oȳȳ douȳt̄r is yuele traueled
of a deuēl: which anſweride not
to hȳ a word: and hile diſciplis co
men up: & p̄ciēden hȳm & ſeide:
leeſe þou hȳ: for ſhe cryȳe afte
us: for loȳe he anſweride: & ſeide:
I am not ſent: no but to þe iſhe
ep of þe hous of iſrael: þat per
uſheden: and ſhe cam: & worlthȳ
pide hȳm. & ſeide: lord help me:
which anſweride & ſeide: it is not
good for to take þe breed of ſoneȳ:
& ſeide to hōūdis: and ſhe ſeide:
þhe lord: for whi & hile welȳis e

ten of þe cr̄imes: þat fallen doū
fro þe bord of her lordis: þāne iſc̄
anſweride: & ſeide to hȳ: **Al** þou
wōman: þi feȳr is greet: be it
don to þee: as þou wolt. **And** hȳ
douȳt̄r was heeled fro þat our
And whāne iſc̄ hadde paſſid fro
þem: he cam biȳdis þe see of
galilee: & he ſtēde into an hil: &
sat pere: & many cūpanȳes ca
men up to hȳm: & hadden wȳ
hem: doūb mē: & crokid. feble & bly
de: & many oȳer. & þei caſtē doū
hem at his feet: & he heeledē hem
so þat þe cūpanȳes wōnd̄rē. ſe
yȳngē doūb mē ſpeȳige. & crokid
goȳngē: bliūde mē ſeyȳngē: & þei
magnifieden god of iſrael. **Soȳe**
ly iſc̄ ſeide to his diſciplis clepid
to gidȳe: I haue reȳue of þe cū
panȳe of peple: for nouȳ þe rid
de dȳȳ þei diuēllen ſtille wȳ me.
& þei han not piḡ: which þei ſhū
len ete: and I wole not leeſe he
faſt̄ge: leſt þei ſallen in þe weȳe
& þe diſciplis ſeyen to hȳ: þfore
wherof ſo many loones to us i
deſert. **þ̄** we fulfille ſo greet a
cūpanȳe of peple: & iſc̄ ſeide to
hem: how many loones han ze.
& þei ſeiden: ſeueȳ: & aſeȳe ſma
le fiſchis: and he cōmaūde. to
þe cūpanȳe. **þ̄** þei ſhūlden ſitte
to mete on þe erȳe. **And** he taki
ge ſeueȳ loones & fiȳne fiſchis.
& doȳngē panȳiȳis: brak & zot to
his diſciplis: & diſciplis zāuē to
þe peple: & alle eete & werē ful
fillid. **And** þei tooken þat þat
was leſt of reſiſ: ſeueȳ leepi
fulle: for loȳe þei þat eeten. we
ren fouȳ pouȳend of mē: wȳ
outē hȳtle childȳen & wȳmē: &

whāne þe cūpanȳe of peple was
leſt: he ſtēde into a boot & cam
to þe coſtis of magadan. **C. xvi.**
And farisees & ſaducees
teȳȳngē camē up to
hȳm: & p̄ciēde hȳm for
to ſtēde to hem. a tokene fro þe
neue: & he anſweride: & ſeide to hȳ:
whiȳe þe euentȳd is maad. ze ſey
en: it ſhal be cleer: for þe heueue
is roȳd: & þe moȳue: to dȳȳ tem
peſt: for heueue ſhȳȳep heȳuȳly
oȳ ſouȳful. **þ̄** fore ze han knowe to de
me wȳſely þe face of heueue: but
ze moȳu not wite þe tokenes of
tȳmes: þe yuel generaciōn & anou
treſſe ſekȳ a tokene: and a toke
ne ſhal not be zōuȳ to it: nobut
þe tokene of jonas þe profete: &
whiȳe he hadde forlake hem: he wē
te anȳȳ: and whiȳe hile diſciplis
camē ouer þe see: þei forzate for
to take loones: which ſeide to hem:
biholdē ze & be war: of þe ſoundȳ
of farisees & ſaducees: & þei yonȳ
ten amōȳ hem: & ſeiden: for we
han not take loones: for loȳe iſc̄
wȳȳge: ſeide to hem: what reȳe ze
among zoū of hȳt̄l feȳȳ: for ze
han not loones: zit vnderſtōden
not ze. neȳ han mȳnde of fiȳne
loones into fiȳne pouȳend of mē:
& how many coſſȳns ze to ken: treu
ly neȳ of ſeueȳ loones ito ſouȳe
pouȳend of mē. **þ̄** how many leepis
ze tooken: whȳ vnderſtōde ze
not: for I ſeide not to zoū of breed:
be ze war of þe ſoundȳ of farise
es & ſaducees: þāne þei vnderſtō
den. **þ̄** he ſeide not to be war of þe
ſoundȳ of loones: but of þe re
chȳng of farisees & ſaducees: soȳe
ly iſc̄ cam into þe parties of cēla

rie of philip: & aride hile diltuphis
 & seide: who seyen me to be manns
 sone: & sei seide: summe John bap-
 tist. ope forlofe elpe: soveli ope
 jeremye. or oon of pe pprofetis: ihs
 seide to hem: but who seyen ze me
 to be: symonit petir answerige:
 seide: you art eit pe sone of god
 lymge: forlofe ihs answerige:
 seide to hym: bleid art you sy-
 monit bariona: pat is sone of
culle: for fleitsh & blood ihs wite
 not to pee. but my fadir pat is
 in heuenes: and i seye to pee. for
 you art petre: & on ris stoon. i
 ahal bilde my chyrche: & re zatis
 of helle shulen not hane myzt
 azens it: and to pee i ahal zyne
 pe keyes of re kyngdom of heue-
 nes: & what eu pon ahal bynde
 on erpe: ahal be bound also in
 heuenes: and what eu i ahal
 vnbpynde on erpe: ahal be vnbou-
 du also in heuenes. prane he co
mandide to hile diltuphis. & rei
 shulde seie to no ma. pat he wa-
 ihu eit: fro pat tyme ihs biga
 for to shewe to hile diltuphis.
 & it bihofte hy go to ierlm. &
 souffre many pigis: of pe eldis
 & trybis. & princes of prestis.
 & be slayn. & pe prude day ryle
 azen: and petre takinge hym:
 bigan for to blame hym & seide:
 fer be it fro pee lord: ris ring
 ahal be not to pee: which turne
 de & seide to petre: sathanas go
 astir me: you art blandre to me.
 for you sanouit not. or vndur-
 dist not po pigis pat ben of god:
 but po pigis pat ben of me. pra
ne ihs seide to hile diltuphis: if
 ony ma wole come astir me: de

nye he hym self: & take his crof-
 & sinbe me: for he wat wole make
 his soule laif: pat is his lyf: ihs
 leese it: forlofe he pat ahal leese
 his soule: & is lyf for me: ihs
 de it: for what profitit it to am-
 if he wyne al ye world: treuly he
 souffre peyrig of his soule: & or
 what chausyng: ahal ama zyne
 for his soule: for manns sone ahal
 come in glorie of his fadir: wy-
 his aingels: & pane he ahal zelle
 to euery man astir his wer-
 treuly i seye to you: & ben summe
 of men stondige her: which sh-
 nlen not tate de. til rei seen
 manns sone comyge i his kyngdom.
Ad astir hye. James. & John his broper:
 & ledde hem a hydis into an hy-
 hil. & was tustigurid. or turned
 into anoy lyknesse bifoze hem:
 & his face shoon as pe sunne: for-
 lofe his cloris weren maad whi-
 te as snow: and lo moyses & elpe
 apperiden to hem: & spoken wy-
 hym: soveli petre answerige:
 seide to ihu: lord it is good. us to
 be her: if you wolt: make we
 here pe tabernacles. to pee
 oon. to moyses oon. & oon to elpe:
 zit ye while he spak: lo a bryt
 cloude shadewide he: and lo a
 vois of pe cloude: seyinge: ris
 is my dereworpe sone in who
 i haue wel plesid to me: here
 ze hym: and pe diltuphis heere
 ge: falleden dou on her faces.
 & dredde greeth: and ihs cam
 up: & touchide hem: & seide to
 hem: ryle up: & nyle ze dredde
 forlofe rei retyge her yen:

syen no ma no but ihs aloone:
 and while rei came dou fro pe
 moiteyn. ihs comandide to he
 & seide: seye ze to no ma ye visioi.
 til manns sone ryle azen fro de
 me: And hile diltuphis aride hy.
 & leyden: what perfore seyen ari-
 bis. & it bihoner elpe first come:
 & he answeride: seide to hem: for
 lofe elpe ahal come: & ahal retto
 ze alle pigis: treuly i seye to you.
 pat elpe is now commi: & rei kne-
 wen hym not: but rei dide i hy
 what en pigis rei wolden: so &
 man sone ahal souffre of he: pa-
 ne diltuphis vnderstoden: & et-
 of John baptist he hadde seide to
 hem: And whane he cam to pe
 ciupany of peple: amā cam to
 hym foldid on knees bifoze hym
 & seide: lord haue merci on my
 sone. for he is luntayk: & souffry-
 puele: for why ofte tymes he fal-
 lyr into ye fyer: & ofte tymes
 into watir: and i brouzte hym
 to pi diltuphis: & rei myzten not
 heele hy: ihs answeride: seide:
 Al you generacion vnbileeful.
 or out of re fey: & weyward: hou
 longe ahal i be wyi you. hou
 longe ahal i souffre you: bryn-
 ge ze hym hidir to me: & ihs bla-
 myde hym: & pe denel wente out
 fro hym: & pe chuld was heeld
 fro pat our: pane diltuphis ca-
 me up: to ihu plyph: & leyden
 to hy: why myzten not we caste
 hym out: ihs seip to hem: for
 you vnbileue: treuly i seye to
 you: if ze han fey. as a corn of
 synnepe: ze shulen seye to
 ris hyl. passe you hem: & it
 ahal passe. & no pig ahal be

ympossible to you: forlofe ris
 kynde is not cast out: no but hy
 meiruge & fastige. Truli wha
ne rei lymeden to gudre in gali-
le: ihs seide to hem: manns sone
ahal be bitrayed into pe hondis
of me. & rei shulen sle hy: & pe
 prude day he ahal ryle azen: &
 rei weren maad ful soz: and
 whane rei came to catarnai:
 rei pat tooken tribute: came to
 petre & leyden to hym: zoure man-
 tir payey not tribute: & he sey-
 de: zhe: and whane he hadde en-
 trid into an hous: ihs cam bifo-
 ze hy & seide: symonit: what se-
 mey to pee: of which taken ye
 kingis of erpe tribute: or rete:
 of her owne sones: ey of ahens.
 or oyr mems sones: and he sey-
 de: of oyr mems sones: ihs seide
 to hym: & fore sones ben fre: but
 pat we blandre not hem: go you
 to ye see. & seide an hook: & take
 pilke fyllthe pat first comey up:
 & whane his mowp ahal be openid.
 ahal fynde stater: pat is a cer-
 teyn of money: you takinge it:
 zyne to hem for me & for pee.
In pat our. re. xvij. a.
 diltuphis camen myz to
 ihu. & leyden: who gerist
 you is more in ye kyngdom of he-
 neuis: and ihs depige a lytil
 chuld: puttide hy in ye myddil
 of hem & seide: i seye treime to
 you. no but ze be turnyd. & maad
 as lytle children: ze shule not
 entre into ye kyngdom of heue-
 nes: & fore who enei mekyr hy
 as ris lytle chuld: he is more in ye
 kyngdom of heuenes: & he y res-
 seyner o such lytil i my name:

releuyner / forsope who so standyng
oon of pes finale pat bileruen i me.
it spedy to hi. p a mylie stoon of
allis. be hangid in his necke. & be
drenchid into ye depuesse of pe see
who to ye world for standyng / for it
is nede. pat standyng come / neye
les wo to pilke man. by whom a
standyng comer / forsope if ym hound
or y foot standyng pee. kute it of
e caste a wey fro pee / it is betre
to pee to entre to hys. feble epr
crokid. pa hange tibeysne hondis.
or tibeysne feet. to be sent into eu
lastige fier / and if ym pze standyng
pee. pulle it out. & caste a wey
fro pee / it is betre to pee wy
oon pze to entre into hys. pan ha
nyge tibeysne pzen to be sent into
ye fyer of helle. se ze pat ze dispi
se not oon of pes lytle / for i sepe
to zoi. pze angels of hem in heu
nes. seen euer more pe face of my
fadir pat is in heuenes / for man
sone cam for to saue pat ryg p
perillhite. **W**hat semer to zoi.
if per weren to su man an hi
drid theep. & oon of hem hap er
rid. wher he thal not leene nyne
ty & nyne in hylis. & thal go for
to seke pat perride. & if it fal
le p he fynde it. trenly i sepe to
zoi. p he thal haue ioye perone.
more pan on nyne ty & nyne pat
errede not / so it is not wille bifoze
zoi. fadir p is in heuenes. pat
oon of pes lytle perillhite. **F**or
lope if y brop dory syne azens
pee. go pou & reppone hym or
synbbe by tibeysne pee & hi aloone
if he heer y pee. pou hant wonen
y broper / trenly if he heer y pee
not. take wy pee oon or tibeysne.

ener y word stonde in ye moun of
tibeysne or pze witeness. p se he
heere not hem. sepe pou to pe ch
che / forsope if he heere not pe ch
rche. be he as an hepen & puzp
can to pee / i sepe to zoi trenly.
what ene ryg is ze bynte on erpe.
vo thulen be boude also in heue
ne / and what ene ryg is ze vnbyn
den on erpe. vo thulen be vnboi
de also in heuene / estidone i sepe
to zoi. p se tibeysne of zoi witen
ten ou ye erpe. of epy ryg what
ener pei aren. it thal be don to
he. of my fadir pat is in heuenes
for wher tibeysne or pze ben ge
drid in my name. pze i am i
ye myddil of hem / pane petre
compyge myz to hy. seide lord hore
ofte thal my broper hys azens
me. & i thal forzyue to hym. whe
ym til leuene tymes. i sepe to
hym / i sepe not to pee til leuene
rys. but til leuenty hys leuene
hys. **F**ore ze kygdom of heuene
is liden to ania king pat wolde
putte resou wy his seruantes. &
whane he bigan forto putte resou
oon pat ouzte ten thousand talen
tis. was brouzt to hi / trenly wha
ne he hadde nouzt to zelde. his lord
comandide hym to be seeld. & his
wyf & his sones. & alle ryg is pat
he hadde. & to be payed / forsope
pilke seruait fallige dou. pzeide
hy & seide / haue patience in me.
& i thal zelde to pee alle ryg is / so
rely ye lord hadde mercy of pat
seruait. & leet hym or synbbe
hy. & forzaf to hym ye dette / tren
ly pilke seruait zede out. & so
nd oon of his euene seruaitis.
pat ouzte hi an hndred pens.

he holdige hy. stranglede hym &
seide / zelde pat p. pou ouste / & his
euene seruait fallige dou. pzeide
de hi & seide / haue patience in me.
& i thal quyte alle ryg is to pee.
forsope he wolde not. but wente
e seute hy into pldu. til he payete
al ye dette / sope hi euene serua
itis seynge ye ryg is pat were don.
greetly hadden loake / & rei came
& telden to her lord. alle ye ryg is
pat were don / pane his lord depi
de hi. & seide to hym / weyward
seruait. i forzaf to pee al ye det
te. for pou pzeide me / p fore
wher it bihouete not also pee. to
haue mercy on pi ene seruait.
as & i hadde mercy on pee. / and
his lord was wro. & took hy to
turmētours. til he payde al ye
dette / so i my fadir of heuene
thal do to zoi. if ze forzyue not.
enry ma to his broper of zoi.
A hertis. **C. xix.**
And it was don. whan
ne i se hadde endid pes
wordis. he passide fro galile &
cam into ye eendis of iudee ou
jordan / and many ciuantes su
weten hym. & he heelde hem yet
and farisers came nyz to hym. te
puge hym & seynge / wher it be le
etful to a man for to leene or for
lake his wyf for eay cause. / which
auisuride & seide to he / han not
ze radd. for he p made me at ye
bigynng. / made hem male & fe
male. & he seide / for pis ryg ama
thal leue fadir & modir. & thal
deue or drane to his wyf. & rei
thulen be tibeysne in o fleitly / p
foze rei ben not now tibeysne.
but o fleitly / p fore ama depar

te not pat ryg / god ioynete or kint
rede to gibre / rei sepen to hy / wht
per fore comandide moyses to zy
ne a lytal book of forsakig. & to
leene of / & he seide to hem / for mo
yles for ye hardnesse of zoi. her
te. synfride zoi forlake zoi. wy
ues / forsope at ye bigynng. it
was not so / trenly i sepe to zoi.
for who ene leeny his wyf. no
but for fornyfacion. & weddyng anoy.
dory auoutri pe. & he pat weddyng
ye forlak wyf. dory auoutrie / hi
se distuplis seien to hym / if ye cau
se of ama wy anoy is so. it spedy
not to be weddyd / which seide to he
not alle me taken pis word. but
to whiche it is zoi. / sope hi ben
geldigis. whiche ben pus born of
ye modris wombe / and per ben gel
digis. p be mand of me. & p be gel
dyngis. p han geldid he self for
ye kygdom of heuenes. he p may
take. take he. **P**ane lytle chil
dren were brouzt to hym. p he th
ulde putte hondis to hem & pzeie
and ye distuplis blampde he. but
he seide to hem / synfre ze p lytle
children come to me. & nyle ze
forbede hem for to come to me / for
of liche is ye kygdom of heuenes.
& whane he hadde put to hondis.
he wente fro pems. **A**nd lo oon
compyge nyz. seide to hi / goode man
tur. what good ryg thal i do. p
i haue euer lastige hys / which sepe
to hy / what arit p me of good
ryng. p is o good god / forsope if
pou wolt ent to hys. sepe ye coman
demētis / he sepe to hy. whiche
trenly i seide / pou thalt not do
malleyng. p thalt not do anou
trie. p thalt not do yeste. p thalt

not seye fals witnesse. / wortipe
pi fadir & pi modir. & pou schalt
loue pi neyboze as pi selfe. / pe 308
ma seip to hi. / i haue kept alle pes
pigis fro my zornye. / what zit
failyr to me. / ihc seip to hi. / if
wolt be parfyte. go & selle alle pi
gis. / & pou hast. & zyne to pore me.
& pou schalt haue tresour. / theue
ne. & come. / sue me. / forsope ihc
ye zonge ma hadde herd pes wor
dis. / he wente a wey soze wylful.
for he hadde many possessionis.
forsope ihc seide to his discipulis.
i seie to zou treuwe. / for a riche
man of hard schal entre to the
kingdom of heuene. / & eselone. / i
seie to zou. / it is lyter. / or esier. / a
camele for to passe poris aned
his zye. / ran a ryche ma to entre
in to the kingdom of heuene. / treu
li whane pes pigis were herd.
discipulis wondriden gretly. / seynge
who pfore may be saf. / forsope
ihc biholdige. / seide to he. / anetis
me. / pis pig is possible. / but ane
tis god alle yngis ben possible.
¶ **P**ane petre answerige. / seide to
hym. / lo we han forsake alle ym
gis. & we han sued pee. / what y
fore schal be to us. / ihc forsope
seide to hem. / treuwy. / i seie to zou.
ye ze y han forsake alle pigis. &
han liued me. / in regeneracoi
or gendrig. / azen whane mannis
sone schal sitte. / in pe seete of his
maieste. / ze schulen sitte on twel
ue seetis. / or legis. / demyge ye ab
elue kynredis of israel. / & euery
ma y forsakir hous. / or byper. /
or sistren. / or fadir. / or modir. / or
wyf. / or sones. / or feeldis. / for my
name. / schal take an hundredfold.

and schal welde enlantege. / for
sope manye schulen be ye firste.
ye laste. / & ye laste. / ye firste.
¶ **T**he kingdom of heuene is
lyk to an holebonde ma. / who
wente out first. / or bi ye mo
we. / to hyre werkmen. / to his
vynyard. / forsope whane re
couenait was maid wip werk
me. / of a peny for ye day. / he sente
hem to his vynyard. / and he se
de out aboute ye prydde our. / & la
opere stondige ydel in ye cherych.
¶ he seide to hem. / go ze also to
my vynyard. / & pat y schal
be rythful. / i schal zyne to zou.
sopeh. / pei wente fory. / forsope
est loones he wente out aboute ye
fyrte our. / & ye nyne. / & dide i lyk
maner. / but aboute ye enleuepe
our. / he wente out. / & fond opere
stondige. / & he seide to he. / what
stonden ze her ydel al day. / pei sei
en to hi. / for no ma hay hyrid us.
he seip to hem. / go ze also into my
vynyard. / forsope whane euery
was maid. / ye lord of ye vyn
yard seip to his procurator. / de
pe ye werkme. / & zelde to hem
her hyre. / & bigyne pou at ye las
te til to ye firste. / yfor whane
pei were comi. / pat canne abou
te ye enleuepe our. / also pei too
ken sigulerly pens. / y is euery
ma o peny. / treuwy. / & ye firste to
nygge. / demete y. / pei schulde to
be more. / treuwy. / & pei tooke
echone by hi. / sile a peny. / & pei to
kyngge gruathete. / azen ye hole
bonde ma. / & seiden. / pes laste di
den oon our. / & pou hast. / maid
he euene to us. / pat han born ye
charge of ye day. / & heete. / & he

answerige to oon of he. / seide. / fith
i do see no wrong. / wher y hast
not acordid wip me. / for a peny.
take y. / pat y is y. / go. / forsope i
wolt zyne also to pis laste man.
as i to pee. / wher it is not leessful
to me. / for to do pat y. / wolt. / wh
er ym zye is wylid. / for i am
good. / so ye laste me. / schulen be.
ye firste. / & ye firste me. / ye laste.
for manye ben clepid. / but fewe
ben chosin. / ¶ And ihc arde to ie
rhu. / & took his twelue discipulis
in pryncipe. / & seide to he. / lo we goe
up to ierlm. / & mannis sone schal
be brikid to prices of prestis. / &
scribis. / & pei schulen condempne hi
bi deey. / and pei schulen brikid hi
to hepen me. / for to be stoned. / &
stourgid. / & crucified. / & ye prydde
day he schal rylse azen. / ¶ Pane ye
modir of ye sones of sebede. / cam
nyz to hym wip hir sones. / honou
rige. / & arynge su pig of hi. / whid
seide to hir. / what wolt pou. / she
seide to hym. / seie pat pes twelue
my sones sitte. / oon at pi rythalf.
& oon at pi lefthalf. / in pi kyngdom.
forsope ihc answerige seide. / ze wi
ten. / not what ze azen. / moun ze
drynke ye cuppe. / whid i schal
drynke. / pei seipen to hym. / we mon
he seip to hem. / forsope ze schulen
drynke my cuppe. / but to sitte at
my rythalf. / or lefthalf. / is not my
to zyne to zou. / but to whid it is
maid redy of my fadir. / and ye ten
heeryge. / hadden indignacoi of
ye twelue byper. / sopeh. / ihc de
pide hem to hi. / & seide. / ze wnt
prices of hepere me. / ben lordis
of hem. / & pei pat be ingre. / han
en porber on he. / it schal not be

so among zou. / but who ene wolt
be maid more amog zou. / be he zou
re mynstre. / and who ene amog
zou wolt be ye firste. / he schal be
zour seruant. / as mannis sone cam
not for to be serued. / but for to ser
ue. / & for to zyne his lyf. / redempci
on for manye. / ¶ And whane pei
zede out of ierico. / many cupany
es of peple subbede hym. / & lo tiberi
blinde men sittige bihdis ye weie.
herde y. / ihu passide. / & pei cryede.
seynge. / lord ye sone of dauid. / ha
ue mercy on us. / forsope ye cupa
nye blampte he. / for to be stille.
& pei cryede more. / seynge. / lord ye
sone of dauid. / haue mercy on us.
& ihc stood. / & depide he. / & seide. / wht
wolen ze pat i do to zou. / pei seie
to hi. / lord yf our zyen be opayd.
forsope ihc haryge me on he. / tou
chide her zyen. / and anon pei sayen.
i subbede hym. / ¶ **A**.
¶ And whane ihc cam nyz to
ierlm. / & cam to bethsage
at ye mount of oluete. / pa
ne ihc seide his twelue discipulis.
i seide to hem. / go ze into ye castel
y is azen zou. / & anon ze schulen
fynde a she alle tyed. / & a colt wip
har. / vubryde ze. / & bynuge ze to me.
& if ony ma schal seye to zou ony
ymg. / seye ze y. / ye lord hay uede to
hem. / & anon he schal leue hem.
treuwy. / al pis was don. / y y pig. / sch
ulde be fulid. / y was sepd by ye pro
fete seynge. / seye ze to ye douztur
of syon. / lo pi kyng comey to pee
homely. / or meke sittige on a she
alle. / & a fole ye sone of a beest. / vn
der zok. / forsope discipulis goynge. / &
diden as ihc comaundide hem. / and
pei bryngten a she alle. / & ye fole.

þæt hit her clovis on he. 7 mæden
him sitte alone forsoþe ful moche
cūpany. 7 strelde her clovis 7 pe
weye forsoþe oþer lant biam
dne of trees. 7 strelde 7 pe we
ye but pe cūpanyes pat wente
bifore. 7 pat greden. cride seyn
ge/olana 7 is 7 weye lane to
pe lone of dany. 7 bledid is he 7
comet in pe name of pe lord. o
lana in heste pigis. And wha
ne he hadde entrid into ierlm. al
pe cite was stund seynge. who
is þis. treuh pe pepis seide. 7 is
ihc pe plete of nasareth of gali
le. 7 ihc entride ito pe temple
of god. 7 castid out of pe tēple.
alle sillige 7 byrige. 7 he turne
de vp lodon pe boodis of change
ris. 7 pe chaperis of mē sillige
culneris. 7 he seyn to he. it is wri
tū in þis hous. ihc be depid an
hous of preyer. forsoþe ze han
mad it a dēne of reeris. and
blynde 7 crokid camē up to hi
in pe tēple. 7 he heelde he for
soþe pe pnces of prestis 7 scrip
bis. seynge pe merueploune ri
gis pat he dide. 7 chldre cryge
in pe temple 7 seynge olana to
pe lone of dany. dedepuede 7 ley
den to hi. heerist þou what pes sei
en forsoþe ihc seide to he. she wser
ze han neuer rad. for of pe mour
of children. pat kimen not speke.
7 of soukige mylk. þou hast mid
parfit preysing. 7 whne he had
de forlake hem. he wente forp
out of pe citee into betanye. 7
per he dwelte. 7 tange he of pe
kingdom of god. Forsoþe ou
pe morwe. he turunge azen in
to pe citee. hūgride. 7 he seynge

o fuge tre byldis pe weye. cam to
it. 7 found no pig perþne. no but
leeris ony. and he seide to it. meue
feyt come forp of pee. into wip
ourten ende. 7 anon pe figetre
was dreyd up. 7 dūþis seige. wonden
seynge/hou and it dūde. forsoþe ihc
seide to hem. treuh. I seye to þou.
if ze shulen haue seyn. 7 shulen
not doute. not ony ze shule do
of pe figetre. but also if ze shu
len seye to þis hyl. take aweiþ pee.
7 caste pee into pe see. it shal be
don. 7 alle rigis what else þe blee
myge. shule are in preyer. ze shu
len take. And whne he cam ito
pe tēple. pe pnces of prestis. 7 el
dre me of pe peple. camē up to
him techige 7 seide. in what po
wer dost þou pes rigis. 7 who
zaf to pee þis polwer. ihc answere
rige. seide to he. and I shal are þou
o word. what if ze shule seye to
me. 7 I shal seye to þou. in what po
wer. I do pes rigis. of whens we
pe baptysm of john. of heuene. or
of men. and þe pouren wip in
he lilk seynge. if we shule seie
of heuene. he shal seie to us. whn
þore biled ze not to hy. forsoþe
if we shulen seie of me. we dre
den pe cūpany of peple. for alle
hadde whn as a plete. 7 þe an
swerige to ihc seiden. we wte
not. and he seide to he. ney I seie
to þou. in what power. I do pes
rigis. Forsoþe what semet to
þou. Sū mā hadde aweiþ sonis.
7 he comige up to pe fiste. se
de lone go for to worche þis day
in my vnezerd. forsoþe he answere
de seide. I wte. forsoþe asten
ward he stund by penance of for

ymkyg. wente forsoþe he cam
up to petop. 7 seide on hyl man.
7 he answere 7 seide. lord I go
and he wente not. who of pe tēple
ne dide pe sadis wille. 7 þe sepen
to him. pe fiste. ihc seyn to he. treu
li 7 seye to þou. for pigpicas 7
hoors. shule go bifore þou ito pe
kingdō of god. forsoþe john cam to
þou in pe weye of rētyfiesse. 7 ze
bileneten not to him. but pigpicas
7 hoors. bileden to hy. forsoþe ze
seynge. hadden not penance asten
ward. 7 ze bileden to him. 7 he
re ze anoy parable. per was a hote
boute man. pat plantide a vnezerd.
7 heggide it aboute. 7 dalt a plessou
pne. 7 biled a tour. 7 hynde it to
erpetheris. 7 wente fer i pig
mage. forsoþe whne pe tyme of
fruytis nezete. he sente his ser
uaitis to pe erpetheris. 7 þe
shule take fruyt of it. and pe
erpetheris token his seruaitis.
7 beeten yetoou. þe slowen anoy.
and þe bonet anoy. eftsoone he
sente oþe seruaitis. mo þan pe
fiste. 7 in hyl maner þe dide to
hem. forsoþe at pe laste he sente
his lone to he. 7 seide. þe shule
dredē my lone. forsoþe þe erpet
heris seynge pe lone. seide wip
ine hem lilk. þis is pe eyr. come
ze. slee we hym. 7 we shule haue
his eritage. and þe token hym
7 castiden out of pe vnezerd. 7
slowen. verfore whne pe lord of
pe vnezerd shal come. what sh
al he do to yllke erpetheris. 7 þe
sepen to him. he shal lese puele
pe puel me. 7 he shal sette to hy
re his vnezerd to oþe erpethe
ris. whne shule zelde to him

fruyt in her tyme. ihc seyn to
hem. radden ze neie in scriptu
ris. pe stoon which. bildris rep
uede. þis is mad into pe heed of
pe corner. of pe lord þis yng is
mad. 7 it is merueplous bifore
our yzen. 7 fore I seie to þou. 7 þe
kingdō of god shal be takū fro
þou. 7 shal be zoni to a folk. do
ynge fruytis of it. 7 he pat shal
falle on þis stoon. shal be brokū
to gūre. forsoþe ou who it shal
falle. it shal al to poune hy. 7
whne pe pnces of prestis. 7 scrip
es hadden herd his parabis. þe
knewen þe seide of he. 7 þe seky
ge to holde hy. dredde pe cūpanye
of peple. for þe hadde hy as a plete.
And ihc answere. 7 seide. 7
seide est soone ipa
rabis to hem. 7 seide. 7
seide pe kingdom of heuene is
mad hyl to a mā king. pat made
weddis to his lone. and he sente
his seruaitis for to clepe me bedū
to pe weddis. 7 þe woldē not
come. eftsoone he sente oþe ser
uaitis. 7 seide. seie ze to pe me bedū
to pe seite. so I hane mad redy
my mete. my bolis 7 my volatils
erit fatte beestis ben slayn. 7 alle
pigs ben redy. come ze to pe wed
dis. forsoþe þe dispiled. 7 þe we
ten aweiþ. anoy into his tou. for
soþe anoy to his marchandis. but
pe oþe heelden his seruaitis. 7
sloke hem pomstid wip cūtek.
forsoþe pe king whne he hadde
herd. was wroy. 7 he sente his col
tis. 7 he losse of dūtriede po man
quelleris. 7 biente her citee. þne
he seide to his seruaitis. forsoþe þe
weddis ben redy. but þe pat

weren depid to pe seeste. were not
worpi. perfore go ze to pe out go
yngis of weyes. & whiche enie ze
shuleu fynde. depe ze to pe wed
digis. and his seruantis zede out
to weyes. & gadre to gidre all
pat rei foilden goode & yuele. and
pe weddigis of me sittige at mete
weren fulfilld. forsope & pe king
entride to se me sittige at mete.
& he sy. per amā not clorid wip hi
de dop. & he seide to hi. friend how
entridist pou hider. & haddist not
bride dop. & he was doib. pāne pe
king seide to pe mymist. bynde ze
his hys hondis & feet. & seide ze hi
into vmerere derknessis. per shal
be wepig. & betyng to gidre of
teep forsope many ben depid. but
sewe ben choli. **P**āne farilees.
goynge away tooken a couceil. p
pei shulde take ihu in word. & pei
sende to hy her discipulis wip erodi
ans. p ben me of erondis. & seien
manfur we wite p you art forfist.
& you techist in treupe pe weye of
god. & you chargist not of ony mā
for you biholdist not pe pson of
me pfore seie to us. what it semet
to pee. is it leessul p reinte or tbut.
be zomū to cesar pe enypour epw
nāy. & forsope whāne ihu hadde
knowe pe wickidnesse of hem. he
seide. pocrutis what tēpten ze me.
shewe ze to me pe piente of pe mo
ney. and pei brougte to hy a peny.
& ihc seide to hem. whos is pīs pma
ge. & pe wiptig aboue. pei seien
to hi. of cesar. pāne he seide to he
pfore zelde ze to cesar. po pīgis pat
ben celaris. & to go. po pīgis pat
ben of god. and pei heerige won
dide. & pei lesten hi. & weten a

wey. **I**n pat day saducers pat
seien p per is no ryfig azen. came
ny to hi. & arde hi. & seide. maist
moyses seide. if ony mā is deed. not
hangge a lone. pat his broyr wed
de his wyf. & reyle seed to his broyr.
forsope senene brayen were at vs
and pe firsse weddide awyff. & is
deed. & he not hangge seed. leste
his wyf to his broyr. also pe se
cude & pe prude til to pe senene
forsope pe laste of alle. & pe wōmā
is is deed. pfore in pe ryfig azen.
whos wyf of pe senene shal she
be. for alle hadden hir. soveli ihc
answerige seide to he. ze erren &
nep ze knowe pe scripturis neyr
pe vertu of god. for in pe ryfig a
zen. neyr pei shule. neyr shulen be
weddid. but pei ben as pe angelis
of god in heuene. soveli of pe ryfig
azen of deede me. ze han not rad.
p it is seid of pe lord seyringe to you.
I am god of Abrahā. & god of Isaac.
& god of Jacob. he is not god of de
de me. but of lynyge me. and pe
ciupany of peple heerige. wonden
den in his techig. **F**orsope farile
es heerige. pat he hadde put silen
ce to saducees. & came to gidre. &
oon of he a techere of pe lawe. aze
de ihc. & tēptide hy. maist. whān
is a greet mandemēt in pe lawe. ihc
seide to hy. p shalt lone yi lord god
of al ym herte. & in al yi soule. & in
al yi mynde. pīs is pe firsse & pe ma
te mandemēt. & for pe secūde is
lyk to pīs. you shalt lone yi neye
bore as yi eile. in pes tibe. maist
mētis. hangge al pe lawe & pfecti.
Soreh whāne pe farilees weren
gedrid to gidre. ihc arde hi. & se
de. what semet to you of ctt. whos

lone is he. pei seien to hi. of dāny
he seip to he. pfore how dāny i spirit
deyr hi lord & seip. pe lord seide to
my lord. litte on my ruzthalf. til i
pate ym enempes. a stool of yi feet
perfore if dāny deyr hi lord. how
is he his lone. & no mā myte answere
re a word to hi. neyr ony mā was
hardy fro pat day. for to are hy more.
Ame ihc spak. **C**xxx. **I**n
to pe ciupany of peple.
& to hile discipulis. & seide. ou
pe chayer of moyses. scribis &
farilees latten pfore kepe ze &
do ze alle pīgis. what enie pīgis pei
seien to you. but nyle ze do after
her werkis. for pei seien & doe not.
soveli pei brynde greuouse chargis
& vnportable of pat moyn not be
born. & pitten on shuldys of me.
but wip her fingur pei wole not
moue hem. perfore pei doe alle her
werkis. p pei be seip of me forsope
pei alargen her filateries p ben
smale strotis. & magnifie hem
mes. soveli pei lone pe firsse sit
tyng places in soperis. & pe firs
te chayeris in synagogis. & salu
tacionis in chepig. & to be depid
of me maistis. but nyle ze be cle
pid maistis. for oon is zom maist
forsope alle ze ben bryen. and nyle
ze clepe to you a sadiron erpe.
for oon is zomre sadir. pat is i he
uenes. neyr be ze depid maistis.
for oon is zom maistur ctt. he pat
is pe more in you. shal be zom
mymistre. forsope he pat hyper hi
sile. shal be mekid. & he pat me
kry hi eile. shal be enhaistid. **S**o
reli wo to you scribis & farilees
pocrutis. pat dosen pe kygdom
of heuenes bfore me. for ze en

tren not. neyr sustren me enryge
for to entri. **W**o to you scribis &
farilees. pocrutis. pat ete pe hou
lis of widows. & prepen bi long
preier. for pīs pīg ze shule take
more dom. **W**o to you scribis &
farilees. pocrutis. pat ciupallen pe
see & pe lord. to make a pcelite. p
is comitid to you. ordie. & whāne
he is maad. ze maken hy a lone of
helle double more pan ze be. **W**o
to you blynde leders. pat seien.
who enie swerip bi pe tēple of god.
no pīg is. soveli he pat swerip i
pe gold of pe tēple. omy. or is dect.
ze foolis & blynde. for what is more.
pe gold. or pe tēple. pat halew.
pe gold. and who enie swerip i pe
anter. no pīg is. but he pat swerip
i pe zifte. pat is on pe anter.
omy. blynde me. for what is more.
pe zifte or pe anter. pat halew.
pe zifte. perfore he pat swerip i
pe anter. swerip i it. & i alle pīgis
pat ben pon. and he pat swerip in
pe temple. swerip i it. & in hym
pat dwellyp i pe tēple. & he pat swerip
in heuene. swerip in pe trone
of god. & in hy. pat sittip you. **W**o
to you scribis & farilees. pocrutis.
pat tēpen mynte. anete & comyn.
& han lest po pīgis p ben greuou
set. or of more charge of pe lawe.
dom & mercy & seip. and it bihofte
or nedide for to do pes pīgis. & not
to leue po. blynde leders. clāfige
a gnatte. but enryge a camel.
Wo to you scribis & farilees. pocru
tis. pat maken clene pat pīg of
pe ciupe & plater. pat is wip onte
forp. forsope wip i ne ze ben fülle
of rāuepne & bndēnesse. p blynde
de farile. clene firsst. pat pīg of pe

cuppe & plater. pat is wip me: & i
pat pig pat is wipontefor. be ma
ad cleue. **W**ho to zon strabis & fari
lees ipocrisis. pat ben lpt to sepul
cris maid white. whiche wiponte
for semē fayre to me: loyely wip
me pei ben fulle of boons of dede
me & al filpe so i ze forsoye wipon
tefor apperen nist to me: but wip
me ze ben fulle of ipocrisie & wic
kidue. **W**ho to zon strabis & fari
lees ipocrisis. pat bidden sepul
cris of profetis. & maken sayr pe
briels of mist me. & sepeu if we
hadden be in ye dapes of our fadyr.
we shuld not haue be her felows
in ye blood of pfeis. and so ze be
in wituellig to zon gylf. for ze be
ye sones of hem pat slouen pfe
tis & fulfille ze ye mesur of zon
fadyr. ze serpentis fruytis or
burion wigs of eddis y sleen
her modis. how shule ze fle fro
ye dom of helle. & verfore lo i sende
to zon. pfeis & wyle me. & str
bis or witeris. & of hem ze shu
len ale. & crucifie. & of he ze shule
bete in zon synagogis. & shule
pursuue fro citee into citee. y al
ye mist blood come on zon. pat
was shad out on ye erpe. fro ye
blood of mist abel. til to ye blood
of sacarie. ye sone of barache.
whom ze slouen bi tbyre ye te
ple & ye auter. treulij i seie to
zon. alle yes ygis shule come
on pis generacion. **W**herin ier
lm pat sleit pfeis. & doonest
hem pat ben sent to pee. how ofte
wolde i gadre to gidre y sones.
as an hen gadre to gidre hir chi
cons. vnder hir wyngis. & you
woldit not. lo zon. hous shal

be left to zon desert or forsake
forsoye i sepe to zon. ze shulen
not se me fro hems for. til ze
sepen. blestid is he pat comey in
ye name of ye lord. **A**nd i shu
wente out of
re temple. & hile duple
to hi pe bildigis of ye temple. for
soye he auiseryge. seide to hem.
seen ze alle yes ygis. & treulij
sepe to zon. a stoon shal not be
left her on a stoon. which shal
not be destroyed. soye shule
he sat on ye hil of oluete. hile
duple came nyz to hi puelij. &
seide. sepe to us whane yes ygis
shulen be. & whar tokene of y
compg. & of endig of ye world.
and iher auiseryge. seide to hem.
se ze y no ma dilleue zon. for ma
nye shulen come i my name. &
shule seie i am crist. & rei shule
dilleue manye. for ze shule hee
re batels. & appoyntis of batels.
se ze y ze be not disturblid. for i
bhouer yes ygis for to be don.
but not zit is ye ende. folk shal
ryse to gidre azens folk. & rei shule
azens reibme. & petilencis & i
gris & ye erpe monyngis shulen
be by plas. forsoye alle yes y
gis. ben bigynngis of sorowis. y
ne rei shule btake zon to tbi
lacion. & rei shulen ale zon. &
ze shule be in hate to alle folkis
for my name. and yane manye
shulen be standid. & btrape
to gidre or ash orn. & in hate ha
ue to gidre. and manye false pfe
tis shule ryle. & dilleue manye.
& for wickidnesse shal be plente
uous. ye charite of manye shal

were gold. forsoye he pat dille
table into ye ende. shal be saif
and pis gospel of kyngdo. shal be
predid in al ye world. into wituell
sing to alle folkis. & yane ye ende
shal come. yfor whane ze shule
seen ye abhominacion of ditionfort.
pat is seid of daniel ye pfe. don
dige in ye holy place. he pat redy
vndirtonde yane pei pat ben i ju
dee. fle to ye mouteyns. and he pat
is in ye hous roof. come not down
to take my pig of his hous. & he
pat is in ye feeld. turne not agen
to take his coote. forsoye mo to he
pat be wip childe & non shule in po
dapes. soye ppepe ze y zon. fle
pig. be not maid in wiptr or saboth
for yne shal be greet tribulacion.
what man was not fro ye bigyn
nyng of ye world til now. uer shal
be maid and no but yo dapes had
den be brenggid. al fleish y is man
kynde. shule not be maid lat. but
yo dapes shule be maid shorte for
ye chofu men. **W**ane if ony man
shal sepe to zon. lo her is crist or
yer. nyle ze bileue. for false citis &
false pfeis. shule ryle. & rei shu
len yne grete tokenes & wondris.
so y also ye chofene be lad into erro.
if it may be don. lo i haue bfore
seid to zon. yfor if rei shule seie
to zon. lo he is in desert. nyle ze go
out. lo in pny chasibris or plas.
nyle ze bileue. for as leit gony out
fro ye eest. & appery til into ye west.
so shal allo ye comyg of uams so
ne. sher eue ye body shal be. allo
ye egis shule be gadrid. yfor
soye auoon aft ye tribulacion of yo
dapes. ye sone shal be maid derk. &
ye mone shal not yne hie liz. and

terris shulen falle down fro heue
ne. & ye vertues of heuenes shule
be moued. and yne ye tokene of man
sone shal apper in heuene. & yane
alle kuredis or lyngis of erpe shu
le weple. and rei shule se manis
sone comye in ye dondis of heuene.
wip moche vtu & mageste. & he sh
al sende his angels wip a tripe &
greet vois. & rei shule gadre his
chofene. fro sou cooris. fro ye hysel
te ygis of heuenes til teemes or
endis of he. forsoye leue ze ye pa
rable of a figgetre. whiche has bow.
or brauche is now tendre. & leuis
ben tyngit. ze wite y somer is
nyz. so ze shule ze shule se alle
yes ygis. wite y it is nyz in ye za
tis. **T**reulij i sepe to zon. for pis
generacion shal not passe. til alle
ygis be don. heuene & erpe shule
passe. but my wordis shule not
passe. forsoye of yllke day & our. no
ma woot. ney angels of heuenes.
no but ye fadyr aloune. forsoye as
it was in ye dapes of noe. so shal be
alloye comyg of manis sone. for as
in ye dapes bfore ye greet flood
pei were etinge & drynkige. wed
dige & takige to weddig. til into
pat day. i which noe entride into
ye ship. & rei fueren not til ye
greet flood cam & took alle me. so
shal be ye comyg of manis sone.
Wane tweyne shule be in a feeld. do
shal be takn & anoy left. or forsakn.
twey wpmen shulen be gryndige
in o queerne. con shal be takn & ye
top forsakn. tweyne in a bed. yton
shal be takn. & ytop forsakn. **W**er
fore wake ze. for ze wite not i what
our zon lord is to come. soye shu
te ze pat pig. for if ye hofebonde ma

Wite. in what our pe peef were to
come: treuþ he shuld wake. &
suffre not his hous to be vndir-
mynded/ and þfore ȝe be redy: for
in what our ȝe geslen not. māns
sone is to come. **W**ho geslit you
is a trewe seruānt & prudent oꝝ
war: whom his lord ordeynede on
his meyne. y^e he ȝine. he mete in
tyme: blestid is pat seruānt. who
his lord whāne he shal come. shal
fynde doynge so/ treuþ. ȝe seye to
zou. for on alle his goodis. he shal
ordeyne hi. forsope if yllke puel
seruānt seye in his herte. my lord
makyþ dwellig oꝝ taryng. to co-
me. & bigynne to synge his eue
seruāntis. soþeh if he ete & dꝛyn-
ke. wyþ dꝛinkelen me: pe lord of
ylke seruānt. shal come in pe
day in which he hoppe not & in
our pat he knoweþ not. & shal de-
parte hi. & putte his part wyþ
pocritis: pe shal be wepyng.
& betyg to gidre of teer. **116**

Thane pe kyngdo of heue-
nes shal be tyk to ten vn-
gyus: whiche takige her
laupis wente out. meetige pe
spouse oꝝ holebonde & pe spouse
le oꝝ wyf forsope fyne of he we
ren foolis: & fyne prudent/ but
pe fyne foolis tooken her laupis:
& tooken not oyle wyþ he/ forsope
pe prudent: tooken oyle in her ves-
sels wyþ laupis/ forsope whiche pe
spouse oꝝ holebonde made dwellig:
alle nappid & slepte/ soþeh at myd-
nygt. a cry was maid: lo pe spou-
se comyþ. go ȝe out meetyge wyþ
hi/ þāne alle yo vngyus risen up:
& ourned her laupis/ soþeh pe
foolis seiden to pe wyse/ ȝine ȝe

to us of your oyle: for our laupis
ben quenched ȝe prudent answere
rude: seynge lest pauentur it luf-
fise not to us & to you: go ȝe rāpe
re to me lillige. & þye ȝe to you/
forsope pe while pei wente forto
þye: pe spouse cam/ & po pat we
ren redy: entred wyþ hi to pe wed-
dys: & ȝe sate was shyt/ soþeh
at pe laste also pe oyle vngyus
cam seynge/ lord lord/ oþyne
to us/ and he answere seide tre-
uþ. ȝe seye to you: ȝe knowe not
you/ þe fore wake ȝe: for ȝe wi-
ten not pe day ne pe our. **S**o
þeh as amā gopyng fer in pilg-
mage: clepde his seruāntis. &
bitook to he his goodis/ and to
he ȝat fyne talentis oꝝ besantis
forsope to anoy twayne. but to
anoy oon to ech after his oþne
vertu: & wente forþ amon forso-
pe & he pat hadde take fyne tale-
tis. wente forþ & wrochte in he:
ȝwan oyle fyne also & he pat ta-
ke twayne: ȝwan oyle twayne/ so
þeh he pat takū oon. ȝede forþ &
dallf into pe erpe: & hilde pe mo-
ney of his lord/ but after moche
tyme. pe lord of yo seruāntis
cam: & puttde resou wyþ he/ &
he pat hadde take fyne talentis
cam: & brouste ower fyne & sei-
de/ lord you bitokist to me fyne
talentis oꝝ besantis: lo ȝe hane
ouer getū ower fyne/ his lord
seide to hy/ wel be ȝe goode seruānt
& seynful oꝝ trewe/ for on seue
igis you hast be trewe: ȝe shal
ordeyne pe on many pigis en-
tre you into pe ioye of y lord
forsope & he pat hadde take tū
er talentis: cam & seide/ lord ȝe

bitokist to me twayne talentis: lo
ȝe hane ouergetū ower twayne hy
lord seide to hy/ wel be you good
seruānt & trewe: for on seue pi-
gis you hast be trewe. ȝe shal oꝝ
deyne pe on many pigis entre
you into pe ioye of y lord/ forsope
& he pat hadde takū o talent: cam
my & seide/ lord. ȝe woot ȝe art
an hard mā you repit wher you
hast not soue: & you gadist to
gidre. wher you hast not spād a
brood/ and ȝe dꝛedige wente. & hilde
y talent in pe erpe/ lo you hast pat
pat is ym/ soþeh his lord answere
ge seide to hy/ puel seruānt & sloth-
withit ȝe ȝe reþe wher ȝe soue
not: & gadre to gidre wher ȝe spā-
dde not a brood/ þe fore it bihoþe
pe to take my money to chaunge
ris. & ȝe comyge shuld hane ref-
seined forsope pat pat is ym/ y
wher ȝe take ȝe asey fro hi
pe talent: & ȝine ȝe to hi pat hap-
ten talentis/ for to euery mā ha-
uysge it shal be you: & he shal
hane pleinte/ forsope fro hy pat
hay not also pat pat he lemy to
hane. shal be takū asey of hy/
and caste ȝe out pe seruānt vn-
profitable: into vtinet derfel
his/ þe shal be wepyng: & be-
tyng to gidre of teer. **117**

shal seye to he: pat shuld be on
his rithalf/ come ȝe pe blestid of
my fadir: weelde ȝe oꝝ take & polle
ciou pe kyngdom maid redi to you
fro pe makig of pe world for ȝe
was hungry: & ȝe ȝane to me for to
ete/ and ȝe visitde: & ȝe ȝane to me
for to dꝛynke/ ȝe was herboles: &
ȝe herboled me/ nakid: & ȝe hiled
me/ syl: & ȝe visitden me/ ȝe was
in prilon: & ȝe came to me/ þāne
iust me shuld answere to hi: & shū-
len seye/ lord whāne syen we pe
hungry: & we fedde we: þāne ȝe
we ȝane to we dꝛynke: whāne for-
sope syen we pe herboles: & we
herboled we: for nakid: & we hile-
den we: for whiche syen we pe syl:
oꝝ in prilon: & we came to we: &
he answerege shal seye to he/ treu-
þ. ȝe seye to you: as longe as ȝe dide
to oon of pes my leste byperen:
ȝe diden to me/ þāne pe kyng shal
seye to hem: pat shuld be on his
lefthalf/ departe fro me. & curtid
into enlastige fier: whiche is maid
redy to we dꝛynke & his angels/ for
ȝe hungry: & ȝe ȝane not to me for
to ete/ ȝe visitde: & ȝe ȝane not to
me for to dꝛynke/ ȝe was herbo-
les: & ȝe herboled not me/ nakid:
& ȝe herboled not me/ syl: & in pr-
lon: & ȝe visitde not me/ þāne pe
shūlen answere to hi: & shūlen
seye/ lord whāne syen we pe hu-
grige. oꝝ pꝛyge. oꝝ herboles. oꝝ
nakid. oꝝ syl. oꝝ in prlon: & we ser-
uete not to we: þāne he shal an-
swer to hem: & shal seye/ treuþ
ȝe seye to you: how longe ȝe diden
not to oon of pes leste: neper ȝe
diden to me/ and pes shuld go i
to enlastige turnet/ forsope pe

Allt me thile go ito euil tinge he
 id it was .i. c. .vii. .vii.
 don. whane ihe hode en
 did alle pes wordis: he sei
 de to hile diltiphs: ze witen y afur
 tikep dayes: past shal be mad: &
 manns lone shal be bitakn y he
 be crucified: yane pe pnces of pael
 tis: & pe eldre me of pe peple were
 gadrid into pe halle of pe pnce of
 prestis: pat was leid capfas: & ma
 den a conseil: y per thulden holde
 ihu wip gyle & sle: loyeli per seide
 not in ye hahday: lest panenture
 uoyse were mad in ye peple: for
 loye whine ihe was in betampe i
 ye hous of symon: leprose: also
 ma hangge a box of alabastris of
 prestous oymemet: cam nix to
 hym: & thedd out on ye heed of
 hy restige: loyeli ye diltiphs seige
 hadte seiepn: seige: wherto yis lost:
 for it myzte be seel for nupche: & be
 zoun to pore me: loyeli ihe winge:
 seide to hem: what ben ze heuy or lo
 ry to pis woma: for she har wro
 ut in me a good wer: for tyn ze
 thulen enmore hane pore me w
 you: but ze thulen not algatis ha
 ne me: for loye pis woman sedige
 pis oymemet into my body: made
 for to burre me: treuh i seye to you:
 wher eue pis gospel shal be prechid
 in al ye world: also pat pig pat pi
 reomandite shal be leid into myde
 of humpane oon of pe twelue pat
 was leid judas daroth: wente for
 to pe pynes of prestis & seide to
 he: what wolen ze zyne to me: &
 i shal bitake hi to you: & per ordey
 ned to hy priti platis of siluer
 and fro pat tyme he souzte coue
 nablete: for to bittaye hym: for loy

in ye firtte day of pere loones: &
 is re feete of past: diltiphs came
 to ihu: & seide: wher wolt you we
 make redy to pee: for to ete past:
 & ihe seide: go ze into ye citee to si
 man: & seye to hy: ye manstir sen
 my tyme is nix: at pee i make past
 wip my diltiphs: and diltiphs dide
 as ihe comandite to he: & per made
 redy past: for loye whane euentid
 was maid: he sat to re mete wip
 his twelue diltiphs: and he seide
 to hem etynge: treuh i seie to you:
 yoon of you: shal bittaye me and
 per ful soun bigimen alle i he
 rial to seie: lord wher i am: & he
 answerige seide: he pat prittayd
 me: ye hond in ye plater: shal bi
 trape me: for loye manns lone go
 y: as it is writil of hi: but woto
 pat ma: by who manns lone shal
 be bittayed: it were good to hym:
 if pat ma hadte not be born: for lo
 ye judas pat bittayede hi: and ihe
 rite seige: waltir wher i am:
 ihu seide to hi: you hadt seide: i
 loye while per souped: ihe took
 breed: & bleide & brak: & zaf to hi
 le diltiphs: & seide: take ze & ete: pi
 is my body: and he takege pe cup
 pe: dide pankis: & zaf to he: & lei
 de: drynke ze alle herof: yis is my
 blood of pe newe testamet: whi
 ch shal be shad out for manne in
 to remysion of synes: for loye i
 seie to you: i shal not drynke fro
 pis tyme: of pis frust of ye vyne
 til into pat day: whane i shal
 drynke it newe wip you: in pe
 kyngdom of my fadir: and whine
 an ymne or hermy was leid: per
 wenten out into ye moit of ohy
 uete: yane ihe seide to he: alle ze

thulen suffre standre in me: i
 pis nix: for it is writil: i shal
 smyte ye sheparde: & ye sheep of
 ye floc thulen be scatterid: for loye
 afur pat i shal ryle asen: i shal go
 bifore you into galile: soych petre
 answerige: seide to hi: pou alle ihu
 len be standrid in pee: & i shal neie
 be standrid ihe seide to hi: truh i
 seye to pee: for in pis nix: bifore pe
 cof croise: pnes pou shalt denye
 me: petre seide to hym: ze pou it
 shal bilyoue me to dye wip pee: i
 shal not denye pee: also alle dilti
 phs seide: yane ihe cam wip he
 into a town yat is seide i thesmanay:
 & he seide to his diltiphs: sitte ze he
 re: ye while i go yidur: & preie: &
 whine he hadde take petre & twel
 lones of sebede: he bigan for to
 be heuy & son in herte: yane he
 seide to hem: my soule is sorewul:
 til to pe deey: bifore ze geabide
 ze here: & wake wip me: & he zede
 for altil: & seide dolon on his face:
 preyinge & seyinge: my fadir: if
 it is possible: palle pis cuppe: i
 pallion fi-o me: neveles not as i
 wole: but as you wolt: and he cam
 to hile diltiphs: & foud hem slepi
 ge: & he seide to petre: so wher ze
 nixte not: our wake wip me: wa
 ke ze & preie ze: y ze ent: not to
 teptacoon: for loye pe spirit is re
 di: but pe flesch is spf: or vutabte
 est: pe seide tyme: he wente & pi
 ete seyinge: my fadir: if pis cuppe
 may not palle: no but i drynke
 it: i wille be don: and est loone
 he cam: & foud hem slepi ge: for
 her pren were greuyd: & he leste
 hem & wente est loone: & preiete
 pe pridte tyme ye same word &

seide: yane he cam to his diltiphs:
 & seide to hem: slepe ze now: & rel
 teze: lo ye our har nezed: & man
 nis lone shal be takn: into ye hou
 dis of syneris: ryle ze go we lo
 he pat shal take me: har nezed:
 zit ye while he spak: lo judas oon
 of pe twelue cam: & wip hi a greet
 cuppe: wip siluerdis & bottis:
 sent of pe pnces of prestis: &
 of pe eldre me of pe peple: for lo
 ye he pat bittayede hi: zaf to he
 a tokene: & seide: whio eueze i sh
 al kille: he it is: holde ze hym: &
 anoo he conyge nix to ihu: seide
 hail maistn: & he biltide hi: & ihe
 seide to hi: fi-end wher to art you
 couni: yane per came nix: & leti
 de hondis on ihu: & heelde hy: and
 lo oon of he pat were wip ihu:
 holdige out ye hond: drent: out
 his swerd: and he tynytige ye ser
 uant of pe pnce of prestis: & t
 ride of: his eere: yane ihe seide to
 hi: turne pi swerd into his place:
 for alle pat thule take swerd:
 thule perulhe by swerd: wher
 gellit pou: i may not preie my
 fadir: & he shal zyne to me now:
 more y an twelue legiois of an
 gelis: how y fore thulen ye drap
 turis be: fulid: for so it bilyoue y
 to be don: i n pat out: ihe seide to
 ye cupanges of peple: as to a peef:
 ze han gon out: wip swerdis &
 bottis for to cathe me: day by day
 i sat at you: & i tynyte i pe temple:
 & ze heelde not me: for loye al pis
 pig was don: y pe lepruis of
 pfetis thulen be fulid: yane
 alle diltiphs fledde: & forloken
 hi: & per holdige ihu: ledde n hym
 to capfas pnce of prestis: wher

Arribis & pe eldre me of pe peple
hadde comu to gize forloze pe
tre inche hi a fer. til into pe hal
le of pe prince of prestis and he
entruce wip yue. & sat wip pe
seruants. & he shulde sepe en
de forloze pe puce of prestis &
al pe conseil souzte fals wtrueth
fig. azens ihu. & pei shulde take
hi to depe and pei foudeu not. wh
ane many fals wtruethis hadde
come treuht at pe laste. the pe
fals wtruethis. came & seide. vis
seide. I may distrope pe temple
of god. & afer. pe yude day bolde
it aen and pe puce of prestis ri
fige. seide to hi. and herit p no
vis to vo pigis. whiche pes wit
nellen azens pee. forloze ihu. w
stille. & pe puce of prestis seide to
hi. I cinouze pee by quip god.
p you seie to us. if p art cit re lo
ne of god. ihu seide to hi. you hast
leid nepeles. I seie to you. fro hen
multor. & shulde se manns lone
fatige at pe rithale of pe. & tu
of god. & comye in dowdis of he
uene. pane pe puce of prestis. to
rente his clois. & seide. he hay blas
femyd what. it han we nede to wit
nells. lo now. x han herd blasse
mpe. what semer to you. and pei
anwerige seide. he is gilt of depe
pane pei spette into his face. & sim
tede hi wip bukkis. forloze ower
zane strokis wip pe painme of her
hondis ito his face. & seide. you cit
pfetie to us. who is he pat smot
pee. sopeh. petre sat wipouten
i pe halle. & con handmaddu cam
nyz to hi. & seide. and p weir. wip
ihu of galile. & he denpede bifoze
alle men. & seide. I woot not whi

you seist. forloze whane he zede out
of re. ate. anoy handmaddu. sp
hi. & seide to he. p were pei. & p
was wip ihu of nalsareth. & etidoo
ne he denpede wip anoy. for. I knew
not pe ma. and afer. hard shal.
pe pat stode came nyz. & seide to
petre. treuht. & p art of he. forbi
& p speche. maky pee oppu. p
he bigan to warie. & seide. p
he knew not pe ma. & ando pe of
crew. and petre bypouite on pe
word of ihu. pat he hadde sed. hi
foze pe cot. crowe. vnes. p. wh
denpe me. & he zede out. & wape
bittirly. **C** **xxvii.**
Afore whane pe mozte
tyd was maid. alle pe p
ces of prestis. & eldre me of pe pe
ple. token conseil azens ihu. & pei
shulde take hi to depe. & pei leide
hi boundu. & bitoke to pilat of poi
ce meyr. or cheef iustile. pane in
das pat bittayede hi. sp. p. he was
dampyd. & he was led by penance
or forpung. & brougte aen pat
ti platis of siluer. to re pnces of
prestis. & to pe eldre me of pe peple
& seide. I haue syned. bittayige iust
blood. and pei seide. what to us. se. p
and whane he hadde cast away pe
platis of siluer. in pe tēple. he wen
te away. and goynge away. he han
gide hi wip a snare. forloze pe p
ces of prestis. token pe platis of
siluer. & seide. it is not leetful to
seide hem ito pe treserie. for it is
pe pncis of blood. sopeh. whane con
cil was taku. pei bouzte wip he
pe feeld of a potter. into buryng
of deed me. for vis pig. yillre feeld
is depid adydemach. p is afeeld
of blood til into vis day. pane pat

ping was fulfild. pat was seid
bi pe pfete jeremie seynge. and
pei token vnti. platis of siluer. pe
pncis of ama prestis. who pei p
seten of pe sones of yrael. & pei
zoude hem into a feeld of a potter.
as pe lord ordeynede to me. sopeh.
ihu. stode bifoze pe meyr. or domes
ma. and pe prestis aride hi. & lei
te art. vnti. of ieris. ihu. seip
to hi. you seist. & whane he was ac
cused of pe pnces of prestis. & eldre
me of pe peple. he answerte no pig.
pane pilat seip to hi. heereit. p not
hott many wtruethis. pei seipen a
zens pee. & he answerte not to hi
to ony word. so p. pe president won
dide greetly. forloze by a solepne
day. pe president was wout. for
to delpe to re peple. oon bondm.
whom pei wolte. forloze he hadde
pane o. famous ma. boundu. pat was
leid barabas. pfoze pilat seide to
he gadid to gize. who wole ze. p
leene. or delpe to you. wher. barabas
or ihu. pat is seid cit. for he wite.
p by enye pei bittayeden hi. for lo
pe whane he lat for iustile. his wif
seinte to hi. & seide. no pig. to pee. &
to pat mit. ma. for. I haue suffrid
vis day. many pigis. for hi by a vi
sion. or lixene. forloze pe pnces
of prestis. & pe eldre me. tyled. or
concelde. to re pepus. p. pei shul
den aze barabas. but pei shulden
lese ihu. forloze pe pudent answere
rige. seide to he. who of re tweyne
wolen ze to be leste. or delpe to. &
and pei seide. barabas. pilat seip
to he. what pfoze shal. I do of ihu
pat is seid cit. alle seip. be he cru
cified. pe pudent seip to he. sopeh.
what of puel. hay he don. & pei cry

eden more. seynge. be he crucified.
forloze pilat seynge. p. he. p. fide
no pig. but pe more anoyse was
maid. took watu. & wip. p. p. p.
dis bifoze pe peple. & seide. I am i
nocent. or gileles of pe blood of p.
mit. ma. se ze. and al pe peple an
swerige. seide. his blood be on us.
& on our sones. pane he leste to he
barabas. but he took to hem ihu
dowgud. p. he shulde be crucified.
Pane kyptris of pe president tak
ge ihu. in pe moot halle. gadide
to hi. al pe cupamp of kyptris. and
pei vndoyge hi. diten aboute hi
a reed mantel. and pei foldige a
croune of pornes. pntide on his
head. & a reed. in his rithond. and
pei kucide bifoze hi. & pei dornede
hi. & seide. he. p. k. p. of ieris. &
pei spetige on hi. took a reed. &
simpte his heed. & afer. p. pei had
den dornyd hi. pei vndoyde hi
of pe mantel. & pei cloide hi wip
his clois. & leide hi. for to crucifie
hi. sopeh. pei goynge out. fouder
ama. of sureuen. comye fro atou.
symont. bi name. pei cotrepede
hi. p. he shulde take his crou. & pei
came into a place. pat is depid gal
gatha. p. is re place of caluerie. &
pei zamen hi. for to drynke wip. mod
lid wip galle. & whane he hadde tal
tid. he wolde not drynke. sopeh. af
tir. p. pei hadden crucified hi. pei
depar tide his clois. & seinte lott.
p. it shulde be fulfild. pat is seid
bi pe pfete seynge. pei partiden
to hem my clois. & on my doy. pei
seinte lott. and pei litige kepte
hi. & pei pntide on his heed. pe cau
le of hi wtru. p. is ihu. of nalsareth.
k. p. of ieris. pane twey penes

weren crucified wip hi. oon on pe rith
half. & oon on pe lefthalf. forsope
me passige forp. blissemple hi. mo
nyge her hedis & seynge. f3 to
pee pat distropeft pe temple of god.
& in pe pride day bildest it azen
saue pon risill. if p art pe lone
of god. come down of pe cross. al
so & pnces of prestis stornge w
scribis & eldre me. seide. he made
oper me saue. he may not make
hi oile saue. if he is fig. of n. ael.
come he now down fro pe cross.
& we bilene to hi. he tristip i god.
delphie he hi now if he wole. for he
seide. for i am goddis sone. forso
pe & ye penes pat weren crucified
wip hi. putte to hi wip reppof
pe same pig. soveli fro pe lyfte
our. derkneilis weren maid on al pe
erpe. til to ye nymppe our. & abou
te pe nymppe our. ihe cride wip gr
cet vois & seide. hely. hely. lamasa
batanp. p. is. my god. my god. w
hast pou forsake me. soveli hi me
stondige per & heerige. seide. pis
clep is hely. and amoon oon of he
reynge. took & fillde a spoige
wip vynesgre. & putte on a reede.
& zaf to hi for to drinke. but ope
seide. suffre pou. se we wher hely
come delphynge hi. forsope ihe est
soone cryge wip greet vois. sen
te out ye spirt. & lo pe veil of pe
temple was lit oz to rent into tvey
parties. fro pe hyste til to down.
and ye erpe was moned. & stoones
weren cleft. & buriels weren opened.
& many bodies of seyntis pat slep
ten oz weren deed. rplede azen. & rei
goynge out of her buriels. after
his resurrection. came into pe hoo
ly citee. & apperide to manye. tren

ly centurio & rei pat weren wip
hi kepige ihi. whie pe moynge
of ye erpe was seyn. & vo pign
pat weren don. rei diede greetly
seynge. verily pis was goddis
sone. forsope p weren pere many
wimen a fer. pat lurae ihi fro ga
hile. & mynstride to hi. among whi
che was mary mandelen & marie
modir of james & of joseph. & pe mo
dr. of sebedees sones forsope whane
ye euenng was maid. p. cam a ryde
ma. fro armathia. by name joseph.
& he was discipule of ihi. he wente to
pilat. & arde pe body of ihi. rane
pilat comasidde pe body to be zold.
and whane pe body was tak. i. joseph
wlapide it in a cleue sentel of linen
clor. & putte it in his newe buriel
pat he hadde heuui in a stoon. & he
waleibide a greet stoon to pe doze
of ye buriel. & wente a wey. forsope
mary mandelen. & anoyr marie.
weren per. sitige azen pe sepulch.
soveli on petorir day pat is after
pals euenng. pe pnces of prestis
& pe farless came to gidre to pilat.
& seide. sir. we han myte p. yllke
tour oz dilleynour. seide. ze linge.
after p. dapes. i. ihal ryle azen. p.
fore comasidde pon pe sepulchre for
to be kept. til into pe pride day.
lest perauetur. his discipulis come
& stelen hi. & sejen to pe peple. he
haz rishi fro dede me. & pe laste er
roun shal be worse. pa pe forner.
pilat seide to hem. zehan pe kepig.
go ze. kepe ze as ze timen forsope
pe goynge forp kepte oz wardde pe
sepulch. markige oz selage pe stoon.
After keperis. **xxviii**
forsope in pe eneyd of pe la
bat. oz haliday. pat stynge

b. in pe furste day of ye wote. mary
mandelen cam & anoyr marie.
for to se pe sepulch. and lo p. was
maid a greet erpe moynge. for pe
angel of pe lord cam down fro he
uene. & cam nyz & turnede awei
pe stoon. & sat peron. soveli his lo
fig was as leyt. & his cloris as
snow. forsope for drede of hi pe
keperis weren a ferde. & rei weren
maid as deed me. for ye angel an
swerige seide to ye wimen. nyle
ze drede. for i woot p. ze seken ihi.
pat was crucified. he is not her.
for he roos. as he seide. come ze &
se ze pe place. wher pe lord was
put. and ze goynge sone. seie to
hile discipulis. p. he haz rishi. & lo
he shal go before zou ito gahle.
pere ze shule se hi. lo i. hane bifo
ze seid to zou. and rei weten out
soone fro pe buriels wip drede &
greet ioye. reynge for to telle to
hile discipulis. and lo ihe mette he.
& seide. hely. ze. forsope rei nezete
& heelde his feet. & wozthpede
him. rane ihe seide to he. nyle ze
drede. go ze. telle ze to my bryfen.
p. rei go in to galile. per rei shule
se me. and whie rei hadde gon.
lo sime of pe keperis came ito
pe citee. & telde to pe pnces of pl
tis. alle pigns pat weren don. and
pei gadrid to gidre wip pe eldre
men whie a coucil was tak. i.
zaunen to pe knytis plentuous
money. & seiden. seie ze p. his dis
pilis came by nyzt. & han stole hi.
whle we slepten. and if pis be
herd of ye prestet oz mistle. we
shulen coucele hi. & make zou sh
kir. & whie pe money was tak. i.
pei diten as rei weren tangt. and

pis word is p. prophid at pe ieris.
til into pis day. forsope enleue
discipulis weten into gahle. ito
an hil. wher ihe hadde ordeyned
to hem. and rei seynge hi. wozth
peden. soveli sime of hem dore
ten. & ihe comgge nyz. spak to he
& seide. al power in heuene & in er
pe. is iouni to me. ffore ze goynge
teche alle folkis. cristenng he in
pe name of pe fadir. & pe sone. & of pe
hooch. goft. techige he for to kepe
alle pigns. what ende pigns i. hane
comasidde to zou. and lo i. am wip
zou i alle dapes. til to ye endyng
of pe world. **I here endy pe gospel**
of mark. & bigynne pe plog of mark.
After ye enagehit of god. &
chou. & petris sone in bay
tym & in goddis word discipule. prest
hood in rael ledige. after flesht a
dekene. he turned to pe fery of ct.
wroot pe gospel in ytake. shewige
pon bope what he owide to his kyn
rete. & to ct. forwhi pe bigynng
of his pnciple. he ordeynge i pe
vois of a p. etis exdamacio. ihe
wip ye orde of dekens electio. p.
he pthige pe bifo ordeyned. iohn
sacharies sone. send out in vois
of an angel. tellge not conly god
dis sone maid man. but ye bodi of
pe lord. p. is pe churche ito alle p
gis by pe word of godis vois. qd.
shule shewe in ye bigynng of
his prechig. of pe gospel. p. re whi
che pis redynge. shule knowe to
whom pe bigynng of flesht. i. pe
lord & ihi comgge to pe habitade. pe
flesht shule knowe & in hi oile pe
word pat is ct. of pe vois iohn bap
tist. p. in consolacio. p. is i forme fa
dis he hadde loste. shule fyde. **1 of**

sove bove he pe werk of pe fulfild
gospel entige. & fro pe bapty
of pe lord. bigynunge to pche god.
ne tranelde not to sepe pe naty
nte of flesch. pe which he hadde
sepe in ope bfore. but he expel
fige pe expolition of al pe desiert.
hay the wout out pe fastig. of non
bre. of pe noubre of fastig. re tep
tation of pe fend pe congregacion
of beestis. & pe semple of angels.
p he oteynge us to vnderstode.
alle pigis in short peyntig to
gidre. ney pe antorte of pig do.
shulde do aney. & in parformunge
shulde not deuse. Ennesle of pe
werk. forsope he is seid. to have
pnt a wey his yombe. p he
myte be had as vnbore to pnt
hood. but so myche myte elem
on bfore oteyned. acordige to
pe seip. p ney so in pe werk of
pe word. he shulde leese pat ra
per he hadde dislerned on pnde.

For of alexandre he was bishop
of who by alle pigis werk of in
tencion was to fine. bore to dis
pose pe seipngis of pe gospel i hi
silk. & pe distuphine of laue to kno
we i hi silk. & pe natur of god to
knowe i pe flesch o i pe mahoode
of pe lord. pe which pigis in us
silk first it bihouer to be requid.
aftward we wolen pigis souz
to be knowen. hanngge pe meede of
exortacion. for he p ploitry. & he p
moistty ber pe same. but he p
ney entrees is god. **Here endy
pe plog. & bigynne pe gospel.**

Un der bigynne. **C. p.**
of pe gospel of ihu. et.
pe lone of god. as it is
writu i flape pe plete.

lo i sente my angel bfore p fare.
pat lthal make ri wepe redy bi
fore pee. pe vois of a cryere in
desert. make ze redy pe wepe
of pe lord. make ze his papis ryg
ful. iohu was in desert. baptis
ge. & prechge pe bapty m of pe
uallie into remysion of synes. and
al pe kintre of iudee wente out to
hi. & alle me of ierlm. and pe ier
ren baptisid of hy in pe flood iordn.
& knollechid her synes. and iohu
was clodid wip heers of camel. &
a gurdil of skyn was aboute his
dis. and he eet locustis & homy of
wode. & prechde seipunge. a stronge
yan. i lthal come after me. of who
i kuelige. am not worth for to vn
do or vnbryde pe lace of his schoou.
i have baptisid you in watir. forso
pe he lthal baptise you i pe hooly gost.

And it was don i yodages. ihu cam
fro nareth of galile. & was bap
tisid of iohu i iordan. and anon he
suyngge vp of pe watir. spz hene
nes openyd. & pe spurt conyge
down as a cithier. & disallige i hi
and a vois was maid fro heuene.
p art my lone loued. in pee. i have
pleid. and anon pe spurt pntide
out hi into desert. & he was i de
sert. fourty dayes & fourty nyg
tis. & was tēptid of sathanas.
and he was wip beestis. & angel
myntstryde to hym. forsope after
p iohu was takn. ihu cam ito gal
le. prechge pe gospel of pe kyng
dom of god. & seipge. for pe tyme
is fulfild. & pe kyngdom of god
lthal come nyz. for ymbe ze o do
ze penance. & bileue ze to pe gos
pel. and he passge bysdys pe se
of galile. spz symonit & andrew

he brot. pntige netis to pe see.
for pei were fydheris. and ihu sei
te to hem. come ze after me. i lth
al make you to be maad fydheris
of me. and anon pei forloken pe
netis. & pei lueid hi. & he zede for
fro pēmis altyl. & spz james of
sebede. & iohu his brot. & hem in
pe boot makige netis. & anon he
depte he. and pei leken sebede
her sadir in pe boot. wip hy red
seruantis. & pei lueid hi. and
pei entride into casarnai. & anon
i pe sabotis he zede into a synago
ge. & tauzte hem. and pei wonda
ren on his techig. for he tauzte
he. as hanngge power. & not as
scribis. and in pe synagoge of he
was amia in an vndene spurt.
& he crieid seipunge. what to us
to pee. p ihu of nareth. hant you
come fozto distre us. i woot. pat
you art pe body of god. and ihu
pzetēpde hi. & seide. were donib
& go out of pe m. and pe vndene
gost debrydige hy & cryge wip
greet vois. wente out fro hi. and
alle me wondride. so p pei souze
to gidre amog hem seipunge. what
is pis pig. what is pis neibe te
chig. for in power he comandid
to vndene spurtis. & pei obien
to hym. and pe tale or tynng of hy.
wente fory anon into al pe citre
of galile. & anon pei goyngge out of
pe synagoge. came into pe hous of
symonit. & andrew. wip james &
iohu. loyeh pe modir of symonitis
wip. lay spt in feuers. and anon
pei seien to hy of hy. & he cam nyz
& areride hy. wip me pe hond of hye
was takn. and anon pe feure
leste hy. & she myntstryde to he.

forsope whie pe euenng was ma
ad. whie pe soume wente down. pei
broute to hy alle hanngge yuele. &
hanngge denelis. and al pe cite was
gedrid at pe zate. & he heclid ma
nye pat were tranchid wip dūse
sors. & he castid out many denelis.
& he suffrid he not for to speke.
for pei keneid hi. and he rphge ful
eerly. zede out & wente into a desert
place. & pteide pei. & symonit su
mede hi. & pei lueid wip hi. & whie
pei hadde soude hi. pei seide to hi.
p alle me deie pee. and he seide to
he. go we into pe nexte townes
& citres. p i preche also pee. for to
pis pig. i cam. and he prechde i pe
synagogs of he. & in al galile. &
castid out fendis. and a leprous
ma cam to hi. & bldunte & knelid
& seide. if you wolt. you maist de
se me. forsope ihu hanngge met op
on hi. streyde out his hond. & ihu
touchid hy. seide to hi. i wole. be
you maid clene. and whā he had
de seid pis. anon pe lepre partide
a wey fro hi. & he was deusid. &
ihu pzetēpde hi. & anon ihu put
ride hi out. and ihu seide to hym.
be you. sepe to no man. but go.
nheue pee to pe pnce of prestis.
& offire for pi cleusig. into watnes
lig to he. yo pigis pat moyses bad
and he zede out. & bigun to preche.
& dehome o pūphlyhe pe word. so
p nou he myte not openly go in
to pe cite. but be wyroude fory
i desert places. & pei came to gidre
to hym. on alle sydis. **C. p.**

Ad eft he entride into
casarnai. aftir exre day
es. and it was herd pat
he was in an hous. & manye came

to gidre: so þe hous took not hem.
neþr at þe zate: & he spak to hem
arord: and þe came to hi. me þyn
gynge amā sūt in palestie: which
was born of four: and whāne þei
myten not bynne hy to ihu. for
þe cūpany of peple: þei made þe
roof nakid wher he was. & mak-
ge opyn. þei sente down þe bed. &
which þe spte mā in palestie lay
sorely whāne ihc hadde seyn þe
fery of hem: he seide to þe spte mā
i palestie / lone þi synes ben forzo-
un to þee: forfore þei weren
synne of re stribus. sittige & þen
kige in her hertis / what spek-
he yus: he blasfemy / who may
forzūne synes: no but god aloone:
and whāne ihu hadde knowe þis
þis anoon bi þe hoohy goot. for þei
pouste so wy þne hē self: he seyn
to hem / what penken ze þes þin-
gis i zow hertis: / what is hūtere
for to sepe to þe spte mā in palestie.
synes ben forzoun to þee: or for to
sepe ryle take þi bed & walke / fore
þi pat ze wite. þe māns lone hap
power in erpe to forzūne synes:
he seide to þe spte mā in palestie /
sepe to þee ryle up. take þi bed:
& go into þi hous: and anoon he
roos up: & whāne þe bed was ta-
ken up: he wente bi fore alle men.
so þalle me wondren & honou-
rede god & seide: for þe spten uen
so. **A**nd he wente out eft soone
to þe see: & al þe cūpany of peple
cam to hi: & he taughte hē / and whā-
ne he passide: & he spten leyn of alpher
sittige at þe tollbope. & he seide to
hym / synne me / and he roos: & he
wode hi: & it was don whāne he
sat at þe mete i his hous: many

pupphans & hūful mē. satten to
gidre at þe mete wy ihu. & hūle
dyluphs for þe were many rat
folhiden hi / and stribus & farse-
es seynge þe eet wy pupphans
& synful mē: seide to hūle dyluphs
whi zow manstn ety & dyluphs
wy pupphans & synnes: whāne
þis þis herd: ihc seide to hē / hūle
mē han no nede to a leche: but þei
pat han þuele / for þi cam not forto
clepe mē me: but synnes. **A**nd
dyluphs of iohu & þe farsees we-
ren fastige: & þei comē & sepe to
hi / whi dyluphs of iohu & of farsees
fasten: but þi dyluphs faste not:
& ihc seide to hē / wher re lones of
weddigis moun faste: as longe
as þe spouse is wy þem: as long
tyme as þei han þe spouse wy hē:
þei moun not faste: forfore dyluphs
dyluphs come whāne þe spouse shal
be takn awei fro hē: & rāne þei
dyluphs faste in yodages: no man
sell þi a pathe of rīde or newe dōp.
to anool dōp: ellis he takn awei
þe newe supplemet or pathe fro þe
elde: & a more bryt-ig is maid / and
no mā leuþy newe wy: into elde
botels or wyssels: ellis þe wy
shal berste þe wyssels: & þe wy
shal be held out: & þe wyssels
shal berste þe wyssels: but newe wy
shal be sent to newe wyssels: &
it was don estedones whāne
þe lord walkide i þe sabatis
bi þe cornes: & hūle dyluphs
bigimen to passeforþ & þur-
ke eerns of corn / soþi þe fa-
risees seiden to whi þi dyl-
uphs i sabatis pat þi is not
leefia: & he seide to hē / raden
ze newe what daup dide: whi

ne he hadde uede: and he hūgride &
þei pat weren wy þym / how he we-
te into þe hous of god. vndir abath
ar pnce of prestis: & eet looues of
posicion: whiche it was not leef
ful to ete: no but to prestis aloone
and he zaf to hē pat weren wy þym
& he seide to hē / þe sabat is maid
for mā: & not amā for þe sabat: &
fore māns lone is lord all of þe
sabat. **A**nd he entride efcloone
into þe synagoge: & þei
was amā hūgrige a drye hond / &
þei aspide hē: if he heelde in þe la-
botis: for to acuse hē / and he seide
to þe mā hūgrige a drye hond / ryle
into þe mydel: & he seyn to hē / is it
leefful to do wel in þe sabotis: whē
þi þuele: for to make a soule laif:
wher to leese: & þei were stille: &
he biholdige hem aboute wy þem
þe hūgrige soure on þe blyndnesse
of her herte: seyn to þe man / hold
forþ þi hond / and he heeld forþ:
& his hond was restond to hi / soþe
þi farsees goynge out: and on ma-
den coucil wy þe erodians azens
hi: how þei shulde leese hi forso
þe ihc wy hūle dyluphs wente to
þe see: and myche cūpany fro ga-
lile & iudee shūde hūm: & fro je-
rlm & fro iourne: & fro byondis
jordan / and þei pat weren aboute
tūre & sydon a greet multtude.
heerige þe þis pat he dide: came
to hē / and ihc seide to hūle dyluphs:
þe lail boot shulde serue hē for
þe cūpany of peple: lest þei oppres-
side hē / for he heelde many / soþe
þei felden faste to hē: to touche
hē / forfore how many ende hadde
sons or boidis & vndene spri

ns: whāne þei syn hē felle down
to hi: & create seynge / þou art þe so-
ne of god: & greetly he manastle
hē: & þei shulde not make hē op-
or knowe. **A**nd he arynge into
an hūle clepide to hi whi he wolde
& þei came to hi / and he made þe
weren twelue wy þi: & þe shulde
sende hem for to preche / and he zaf
to hem power to heele spte nēllis &
to caste out fendis: & to spten
he putte name: petre / and he cle-
pide james of sebede: & iohu þe bro-
þer of james: & he putte to hi na-
mes boenarges: & is lones of þi
dying: & he clepide andrew & filip:
& bartilmew & matheu: & thomas
& james altes & tadde & symon ca-
nane: & iudas scarioth: pat btray-
ede hē: & þei comē to an hōls: &
þe cūpany of peple cam to gidre
efcloone: so þe mieste not ete
neþ bced: & whāne his synes mē
hadde herd: þei wēten out for to
hold hi: for þei seide / þe is tūrned
into woodnesse / and þe stribus pat
came down fro ierlm: seide: for he
hap beliedub: & for in þe pnce of de-
uelis: he casty out fendis: & he cle-
pide hem to gidre: & he seide to hē
in parabis / how may sathanas
caste out sathanas: & if a reyne
be departid azens it self: yllke reyn
me may not stonde / and if an hōls
be dispart: poplud on it self: yllke
hous may not stonde: & if sathanas
hap rust azens hi self: he is dispart
poplud: & he shal not now stonde:
but hap an ende / no mā gon into
a strong māns hous may take a
weþ his vessels: no but he bynde
first þe strong mā: & rāne he shal
dynerly rānne his hous: treuk

46
I seie to you for alle spines & blasse-
mies. by which ye han blasfemed.
While be forzoun to ye sones of me
sopeh he pat blasfemey aens pe
hooly gost. hay not remission in
to my outen ende. but he shal be
gilty of euilantige trespass for ye
seide he hay an vndene spirit.

And his modir & briden come &
yei stonde by wynde for. seinte
to hye. & clepe hi. & a cuppys sat
aboute hi. and yei seien to hi. lo
ye modir & ye briden wynde for.
seiden pe. & he answerege to hem.
seide. who is my modir & my briden?
he biholdige he aboute. pat
saten i ye cuppas of hye. seide. lo my
modir & my briden for who pat
doye ye wille of god. he is my bro-
ther. & my suster & modir.

And eft ihu bigan to te-
che at ye see. & moche
cuppys of peple was ga-
thred to hym. so yei bringe to
a boot. sat in ye see. and al ye cu-
pys of peple. was aboute ye
see on ye lond. & he tauzte hem
i parables. many pigis. and he sei-
de to hem in his tethig. heere ze. lo
ama lwyge goy out for to lwe
& ye while he sowp. anop seed
felde aboute ye weye. & briddis
of heuene epur of ye er came &
eeten it forsoye anoper felde don
on stony places. wher it hadde
not moche erpe. & anod it sprong
up. for it hadde not depnelle of er-
pe. & while ye sone roos up. it
welewide for heete. & it dreyde up.
for it hadde not roote. and anop
felde don in to pomes. & pomes
streyde up. & strangle it. & it zaf
not fruyt. and anop felde don

into good lond. & zaf fruyt. & anop
up & weyng. & anop brouzte pat
ty foold. & anop stryfold. & anop an
hyndid foold. and he seide he pat
hay eeris of heerig. heere. **A**nd
while he was singuler or by hi alle
po twelue p. weren wy hy m. a-
ten hi for to expoune ye parable
and he seide to he. to you it is zoun
for to knowe ye myserie or zoun
urte of ye kyngdo of god. sopeh
to hem pat ben wynde for. al
le pigis ben maid i parables. &
yei seynge. se. & se not. & yei hee-
rige heere. & vnderstonde not. & se-
en to me yei be conuertid. & spines
be forzoun to he. and he seide to he
wren not ze pis parable. & how
ze ihule knowe. alle parables.
he pat sowp. sowp anop. res-
soreh it ben pat ben aboute ye
weye. where ye word is sowp. &
whane yei han herd. anod comey
sathanas. & taky anwy ye word
pat is sowp in her hertis. and al
so pes ben pat ben sowp on a ston-
whiche whane yei han herd ye
word. anod yei taken it wy sope.
& yei han not roote i he sile. but
yei ben teporal. his lastige al
ty me. afterward while tribula-
cion rylp. & perlecucion for ye
word. anod yei ben stanzid. &
yei be ope pat be sowp in pomes.
pes it ben pat here ye word. &
my sette of ye word. & dissent of
riches. & opy charge of coney.
se entrige strangle ye word. &
it is maid wy onte fruyt. and
pes it ben pat be sowp in good
lond. whiche heere ye word & ta-
ken & maken fruyt. con pntifol.
con stryfold. & con an hyndid

47
he seide to he. ee ze whi ze heere. **Mark**
And he seide to he. wher a lache
come. & it be put vnder abed. & whi
not p. it be put on a candilliche.
forsoye p. is no ryg. lid. pat shal
not be maid opy. ney ony ryg. is
pnt. which shal not come into
apert. if ony ma hay eeris of hee-
rige. heere he. in what metin ze
meten. it shal be metin to you. &
be cat to you. for it shal be zoun
to hi pat hay. & it shal be taky
anwy fro hi pat hay not. also pat
pat he hay. **A**nd he seide. so ye
kyngdom of god is. as if ama can-
seed into ye erpe. & he slepe. & it
ryse up. & day. & bringe for-
seed. & were faste. ye while he wo-
ot not. for ye erpe bihs oibue
wouhig. maky fruyt. first an
erbe. or grene corn. afterward
an ere. afterward ful fruyt. i ye
er. and whane of it sile. it hay
brouzt for fruyt. anod he sen-
dy a spyl or hook. for rypp corn
comey. **A**nd he seide. to what
pys shulen we luche ye kyngdo
of god. or to what parable shule
we comparisobue it. as a corn
of senney. which whane it is so
wū in ye erpe. is lalle ya alle see
dis pat be in erpe. & while it is
sowp. it stryep up into a tree.
& is maid more pan alle wortis
or erbis. and it maky grete bran-
chis. so p. briddis of heuene moyn
dwell vnder ye shadowe yef of.
and i many luche parables he spak
to hem a word. as yei myte heere.
sopeh he spak not to he. wynde
parable. forsoye he expoune
to hile dylupis alle pigis on hynd
hond. or by he sile. and he seide
to he in pat day. while eueryng

was maid. passe we azenward. &
yei leuyge ye cuppys of peple.
taken hi so p. he was in a boot. &
oyer bootis were wy hy. and a
greet storm of wynd was maid.
& seinte was into ye boot. so p.
ye boot was ful. & he was i ye hynd
dyr part of ye boot. & slepte on a
pilewe. & yei replen hy. & seye to
hi. manstr. perpeyne it not to pee.
for we perillhe. & he rylige up.
manasthe to ye wynd. & seide to
ye see. be stille. were donb. & ye wynd
cesside. & greet petiblenesse was
maid. and he seide to he. what dreyde
ze. not ze han fery. & yei dyad
de wy greet dreyde. & seide to ech
opy. who gellit p. is pis. for ye
wynd & ye see oberthen to hym.

And yei camen. **Mark**
ouer ye wawe. & troublig
of ye see. into ye curre of
gergeles. and after p. he zede out
of ye boot. anod ama in an vnde-
ne spurt ran out of burlis to hy.
which ma hadde an hous in granes
or burlis. & ney wy chaynes. **Mark**
te ony man bynde hy. for ofte tyme
he was bound in stockis & chaynes.
hadde broke ye chaynes. & hadde
broke ye stockis to finale gobatis.
& no ma myte daite or make ta-
me hy. and euimore up. & day in
burlis & hylis. he was crynge
& betyge hi sile wy stoones sope
h he seynge. ih. after. ran & wor-
shypede hy. & he crynge wy greet
vois seide. what to me & to pee.
you ihu ye sone of god hyette. &
coiome pee bi god. & you finente
me not. forsoye ih. seide to hy. p.
vndene spirit go out fro ye ma.
& ih. arde hi. what name is to

ree: & he sem to hi a legioun is name
to me for we ben manne and he pi
ede ihu moche: & he schilde not put
te hi out of pe kintre: for sope per
was pere aboute pe hil: a greet
floc of hoggis lelewynge: & pe
spiritis preide ihu & leide leide
us into hoggis: & we entre to
he and anon the graunde to he
& pe vndene spiritis goynge out
entred into pe hoggis: and wy
greet hire or haue pe floc was
cast down into pe see: to tweyne
pouland: & per were strangid i pe
see: sopli per pat kepten he: fled
den & tolen into pe citee & into feel
dis: and per werten out for to se:
what was don: & per came to ihu:
& per spren hi pat was trauid of
pe fend: sittige doid & of hool m
de: & peridredde: and per i spen h
it was don to hi pat hadde a fend:
& of pe hoggis: teelden to hem: &
per bigmen for to preie hi: & he
schilde go awei fro her cootis: &
whie he stude into aboot: he pat
was trauid of pe deuel: bigan
to preie hi: & he schilde be wy hi
sopeli i se: reserue hi not: but
leide to hi go pou ito pi hous to pi
ne: & telle to hem how grete pigis
pe lord hay don to pee: & hadde mer
cy of pee: and he wente for: & by
gan for to preche in decapoly: & is
a kintre of ten citees: how grete
pigis he hadde don to hi: & alle me
wondred. **A**nd whie he hadde
stude ito pe boot: et soone ou pe
see: myche cupany of peple cam
to gidre to hi: & was aboute pe lee
& oon of pe pucis of synagogis:
by name jayrus: cam: & he seye
him felle down at his feet: & prei

ede hi moche & leide: for my dought
is in pe laste pigis: come pou put
te pi hond on hir: & she be saaf
& lyne: & he wente for wy him:
& moche cupany of peple felle
hi: & oppreside hi: and a wōman
pat was in pe flur of blood: tikel
ue seer: & hadde suffrid many pi
gis: of ful many ledys: & hadde spe
did alle hir pigis: & no pig pfitte:
but more hadde wofse: whie she
hadde herd of ihu: cam i pe cupa
ny bihynde: & touche his cloy:
for she leide: for if i schal touche
the his cloy: i schal be saaf: & anon
pe well of hir blood was dried up:
& she felle in body: & she was he
lid of pe wōnde of synnes: and
anon he knowe in hi gylt: & y
tu pat was gon out of hi: turne
de to pe cupany & leide: who toke
chide my cloyis: & hile distupis
leide to hi: pou seest pe cupany pi
fige pee: & seest who touche me:
& he lokte aboute for to se hi: pat
hadde dou pis pig: for sope pe wōmā
dredige & qualige: witege y it was
don in hir: cam & felle down before
hi: & leide to hi al trewe: for sope
he leide to hi: down: y seer: he
mand pee saaf: go in pees: & be pou
hool of pi synne: & while he sp
ak: messangeris came to pe puce
of a synagoge: & seyen: for pi dōu
tir is deed: what trauid pou pe
mansur ferper: for sope whie pe wōmā
was herd pat was leide: he leide to pe
pance of pe synagoge: uple pou die
de: oonly bileue pou: and he reserue
de not ouy mā to lue hi: nobit per
& james: & john pe brop of james:
and per comen ito pe hous of pe pu
ce of pe synagoge: & he spynne

& men wepige & wepige moche: &
he seide hi: & leide to hem: what ben
ze troublid & wepen: & pe wēche is
not deed: but slepp: & per stonde
hy: for sope whie alle were cast out:
he taky pe fadir & modir of pe wen
che: & hem were wy hi: and per
entren: wher pe wēche lay: & he
holdige pe hond of pe wēche: leide
to hi: tabata cumy: & is interpid
or expounded: wēche to pee: & leide:
rple pou: & anon pe wēche roos &
walkte: sopli she was of twelue ze
er: and per were about by grette
donepig: & he comande to hem
greetly: & no mā schilde wite it:
& he comande to zyne to hi for
to ete. **E**n. **A**n. **A**n.
And he gon out fro pen:
& hile distupis felle hi: & whie
pe saboth was maid: he bigan for
to reche in a synagoge: and manne
heerige wōndren this teching: &
leiden of whens to pis: alle pes
pigis: & what is pe wysdom pat
is zōm to hi: & anche vertues whi
che ben maid by his hondis: wher
pis is not a smypp or carpenter:
pe sone of marie: pe brop of james:
& of joseph: & of judas: & of symon:
wher his listis be not here wy
us: & per weren standid in hi: &
he leide to he: & a profete is not w
onte honour: no bit i his owne
cintre: & in his lyn: & in his holis:
and he myte not make per ouy
vertu: no bit he leide a fewe syke
me: whie pe hondis were putt to
& he wōndred for pe vnbeleue of
he: and he wente aboute castela
i eiprou: & tanze: & he clepide to
syde twelue: & bigan for to sen

de hem by tweyne: & zaf to he po
wer on vndene spiritis: & coman
dite he: & per schilde not take ouy
pig in pe weye: no bit aserd conhy:
not a strypp: not breed: ney money
in yegindil: but i shod wy sandal
es y ben oppn abone: and y per schul
den not be cloyd wy twey cootis:
& he leide to he: whidur en ze schi
len entre into an hous: dwelle ze
pere: til ze gon out fro yems: and
who en schilde not reserue ne hee
re zōn: ze goynge out fro yems: i ha
le awei pe poude fro zōm feet:
into witnesing to he: & per goynge
out: prechiden: & men schildendo
perauice: & per antide out many fe
dis: & anoyntid wy oyle many sy
ke me: & per were heeld: & kinyg
eroude herde: for his name was
maid oppn: & he leide: & john bap
tist hay rili: zen fro deede men:
& perfore: & zues wōchen i hi: sope
li ope leide: & it is hely: but opere
leiden y it is a pphete as oon of pfe
tis: & whie pis pig was herd: erou
de leide: pis john who i haue bihee
did: hay rili: zen fro deede me: for
pille eroude sente: & heeld john:
& boond hi ito pldū for erodias pe
wyf of filip his brop: for he hadde
wedid hir: for john leide to eroude:
it is not leedful to pee: for to haue pe
wyf of pi broper: erodias for sope
leide alpires to hi: & wolde sle him
& myte not: sope eroude dredde
john: & knew hi a wif mā & hooly
& kepte hy: and eroude herde hy: &
he dide many pigis: & gladly herde
hi: & whie a conuable day hadde
falle: eroude i his burpe day made
a loup to pe pucis & tribunes: & to
pe furte or grette of galile: &

whiche pe dougter of yllbe erodias had
de entrid & daniel & pleid to eroud
& also to me sitige at ye mete: pe
king seide to pe wenche are y of
me what pon wolt: & y shal yue to
pee/ and he swoor to hir. for whiche
ener pon shalt are: y shal yue to
pee: pouz it be ye half of my king
dom/ which whane she hadde gon
out: seide to hir modir/ what shal
y are: & she seide/ ye heed of ioh
baptist/ and whane she hadde etrid
aoun wy haste to ye king: she
aride seynge/ y wole y aoud pon
yue to me i adill. ye heed of ioh
baptist/ & ye king was son for ye
coy/ & for me sitige to gide at ye
mete: he wolde not make hir son/
but whane amasqueller was sent:
he comatide ye heed of ioh bap
tist for to be brougt in adill/ & he
bishede hi in ye prisoun: & brougte
his heed in adill/ & so it to ye
wenche: & ye wenche gaf to hir mo
dir/ and whiche pis pig was herd:
hise distuphs came: & toke his bo
di. & putide it i abriel. And a
possibis comysse to gide to ihu: &
telde to hi alle pigis y pei hadden
don & taut: & he seide to he/ come
ze bizon oile. to a desert place: &
reide ze altil/ for y weren manye
yat came & wente aye. & pei hadde
not spate for to ete/ & pei frysinge
ito a boot: wente ito a desert pla
ce. by he sile/ & pei open he goynge
awey: & manye kneipe/ and pei
gden on feet fro alle citees. & ru
nen to gide pidur & came bifoze
he/ and he goynge out: syz moche
ciupany. & hadde mercy on he/ for
pei were as sheep: not hanysse
a shepate/ & he bigan for to teche

hem: manye pigis: & whane moche
our was maid now. hise distuphs
came wy seynge/ pis place is de
sert: & now ye our har pallid/ see
ne he. y pei goynge into ye nepte
toisnes & vilagis: bye to he me
tis whiche pei shulen ete/ and he
answerige seide to he/ yue ze to
hem for to ete/ & pei seiden to him
go we & bye ye loones wy eise
hyndrid pens: & we shule yue to
hem for to ete/ and he seir to he/ how
manye loones han ze/ go ze & se/ &
whiche pei hadde knouen: pei seir
fye & two fyllhis/ and he coman
dide to he. y pei shulen make alle
me sitte to mete bi ciupanyes on
grene hey/ and pei laten dou bi
tres. bi hyndridis & fiftes: & whiche
he hadde take ye fyne loones & thei
fyllhis: he biheel into heuene. &
bleisde & braf loones/ & gaf to hi
se distuphs: y pei shulen putte
bifoze he/ and he departide ewey
fyllhis to alle/ & alle eete & were
fyllhid/ and pei toke ye relys
of brokii metis. & twelue cofyns ful
of ye fyllhis/ sovel pei pat eete:
woren fyne ponland of me/ and
aoud he cotrefynede hise distuphs
for to fize ito a boot: y pei shulen
palle bifoze hi ouer ye see to bet
coyda. ye while he leste ye peple/
& whiche he hadde lest hem: he wete
into an hil for to priere/ & whiche eue
nyg was/ ye boot was in ye mid
del of see. & he alone in ye lond/ &
he syz he trauehyge & rowyge/
for ye wynd was cotraire to he/
and aboute ye fourye walpyng
of ye nygt: he wandryge on ye see
cam to hem. & wolde palle he/ & as
pei open hi wandryge on ye see:

pei genide for to be a fantu. & crede
for alle syen hi: & pei were distun
blid/ and aoud he spak wy he: & se
de to he/ triste ze/ i am: nyle ze dze
de/ & he cam vp to he into ye boot. &
ye wynd ceasde/ & pei wondride moze
wy fyne hem/ for pei vndr stode not
of ye loones/ for her herte was blyn
did/ & whiche pei hadden pallid ouer
ye see: pei came ito ye lond of gena
sareth. & settide to lond/ & whiche pei
hadde gon out of ye boot: aoud pei
kneipen hi/ and pei reynge pon
al ye cutrei. bigimen to bet aboute
beddis he pat hadde hem yuele. whiche
re pei herde hi be/ and whiche eue
he entride ito vilagis of into toisnes
or ito citees: pei puttiden eise me
in arectis/ and priere hi: y pei sh
ulden touche nameli ye heme of his
cloz/ & how manye euer touchiden
hi: were maid saaf. **Ch. vii.**
And farisees & summe of ye
scribis comysse fro ierlm:
come to gide to hi/ & whiche
pei hadde seyn summe of hise distuphs
ete breed wy comyne hondis. y
is not wayshu: pei blamele/ for
sope farisees & alle rewis. eten
not: no but pei wanthe ofte her
hondis. holdige ye tradicions of
statutis of eldre me/ and pei tur
nyge azen fro chepig: eten not:
no but pei be wantu/ & manye
oper pigis be. pat ben taku to
hem for to fepe wantyngis of ciup
pis & of watu/ vessels. & of ves
sels of bras & of beddis/ & farisees
& scribis: aride hi & seide/ wsh go
en not y distuphs. asen ye tra
dicion of eldre me: but wy comy
ne hondis pei ete breed/ and he
answerige. seide to hem/ have

pfeciede wel of you ipocritis: as it
is wntu/ pis peple wantyng me
wy lypis: forsope her herte is
fer fro me/ in veyn trenu pei
wantyng me: & techen doctrynes
& heestis of me/ for ze forlakige
ye mandemiet of god. holden ye tra
dicions of me. wantyngis of wat
vessels & of cypis. & manye oper pigis
lyk to yele ze doen/ & he seide to he/
wel ze han maid ye mandemiet of
god voyde: y ze fepe your tradici
on/ for moyses seide/ wantyng ye fa
dir & y modur/ and he pat curay fa
dir or modur: dze by deap/ but ze se
en/ if amā fepe to fadir or modur.
corban. y is what eu ziter is of me:
it shal profite to pee/ and ou. ze hif
fren not hi do ony pig. to fadir or
modur: & ze breken ye word of god
bi zoure edicion/ pat ze ha zom: &
ze doe manye luche pigis/ & he cefso
ne depige ye ciupany of peple. sei
de to hem/ ze alle heere me & vndr
stonde/ no pig is wyoute mā pat
entry into hi: pat may defoule
hi/ but yo pigis pat come forp of a
man: yo it ben pat defoule amā/
if ony mā haue eers of heerig.
heere he. And whiche he hadde en
trid into an hous fro ye ciupany of
peple: hise distuphs aride hi ye pa
rable/ & he seide to hem/ so & ze be
vnpudent or vnkylle/ vndr stode
de ze not y al pig wyoute forp en
trige into aman: may not defoule
hym/ for it hay not entrid ito his
herte. but ito ye wombe/ & byne
ye it goup out. purgige alle me
tis/ soyl he seide/ for ye pigis pat
goe out of amā: yo defoule amā/
for fro wy me. of ye herte of
me come forp yuele ponytis. auzis

me of me stoude her. whiche shu
len not taste depe: til rei seen pe
reweine of god comyge in vertu.
Ad after lye / **C. 11. 11.**
dayes: she took pett &
James & John and ledde
hem bi he self aloone to an hy hil.
he was tiffignid bifoze hem
and his dorys were maid shynny
ge & whete ful myche as suoy.
And whiche man dorys a fulle
re or walke of dory may not ma
ke whyt on erpe and helie wy
moyses apperde to he: & rei we
re spekege wy ihu & pett an
siverige: seide to ihu maister
it is good us for to be her: &
make we her pre tabernacles:
oon to pee: oon to moyses. & oon
to helie: for he wiste not what
he shulde seye: for rei were a
gast bi drede and y was maad
a cloude shadenwige he: & a vois
cam of ye cloude & seide: yis is
my moost dere wyrtre sone: heet
ze hym: & anoon rei biheldige
aboutte syze no more ony man.
no but ihu oonh wy he: & wha
ne re came doil fro ye hil: he
comandide he: y rei shulde not
telle to ony ma. po pigis y rei
hadde seyn: no but whue manys
sone hay rishi azen fro deete me
and ye heelden ye word. at hem
sulf. selige what shulde be.
whane he hay rishi azen fro de
de me: & rei arde hi: & seiden
what yfoze seien farisees & shi
for it bihouey hehe for to first
whiche answeryge. seide to hem
whue helie comey: he shal first
restore alle pigis. And how it
is wirtu on manys sone: y he

come

suiff many pigis. & be dispuld
but y seie to zoi. for also helie is
comi: & rei dide to hi. what eie
pigis rei wold. as it is wirtu
of hi: & he comyge to hile disti
phis: syz a greet ciupany abou
te hem & shis dispynge wy he
anoon al ye peple seynge ihu.
was a stouped. & rei drede and rei
renynge greet hi: & he arde hem
what dispynge ze among zoi. &
oon of ye ciupany answeryge: se
de maister y hane brougt to pee.
my sone: hennge a doib spirit
whiche wher ever he taky hym:
hynch hi down. & he tropp or
vomer & betry to gide wy teer.
& wery dre. and y seide to y disti
phis y rei shulde caste hi out: and
pei mynt not. whiche answeryge
to hem seide: a y generacion out
of bileue: how longe shal y be
at zoi: bryge ze hym to me: & rei
brougt hym: & whue he hadde bi
hym: anoon ye spirit troublede
hi: and he cast doiln to ye erpe.
was walewid fro pyge and he ge
ide his sadir: how moche of time
it is: lye yis pig: feld to hi: & he
seide: fro chldhod: & ofte he hay
pint hi boye into fier: & into wat.
y he shulde leese hi: but it y ma
ist ony pig: helpe us: & hane
cp on us: sopeh ihu seide to hym
if pou mant bileue: alle pigis
ben possible to amā bileunge: &
anoon ye sadir of ye chld cryge
wy teeris. seide: lord y bileue:
and whue ihu hadde seyn ye ci
pany of peple renynge to gide:
he manafide ye vnclene spirit.
& seide to hi: pou deef & doib lye

rit: y comande pee. go out fro hy.
& entre no more into hy: and he cri
pyge & moche to breidige hy: were
out fro hi: & he was maad as deed.
so y manys seide: y he was deed for
soye ihu holdige his hond: lise hy
wy & he roos: & whue he hadde en
trid into an hous: hile distyphis
aride hi princely. whi mynt not
we caste hi out: and he seide to
hem: yis kinde. in no pig: may go
out: no but i preier & fastag. &
pei zeden fro ye mis. & werten foz
into galile: & he wold no mā wite
forsoye he raunte hile distyphis: &
seide to he: for manys sone shal
be betrayed into ye hondis of me:
& rei shulen sle hi: and he slayn:
shal ryle men on ye pydde day.
& rei kuebē not ye word: & dred
den for to are hi: and rei came
to cafarman: whiche whue rei
were in ye hous: aride he: wht
trotide ze ye weye: & rei were
fille: sopeh rei dispynge amog
he in ye weye: whio of he shulde
be more: and he stitige clepide
ye welue: & seide to he: if ony
mā wole be ye furste amog zoi:
he shal be ye laste of alle: & ye m
istre of alle: and he takige a
chld. ordepynde hi in ye middel
of hem: whio whue he hadde bidp
pid: he seide to he: whio eie rei
ceyney con of such chldre in my
name: he reseyney me: & whio
eie reseyney me: he reseyney
not me aloone. but hi pat seute
me: John answeryde to hi & seide:
orant we synen sū oon castige
out fendis in y name. whiche
suey not vs: & we han fozbodū
hi: sopeh ihu seide: nyle ze fozbe

de hi: for no mā is pat dory vtu
i my name: & may soone speke
puele of me: he pat is not azen
us: is foz vs: sopeh whio eueve
shal yme dyntke to zoi a cuppe
of coold watr i my name. foz ze
ben of cat: trenh y seie to zoi:
he shal not leese his meete: and
whio eie shal slandze oon of yes
lytle bileunge i me: it is good
more to hi y amilie stoon of al
lis. were don aboutte his necke
& he were cast to ye see: & if y
hond slandze pee: litte it a wey:
it is bette to pee. feble to entre
ito lye: y hennge ribeyne hon
dis & go to helle. into fier pat ne
nere shal be quenched: wher ye
worm of hem drey not: & ye fier
is not quenched: and if y foot sl
andze pee: litte it of: it is bette
to pee foz to entre crokid ito en
lastige lye: y hennge ribeyne feet
to be sent to helle of fier pat ne
ner shal be quenched: wher ye
worm of he drey not: & ye fier
is not quenched: y if ym ye slau
dre pee: caste it out: it is bette
to pee. foz to entre gogol pyed i
to ye reweine of god: y hennge
ribeyne yzen foz to be sent into
helle of fier: wher ye worm of
hem drey not: & ye fier is not
quenched. **A**d sope eueri man
shal be salid or maad sanery
wy fier: & eueri slay sacrifice
shal be saneryd wy salt: salt is
good pig: y if salt be vnlanery.
in what pig: shule ze make it
sanery: hane ze salt i zoi: & hane
ze pees amog zoi. **C. 11. 12.**
Ad ihu rishge vp fro ye
ms: cam ito ye endis of

hude ouer Jordan & esloones pe
cūpanyes of peple came to gude
to hi and as he was wout: eslo
ne he tauhte he & farisees comp
ge up: ariden hi wher it be leet
ful to a mā: for to leene or forla
ke his wyf: & rei tēptiden hym
and he answerige: seide to hem
what comāde moyses to you: wh
iche seide moyses suffide to wy
te a label of forlāte: & to forlāt
to whiche ihc answerige: seide for
ye harduelle of zoni herte: moys
wroot to you vis comāde mēt for
loye fro ye bigynnyng of creature:
god made he male & female & he
seide for vis yng a mā shal leene
his fadir & modur: & shal cleue to
his wyf: & rei shulen be tweyne
in o flesch: & so wolpei be not twee
ne: but o flesch: pfore pat yng
pat god wōpēde to gude: no man
may departe. And esloone in
ye hous: hile dūtyphs aride hym
of ye same yng: & he seide to hem
who enie leenev his wyf & wedd
anoy: he dory anoutrie on hir: &
if ye wyf leenev hir hold bonde &
be wedd to anoy mā: she dory
anoute. And rei broute to hi
lytle children: & he shulde touche
he: sopeli pe dūtyphs pteynde
to me byngyge: whiche whāne
ihc hadde seyn: he bar heupe & sei
de to he: snuffe ze lytle childre for
to come to me: & forbede ze hem
not: for of enche is ye kyngdom of
god: treuli: & sepe to zoni who enie
shal not resseyne ye kyngdom of god:
as a lytle chld: he shal not entre
into it: and he bycuppe hem: &
puttuge hondis on he: bleside hem:
& whne ihc was gon out i pe were:

o mā rēmyge before: Enclide before
hi: & priede hi: & seide: goode man
what shal i do: & y: resseyne eu
lastige lyl: forlope ihc seide to hi
what seist you me good: noon is go
od: no but o god aloone: & i no wite
pe comāde mēt: do p noon anoy
trie: sle not: stele not: sepe not fals
wituelig: do no fraude: wozshipe
yi fadir & yi modur: and he answe
rige seide to hi: maister: i haue kept
alle yes rigis: fro my yongye: for
ihc biheeld hi: & louede hi: & he seide
to hi: o yng: falyt to yee: go pon: fill
you: what enie rigis you haue:
& zyne to poze me: & you shalt ha
ue tresour in heuene: & come: lye
me: whiche maud lonzful in pe wōd:
wente away moxnyge: for he hadde
many possessionis: and ihc bihol
dige abouite: seide to hile dūtyphs:
how hard rei pat han richelsh: sh
ulen entre into ye kyngdom of god:
forlope ye dūtyphs were a stonped
i his wōdis: & ihc esloone answe
rige: seide to he: ze lytle lones how
hard yng it is: me tryste in ry
chelsh: for to entre into ye kyng
dom of god: it is lyter: or elier: a
camel for to passe porw anedlis
pye: & a ryche mā for to entre in
to ye kyngdom of god: whiche wōnde
de more sepyge at he silt: & who
may be maud lant: & ihc biholde
he seide: auentis me it is imposs
ble: but not auentis god: for alle
rigis ben possibill auentis god: &
peti: bigan for to sepe to hi: lo we
han left alle rigis: & han sued yee
ihc answerige seide: treuli: i seide
to you: & is no mā pat leenev hous
or bypen or sistris: or fadir: or mo
dur: or lones or feeldis for me: &

for ye gospel: whiche shal not take
an hynd fold so moche: now i vis
tyme: housis: & bypen & sistris: &
modris & lones & feeldis: wy psetu
cions: & i pe wōld to couyge enie
lastige lyl: forlope manye shule
be ye firste: ye: laste: & ye
laste: ye firste. Forlope rei we
re in ye wepe traynge to ierlm:
& ihc wente before hem: & rei wōn
drude & folewyge dūdde: and est
loone ihc takige riveue: bigan to
seie to he: what rigis were to co
me to hy: for lo we arzen to ierlm:
& māns lōne shal be bytraped to
ye pynnes of prestis & to scribis
& to ye eldre me: & rei shule dūp
ne hy bydepe: & rei shulen bytake
hi to heye men: & rei shule storne
hi: & byspete hi: & bete hi: and rei
shule sle hi: & in ye prydde day he
shal ryle azen. And james & jo
sebedes lones: comē nyz to hym
& seyen: maister: we wolen: & wh
enue we azen: & do to us: & he seide
to he: what wole ze & y: do to zoni:
& rei seide: zyne to us: & we litte
peton at pi rythalf: & peton at pi
left in yigloze: forlope ihc seide
to he: ze wite not what ze shule
axe: mōken ze dūpke ye cuppe
whiche i dūpke: or be wānthim
wy ye baptym: i whiche i am bap
tild: & rei seide to hi: we mōken
sopeli ihc seide to hem: treuli ze
shule dūpke ye cuppe pat i dū
ke: & ze shule be wānthim wy ye
baptym: in whiche i am baptild: but
for to litte at my rythalf or left
half: it is not myn to zyne to zoni:
but to whiche it is maud redy: &
ye ten heerige: bigūnen to hane
idignacion of james & john: lope

h ihc clepide he: & seide to he: ze
wite p rei pat semē or ben seyn to
hane pmythood on folkis: ben lordis
of he: & ye pnces of he: han powber
of hem: forlope it is not so in zoni:
but who enie wole be maud more:
shal be zoni mynist: & who enie
wole be ye firste in zoni: shal be
seruait of alle: forwhi & māns
sone cam not: & it shulde be my
nistrid to hi: but p he shulde
mynistre: & zyne his lyl redēp
cion or azenbyng: for manye &
rei comē to ierico: & whne he seide
forp fro ierico: & hile dūtyphs: & a
ful moche cūpany of peple: ye sone of
truce bartymens blind: sat bi sh
dis ye wepe & beggide: whiche whā
ne he hadde herd p it is ihc of na
sareth: he bigan to crye & seie
ihc ye sone of damp: hane mercy
on me: and manye pteynde hi:
p he shulde be stille: & he criede
nythe more: ihc ye sone of damp:
hane mercy on me: and ihc ston
dige comāde: for to be clepid
and rei clepe pe blind mā: & seide
to hi: be pon of bett herte: ryle
up: he clepy vee: whiche castide
a wey his dōp: & stūpide & cam
to hym: & ihc answerige: seide to
hy: what wolt p & y: shal do to p:
forlope ye blind mā seide to hy:
maister: p: & se: sopeli ihc seide to
hi: go pon: & fery har maud pec
sant: & anoon he sūz: & hāked hi
in ye wepe. **A**nd whne ihc cam nyz to
ierlm: & to betanye to pe
moit of olynes: he sendy twey
of hile dūtyphs: & seip to hem: go
ze into ye castel: pat is azen zoni:
and anoon ze entrige yidur: ihc

len fynde a colt tyed on which noo
of me sat 3t. vnbrynde ze & bryger
hi and if ony mā shal seie ony
pis to you what doen ze. seie ze
p he is nedeful to pe lord. & a noo
he shal leue hi hndre & pei go
ynge forp. foriden a colt bound
bifore pe zate wyppoute forp i pe
meeting of twey weyes. & pei
vnbonden hi & sume of me sto
dige per. seiden to he. what doen
ze vnbryndige pe colt. & pei seide
to he. as ihc comandide he. and
pei leffen it to he. & pei bryngten
pe colt to ihu. & pei putide on hi
her clooyis. & ihc sat on hi forlor
manpe streyde her clooyis i pe
weye. sopeh ope me fytide boke
oz braychis fro trees. & streyde
i pe weye. and pei pat wente bi
fore. & pat hieden. & ede seynge
of ana. blestid is he pat comep
in pe name of pe lord. blestid be
pe kyngdo of oure fadir daup.
pat comep of ana. in hysse rin
gis. & he entde ito ierlm. into pe
teple. & whne alle me were sey
aboute. whne pe our was nou
eneyng. he wente out to betampe
wy elue. and anoy day whne
h wete out of betampe. he hngri
de. & whne he hadde seyn a fige
tre a fer. haunge leenis. he ca
if happli he shulde fynde ony pis
p yne. and whne he cam to it. he
foud no pig out taku leenis. for
it was not tyme of figis. & ihc
answerige. seide to it. now no mo
ze. wyppoute ende. ony mā ete fr
uit of pee. & hse diltphs herden.
& pei comē to ierlm. & whne he had
de entrid into pe teple. he bigan
for to caste out. me sillige & by

ynge in pe teple. & he turnede
to dou pe boordis of chaigis. & pe chaig
of me sillige culuers. and he suffri
de not p ony mā shulde be. a ves
sal ym. & he teple. & he taughte he
seide. wher it is not writu. p m
hous shal. & he clepid pe hous
of preier to alle folkis. & bnt ze ha
mand it. a dene of peenys. & whne
pis pig was herd. pe pines of pre
tis & stris soungen how pei shul
de leese hi. for pei dreedde hym. for al
pe cupany of peple. wondre on his
techyng. & whne eneyng was mad.
he wente out of pe cite. & whne pei
passide erly. pei sizen pe fige tree
mand dne. fro pe rootis. & pete ha
unge myde. seide to hi. mantr lo pe
fige tre. who pou cansted. hay dri
ed up. & ihc answerige. seide to hem
hane ze pe seip of god. treuh. i seie
to you. p who eue seip to pis hul. be
pou taku. & seid ito pe see. & donny
not in his herte. bnt bilene. p whne
eue he shal seie shal be don. it shal
be mand to hi. pfore i seie to you. al
le pigis. what enere pigis ze ppep
ynge shule are. bilene ze p ze shu
len take. & pei shule come to you. &
whne ze shule stonde for to ppep.
forpne ze if ze han ony pig. azen ony
man. p & you fadir. pat is in heu
nes. forpne to you. your synes. p
if ze forpne not. nep. your fadir
pat is in heuenes. shal forpne to
you. your synes. And eft soone pei
comē to ierlm. and whne he walkide
i pe teple. pe hysse prestis & stris
& eldre me comē nyz to hi. & seye to
hi. i what power doist p. res pigis.
oz who gaf to pee pis power. p you
do res pigis. forsope ihc answerige
seide to he. & i shal are you o word.

& answerige ze to me. & i shal seie to
you i what power i do res pigis. & whne
pe was pe bapty of iohm of heuene
oz of me. answerige ze to me. & pei po
nyte wy he sult. seynge. if we seip
en of heuene. he shal seie to us.
whi pfore bilene ze not to hi. if we
seipen of me. we dreedde pe peple. for
alle me hadde iohm. for he was ve
rli a pte. & pei answerige. seie
to ihu. we witen neuie. and ihu an
swerige. seip to he. nep. i seie to z.
i what power i do res pigis.
And ihc bigan. & seide. & i
to speke to he in parabis.
a mā plantide a vyne zerd.
& putide a boune it an hogge. & dalt
a lake. & bulde a tour. & hride it to
erpetheris. & wente forp i pilgri
mage. and sente to pe erpetheris.
i tyme a seruait. p he shulde rel
seyne of pe erpetheris. of pe frunt
of pe vynezerd. whiche toke hym
& beeten. & leste hi. vopde. and eft
soone he sente to he anoy seruait.
& pei wounde hi in pe heed. & po
vysthude wy chidigis oz reppoy
gis. & eft soone he sente anoy. &
pei slowe hi. & ope mo. betrige hi
me. bnt aleynge ope. pfore 3t he
haunge o lone moost derewoipe.
sente also hi pe laste to he. & seide.
for bi hap pei shule reuerete my
lone. forsope pe tenaitis seiden
to gidre. pis is pe epr. come ze lte
pe hi. & pe heritage shal be oum.
& pei takige hi. littede. & castiden
out wyppoute pe vynezerd. pfore
what shal pe lord of pe vynezerd
do. he shal come & leste pe tenaitis.
& zyne pe vynezerd to ope. & wh
ze han not rad pis sptu. pe sto
whiche pe bileris han diltphid.

pis is maid into pe heed of pe cor
ner. pis pig is maid of pe lord.
& is wondre ful bifore our syn.
and pei soungen forto holde hym.
& pei dreedden pe cupany of peple.
for pei knewe. p to he he seide pis
parable. and pei lesten hi. & pei
wentē a way. & pei seide to hi. hi
me of pe farisees & erodians. for
to take hy in word. whiche comp
ge seipen to hi. mantr we witen
p you art sopfast. & rectit not
of ony mā. for nep. you seest ito
face of mā. bnt pou techst pe we
pe of god i treupe. is it leestul p.
bnt be zoun to celar. oz we shu
le not zyne. whiche wryge her p
up falsheste. seide to he. what rep
ten ze me. bnt ze to me a peny
p i se. and pei bryngte to hi. & he
seide to to hem. whos is pis yma
ge. & pe wryge. pei seipen to hym.
celaris. forsope & ihc answerige.
seide to hem. per soze zelde ze to ce
sar. po pigis pat ben of celar. & to
god. po pigis pat ben of god. & pei
wondreden on hi. And saducris pat
seipen no resurreccion to be. came
to hym. & ayde hi. & seiden. mantr
moyses wroot to us. p if pe bropr
of a mā wer deed. & leste a wyf.
& leste not lones. his bropr take hi
wyf. & reyle up seed to his bropr.
pfore seuene brayen were. & pe fir
ste took a wyf. & is deed. & leste no
seed. & pe secude took hnr. & he is
deed. & nep. pis leste seed. & pe ynd
de also. & in hst mā seuene tookē
hnr. & leste not seed. and pe wom
mā pe laste of alle is deed. pfore
i pe resurreccion. whne pei shule
ryle aze. whos wyf of res shal
she be. for seuene hadde hnr to

Wylf and ihe answerige: seide to he
 wher ze erre not yfore: not knowi
 ge ye iheris ney ye etu of god?
 for whue ye ihule rise azen fro de
 de men: ney ye ihulen wedde: ney
 ihule be weddid: but ye ihule be
 as angels of god in heuenes: loth of
 deed me. y ye rylen azen. han ze
 not rad in pe booke of moyses on pe
 boult: how god spak to hi i seide:
 I am god of abrahim: i god of israhel:
 i god of iacob: he is not god of deed
 me: but of lypunge me: yfore ze erre
 moche: And oon of pe stris pat had
 de herd he disprutige to gidre: ca
 ny: and he seynge y ihu hadde
 wel answerid hem: aride hym.
 which was pe firtte maudemēt
 of alle: i ihe answeride to hi: y
 pe firtte comādemēt of alle: is
 heet pou ihu: y lord god is oo god
 i yon ihalt loue y lord god of al
 ym herte: i of al y sonle: i of al
 y mude: i of al y bāoz mūt: y
 is pe firtte maudemēt: for dore pe
 secide is lyk to yis: yon ihalt loue
 y nezeboze: as y iust: i is noo
 oyr maudemēt: more yān yis:
 and ye scribe seide to hi: maist
 in treupe yon hant wel seid: for
 o god is: i per is noo of out takū
 hy: and y he be loued of al ye her
 te: i of al ye mude: i of al ye vnd
 stōndig: i of al ye soule: i of al
 strēgge: i to loue ye neyboze
 as hi self: is more yā alle bēd
 of strigis i sacrifices: ihe forlope
 seynge y he hadde answerid wy
 selp: seide to hi: yon art not fer
 fro ye kyngdom of god: And pāne
 no mā durste aye hi: i ihe an
 swerige: seide techge i pe tēple
 how sephen it bis y crist is ye so

ne of damp: for damp hi self
 de in pe hooly gost: ye lord seide
 to my lord: sitte on my rythale:
 til i putte ym eneymes: ye stōd
 of y feet: yfore damp hi self se
 hi a lord: i wherof is he his loue:
 and moche cūpany gladly herte
 hi: i he seide to hi in his techge
 be ze war of stris. **Is. tēchge**
of laue: pat wole wandre i stō
 us eyn gay clopis i be salutid
 in chepis: i sitte i synagogis in
 ye firtte chaperis. **Is. wolen hant**
 ye firtte luyng places i sonys:
 which deuoit ye housis of i
 dōwis: vnder colour of long p
 er: ye ihule take lenger dom
 eyn harder dāpnacōn. **And**
 ihe luyng azen ye treferie: y
 heel how ye cūpany of peple cal
 tide money to ye treferie: and
 many riche me caste many y
 gis: lope ihu o poze widowe
 hadde comū: she sente aye m
 nys y is a ferpig: and he depi
 ge to gidre hse dūphs: seide to
 he: treuli i seie to yon: y yis poze
 widowe sente more yān alle: y
 pat sente into ye treferie: for
 alle sente of yān pig: yān was ple
 tenous to he: but yis of hyr m
 ette: sente alle yis pat she had
 de al hyr lyf lode. **Is. xij.**

Ad whue he wente out
 of pe temple: oon of his
 dūphs seide to hi: maist
 tr bihold what man stōms: i
 what man bildigis: and ihu an
 swerige: seide to hi: seest y alle
 yis grete bildigis: i ihal not
 be left a stoon on a stoon: wher
 ihal not be distroied: i whue
 he sat i pe mount of olynes azen

pe temple: petre i james i john
 i andreu aride hi bi hym self: seie
 yon to us: whue yis yis ihule
 be maid: i what tokene ihal be
 whue alle yis yis ihule bigyne
 for to be endid: i ihe answerige:
 bigan for to seie to he: se ze: y no
 mā dillepue yon: for many ihu
 len come i my name: seynge: y
 am: i ye ihulen dillepue many
 soyl ihu ze ihule heer batels
 i opynsōis of batels: drede ze not
 for it bihoney yele yis forto be
 don: but not 3t anoon is ye ende
 for folc ihal ryle on folc: i reib
 me on reibme: i erpe moungis
 i hūgū ihulen be by places: yis
 yis ihule be: bigynnis of for
 wis: but se ze yon self: for ye
 ihule take yon in cōncels: i ze
 ihule be betū in synagogis: i
 ze ihule stonde bifore kigis i
 domes me for me: into witnellig
 to he: and to alle folk is it bihoney
 firt ye gospel forto be prechid: i
 whue ye ihule lette yon i bitake:
 nyle ze bifore yele what ze ihule
 speke: but speke ze yān pig: yān
 al be yonū to yon i yān our: for ze be
 not ye spokeris: but ye hooly gost:
 for a brop ihal bitake ye brop into
 deyr: i pe fadir ye lone: i sones ih
 ulen ryle to gidre azen fadris i
 modris i pōynthe he by deyr: i ze
 ihulen be in hate: alle me: for my
 name: but he yān lasty to ye en
 de: yis ihal be saif. **Forlope** wh
 ze ihule se ye abhōmyracōn of
 dūst i fort stōndige wher it oyr
 not: vnd stōnde he yān redy: yān
 ye pat ben i iudee: Ele ito iylis:
 and he yān is a bone ye roof: come
 not donū into ye hous: ney entū he:

y he take omy pig of his hous: i he
 yān ihal be in ye feed: turne not
 azen bihūde for to take his dōp: lo
 yel iwo to he yān ben wy childe i
 uorlthe in yo dāyes: yefore p
 ze y ye be not don in wyntu: forso
 ye yille dāyes of tūlacōn ihule
 be enche: which man werē not
 fro ye bigynnyng of create: wher
 god made til nou: ney ihule be: i
 no but ye lord hadde hreggid ye dā
 es: al mākynde hadde not be saif:
 but for ye chosene which he ches:
 ye lord hāp maid ihort ye dāyes
 and pāne if omy mā ihal seie to i:
 lo her is est: lo pere: bileue ze not:
 for falsē cōis i falsē pētis ihule
 ryle: i ihule zyne tokenes i won
 dūis: to dillepue if it may be don
 zhe ye chosene: yefore se ze: lo i hāne
 bifore seid to yon alle yis: but in
 yo dāyes azen yān tūlacōn: ye
 sōne ihal be maid derk: i ye mo
 ne ihal not zyne hyr ihymyng: i
 sterris of heuene ihule falle don:
 i vertues yān ben i heuenes ih
 ulen be mooned: i yāne ye ihule
 se māms loue comyge i dōndis of
 heuene: wy greet vertu i glorie:
 i yāne he ihal seide hse angels:
 i ihal gadre his chosene fro fou
 re coostis: fro ye hyste pig of er
 pe: til to ye hyste pig of heuene:
 forlope of ye fige tre: lerne ze ye
 parable: whue nou his brānche
 is tendre i leuys be spryngū out:
 ze knowe y sōnd is in ye nezte
 so i whue ze ihule teen yis yis
 be maid: wite ze y it is i ye nezte
 in ye dōris: treuli i seie to yon y
 yis genacōn ihal not passe awei:
 til alle yis yis be don: heuene i
 erpe ihulen passe: but my word:

thulc not passe / trenh of pat day
or our. no mā woot neþ angel i
hevene. neþ pe lone. no but pe so-
ne / no but pe fadir / se ze. wake ze
þ pe ze / for ze wite not. whine ty
me is / for as a mā which goy fer
i pilgimage. leste his hys hous. þ zaf
to hys seruaitis power of eny we
rk / þ comande to pe porter. þ he
wake / þ fore wake ze / for ze wite
not whine pe lord of pe hous comey.
m pe euentid or i mpidmgt. or cocki
trougg. or mozeuigg. lest whine
he shal come lidenh. he fynde zon
slepige / forsope pat þ / sepe to 3.
þ sepe to alle wake ze. C. xij.
In sope pass þ pe fecce of
perf loones þ is wout
soudon. was after twey
dayes / and pe hyste þtis i l'bis
soutte. how per thulde holde hi is
gile i sle / sopeh per leide / not in
pe fecce day / lest þ poudetir / noyse
were maid i pe people / whine he
was at betanpe in pe hous of sy
moind leprous. i restide. anwōmā
cam hanpge a box of alabastir of
precious oymemet spikenard / i
whine pe box of alabastre was bro
bi. she heelde out on his heed / forso
pe þ were lime berige vmborih.
or heuph. wip ine hem luf i seyn
ge / wher to is vis loss of oymemet
mand. for vis oymemet myzte ha
ne be sold more vā pre hūdrd pes.
þ be zoni to pore me / þ pei groy
neden or gūstide azens hir / soþh
the leide / suffre ze hir / what be
ze heuy to hir / she hay wzoigt
good werk i me / for einmore ze
thulc hane pore me wip zon / i
whine ze wolen. ze moū do wel
to hem / forsope ze thulen not en

more hane me / she dite pat pat
she hadde / she bifore cam farto a
nopte my body into brygg / tren
h / seie to zon. wher eue vis gol
pel shal be pchid i al pe wozd. i
pat þ vis wōman hay don shal
be told i myte of hir. And iudas
stariot oon of pe te tisehe. wen
te to pe hyste prestis. þ he thul
de barape hi to he / whiche hee tige
lopede. i blyhte he to zyne hy mo
ney / i he souyte how he thulde by
trape hy couenably / and pe fustie
day of perf loones. whine per offer
den pass. pe discipulis seyen to hi
whidur wolt þ we gon i make
redy to pee. þ you ete pass. þ he
sendid tisehe of hys discipulis. i
seip to he / go ze ito pe citee. i an
berige a galon of watir. shal mee
te zon. siwe ze hi / i whidur esse he
entrip. seie ze to pe lord of pe hous.
þ pe manir seip. wher is my ful
fillig or etyng place. wher i shal
ete pass wip my discipulis. i he shal
shewe to zon a greet souppng pla
ce strewid. i pere make ze redy
to us i hys discipulis wente forp.
i came into pe citee. i fonde as he
hadde seid to he. i per maid redy.
pass / sopeh whine euentid was mid.
he cam wip tisehe / i whine per
saten at re mete i eeten. shū seide
trenh i seie to zon. þ oon of zon pat
etir wip me shal barape me / and
pei bigūnen farto be for i to seie
to hi. eñ bi hym hif. wher þ. whine
seide to hem / oon of tisehe. pat pat
ty pe hond wip me in pe place.
i sopeh māns lone goy. as it is
writū of hy / but wo to pat man.
by whom māns lone shal be by
trayed / it were good to hi. i felle

mā hadde not be born i whine per
eeten. i he took breed. i bleside i
brak. i zaf to he i seide take ze
vis is my body / i whine pe cuppe
was takū. he dite graces i zaf
to he / i alle driken wof / and he
seide to hem vis is my blood of
pe newe testamēt. whiche shal
be shed out for manpe / trenh
i seie to zon. for now i shal not
drinke of vis fruyt of wyne.
til into pat day whine i shal dr
ke it newe in pe rewine of god.
i whane pe ympe or herige wa
leid. per wente out ito pe hul of
olyues. i the seide to he / alle ze thū
len be staudid i me in vis myt.
for it is writū. i shal smyte pe
shepharde. i pe sheep of pe flor
thulen be dispartid / but after
þ i shal ryle agen. i shal go bifo
ze zon ito galile / forsope per se
ide to hi. youz alle thulc be stau
did. but not þ. i the seide to hi.
trenh i seie to pee. þ to day bifore
þ pe for in vis myt tisehe zyne
vous. pries þ shal denpe me.
and he spak more / youz it bihoue
me to dpe to gidge wip pee. i sh
al not denpe pee / sopeh in hys ma
ner. i alle leide / i per come into
a place. to whom pe name is geth
seman. i he seide to hys discipulis.
sitt ze her. ye while i prepe. i
he took petre i james i john w
hi. i bigan for to drede i to be a
noyed. i he seide to he / my soule
is forwful til to pe deþ / snūey
ne ze or abide ze her. wake ze w
me. i whine he hadde gon forp a
lūl. he felle don on pe erpe i prei
ete. i if it myzte be. ye hour thul
de passe fro hi. i he seide / abba

fadir. alle visis ben possible to
pee. ber ouer fro me vis cuppe
but not pat. i wole. but pat þ
you wolt be don / and he cam.
i fonde hem slepige. i he seide
to petre. symon slepist you.
myt test you not wake wip me
oon oon. wake ze i preie ze. þ
ze entre not ito tēptaciou. for
sope ye spyt is redy. but ye
flesch is lyk / and eftsoone he
goyng. priede. seynge pe sa
me word / and he turned agen
eftsoone. fonde hem slepige / for
her yzen were grened. i per kne
wen not what per thulde an
sibere to hi / and he cam pe ynd
te tyme. i seide to hem / slepe
ze now i reste ze it suffisip / pe
oon is comm. lo māns lone sh
al be betrayed into pe hondis of
synful men / ryle ze. go we. lo
he pat shal betraye me. is myt.
And zit pe while he spak. ju
das stariot oon of pe tisehe cam.
i wip hym moche cupang wip
siberd i stanes. sent fro pe
hyste prestis i drubis. i fro
pe eldre me / forsope hys traitō
hadde zoni to hi a tokene. sei
yng. whom eue. i shal felle.
he it is / holde ze hym. i lede ze
warh. i whine he cam. anoon
he comyge to hi seide. maistir.
and he felle hy. i per leide hon
dis on hi. i heelden hi / sopeh oō
of me stoungige aboute. drubz
out a siberd. i smoot pe seruait
of pe hyste preest. i fattede of
his eere. i the answerige. seide
to hem / as to a peef ze han gon
out wip siberd i stanes. for
to take me / day bi day i was

at 3ou & tange in ye temple: & ze
heele not me: but y^e scriptu-
ris be fulfilled: yane alle hile dis-
ciphis for sake hi: fledden: sope
h^e s^u zong man clopid w^y l^ynen
clon on ye bare: s^ubede h^ym. &
pei heele hi: and w^yne ye l^ynen
clon was for sake hi: he flez nakid
away fro he: and pei ledde ihu
to ye h^yeste p^rest: & alle ye p^rest-
tis & scribis & eldre me: camen
to gidre: forsope petre suete hi
after til to w^y p^rest: into ye halle
of ye h^yeste p^rest: and he sat
w^y pe mynstris: & w^yarmyde
h^ym at ye fier: forsope ye h^yeste
p^restis & al ye coucil: souzren
w^ytruelig azens ihu: y^e pei shul-
den y^eue hi to ye deap: neyr pei
fouren: for manye seiden fals wit-
nessig azens h^ym: & ye w^ytruelig
weren not couenable: & s^ume ry-
sige: baren fals w^ytruelig azens
h^ym & seide: for we han herd h^ym
seynge: y^e shal vundo yis temple
maad w^y hondis: & after ye yud-
de day: y^e shal bilde anoper not maad
w^y hondis: & ye w^ytruelig of he
was not couenable: & ye h^yeste
p^rest risye up into ye middel:
aride ihu & seide: answerist y^e not
on y^e yig to yo yigis: yat be put
azens y^e of y^ele: sope he was
fille: & answeride no yig: & seide
ne ye h^yeste p^rest: aride h^y: &
seide to hi: art y^e crist ye sone of
blessid god: sope ihu seide to hi:
y^e am: and ze shulen se manys so-
ne sittige on ye rythale of y^e d^e-
tu of god: & comyge i clondis
of heuene: forsope ye h^yeste p^r-
cest to rente his cloys & seide:
what 3it desuren we w^ytrueligis:

ze han herd blasfemye: what se-
mey to 3ou: whiche also cōdep-
neden hi: for to be gilti of deap:
& s^ume bigimen for to bi spete
hi & to hyde his face: & s^ume hi
w^y bokatis: & seie to hi: & fene
pon: and ye mynstris beete hi w^y
stokis or buffatis: & whiche pe-
tre was in ye halle byneye: oon
of ye hand maydens of ye h^yeste
p^rest cam: and w^yhane she had
de seyn petre w^yarmyge hi: she
biholdige hi seide: & pou w^yer ihu
of nazareth: and he denpde
seynge: neyr y^e woot: neyr y^e kno-
we: what pou seist: & he wente
w^youtfor bfore ye halle: & aoud
ye col creis: & seide: forsope w^yhane
anop hand mayde hadde seyn hi:
she bigan for to sepe to me stou-
dige aboute: y^e yis is of he: &
he estloone denpde: & after al-
til estloone pei pat stode w^y se-
de to petre: verily pou art of hem:
for whi & pou art of galile: sope he
bigan to curse & swere: for y^e
knowe not yis ma who ze seyn:
and aoud estloones ye col creis:
& petre byoynte on ye word yat
he hadde seid to hi: bfore ye col
crose twyes: y^enes pou shak de
mye me: & he bigan for to wepe:

Ad aoudon in / **C. 16.**
ye moztetpde ye h^yeste
p^restis makige coucil to
ye eldre me & scribis & al ye cou-
cil: bouiden ihu & ledde & broo-
ken to pilat: & pilat aride h^ym
art y^e king of ierwis: and ihu
answerige: seide to hi: pou seist
& ye h^yeste p^restis accuside h^ym
in many yigis: pilat forsope est-
loone aride hi & seide: answerist

pon not on y^e yig: seest pou in
how many yigis: pei accusen y^e:
forsope he more answeride no
yig: so y^e pilat w^yndide: forsope
bi ye seeste day he was wont to
leue to he of me boudu: whom
euer pei aride: forsope oon was
yat was seid barabas: yat was
boudu w^y me of dissenciou: yat
hadde don m^yllantre i seducio:
y^e is debate i citee: and whiche ye
cipany hadde chosed: he bigan for
to p^rest: as he euermore dide to he
sope pilat answeride to he & sei-
de: wolen ze y^e leue to 3ou ye kig
of ierwis: for he wiste: y^e ye h^yeste
p^restis hadde takn hi by enye: for
sope ye bishopis stude ye cipa-
ny of peple: y^e more he shulde
leue to he barabas: forsope estlo-
ne pilat answerige: seide to hem:
what y^efore wolen ze: y^e shal do to
ye kig of ierwis: and pei estloone
crieten: crucifie hi: or put hi on
ye cross: forsope pilat seide to hem:
sope whi of y^enel hay he don:
and pei cryede more: crucifie hi:
sope pilat w^yllige for to do y^enot:
to ye peple: lette to hem barabas:
& brook to hem ihu betu w^y do-
gis: y^e he shulde be crucified: for
sope knyztis ledde hi w^y me: i
to ye porche of ye moothalle: and
pei clepide to gidre al ye cipany
of knyztis: & clopid hi w^y p^rest:
& pei foldige a croune of yornes:
puttde on h^y: and pei bigimen
for to greete hi: & seiden: heil y^e
king of ierwis: & pei han smyte
his heed w^y a reede: & bi spatten
hi: and pei knelige: w^yorthpde
hi: & after y^e pei hadde storned hi:
pei yudopide hi fro sp^rur: & do

viden hi w^y hile cloys: & ledde
out h^ym: to **shulde** crucifie
hi: and pei compellide a ma yat
passide ye weye: yat cam fro ye
tou symoud of syrenen ye sadn:
of alilandre & of ruse to ber his
cross: and pei ledde h^y into a place
golgatha: y^e is to seie ye place of cal-
uerie: & pei zanen to hi to drynke w^y
meddled w^y myrr: & he took not: &
ye pei crucified hi: ad departiden
his cloys & kessen lott on po w^yho
shulde take what: and it was ye
yudde our: & pei crucified hi: & ye
tyde of his case was w^yrit: k^yng
of ierwis: & pei crucified w^y h^ym:
away penes: oon at ye rythale: &
oon at his lefthale: and ye scriptur
was fulfilled yat seip: & he is ordey-
ned w^y wickid me: and as pei
passide fory: pei blasfemyde h^ym:
mouyge her heedis: & seynge: wape
pou yat distriet ye temple of god:
& in yre dapes: bildist it agen: come a-
down fro ye cross: & make y^e self
sark: also ye h^yeste p^restis: bouy-
den hi ech to opir w^y ye scribis
& seide: he made ope men sark: he
may not saue hi self: & k^yng of
yrael come don now fro ye cross:
y^e we seen: & beleue: and pei yat
weren crucified w^y h^y: dispiled
hi: & w^yhane ye fyrte our was come:
derfnessis weren maad on al ye er-
pe: til into ye nymppe our: and in
ye nymppe our: he criete w^y a
greet wops: & seide: heloy: heloy:
lammabany: y^e is to seie: my god:
my god: whi hast pou forsakn me:
and s^ume of me yat stode abou-
te: herten & seide: lo he clep^y he
he: & oon ran & fillde a spoige
w^y ye vynesgre: & puttde it a

boute to a reede. & iak to hi dryke
 & seide. Suffer ze se we if helpe
 come for to do hy doni and ihe
 iak out a greet cry. & diede. &
 ye veil of ye temple was rent
 a tivo. fro ye hizeite to hynepe
 but ye centurien pat stood for
 azens hy. pat he so cryge hadde
 died. & seide. verih pis ma was
 godis sone. And pere were allo
 wyme. biholdige fro a fer. a mog
 whiche was mari maudeleyn. &
 marie ye modir of james ye les
 se & of jolep. & of salome. & whiche
 ihe was in gahle. ye solewiden
 hy. & ministrere to hym. & many
 overe wimen. pat came up to
 gidre wip hym to ierhu. and iha
 euentpd was come. for it was ye
 euentpd. which is bifore ye sabat.
 joleph of armath ye noble decu
 rion cam. And he. a bood ye reu
 me of god. & booldly he entride
 to pilat. & atide ye body of ihi.
 but pilat wondride. if he wer
 now ded. and whiche ye centurio
 was deyd. he orde hy if he we
 re ded. and whiche he knew of
 ye centurion. he grantide ye
 body of ihi to joleph. & joleph
 bouzte linnen droy. & took hym
 dou. & wlaipide in ye linnen droy.
 & leide hi in a sepulch. pat was
 heitw of a stoon. & walewide a
 stoon to ye dore of ye sepulchre.
 and mari maudeleyn & marie
 of joleph. bihaelt wher he w

A was leyd. // C^m xvi.
 And whiche ye labat was
 passid. marie maudeleyn.
 & marie of james & salome bouz
 ten swete sinellige opnemets
 to come & to anoynte ihi. & ful

cerly in con of ye woke dapes. ye
 came to ye sepulch. whiche ye li
 ne was rili. & ye seiden to gidre
 who ihal moue awei to us ye
 ston. fro ye dore of ye sepulchre.
 & ye bihaelt & ozen ye stoon wale
 wid awei. for it was ful greet. &
 ye zeden into ye sepulchre. & spren
 azonghyng. hild wip a whit stole.
 luttige at ye ruzthalf. & ye were
 a feerd. which ser to hem. nyle
 ze drede. ze seken ihi of nashareth
 crucified. he is rili. he is not her.
 lo ye place wher ye leide hym.
 but go ze. & seie ze to hile discipis
 & to pete. p^r he ihal go bifore.
 into gahle. pere ze ihiulen se hi.
 as he seide to zoi. and ye zeden
 out. & fleden fro ye sepulch. for
 drede. & qualyng. hadde aseyld
 he. & to no ma ye leide ony wip
 for ye dzedden. & ihe roos erly
 ye furste day of ye woke. & appe
 ride first to mari maudeleyn fro
 who he hadde cast out seuen de
 uelis. and she zede & tolde to hem
 p^r hadde ben wip hi whiche were
 weplige & wepige. and ye heeri
 ge p^r he spuede. & was seyn of hyr
 bileueten not. but after yed p^rgis
 whiche tweyne of hem wandiden.
 he was aheuid in anop liknesse
 to hem goynge into aton. & ye
 zeden & teelden to ye owere. & ney
 ye bileuede to hem. but at ye las
 te whiche ye enleuene discipis sa
 ten at ye mete. ihe apperide to
 hem. & reprouede ye onbileue
 of hem. & ye haednesse of herte.
 for ye bileueden not to he. pat
 hadden seyn pat he was rili fro
 deey. & he seide to he. go ze into
 al ye world. & preche ye gospel

to ech creature. who pat bileuey. &
 is baptisid. ihal be laif. but he y
 bileuey not. ihal be dapned. and
 ye te tokenes ihiulen sulte hem
 pat bileuey in my name. ye ihi
 nlen caste out fendis. ye ihiule
 speke wip newe tigris. ye ihiule
 do awei serpents. & if ye drem
 ken ony venym. it ihal not noye
 hem. ye ihiulen sette her hondis
 on eyke me. & ye ihiule were ho
 ole. & ye lord ihi. was takn up to he
 uene. and he sittip on ye ruzthalf
 of god. & ye zeden forp & prechide
 enerywhere. for ye lord wzongte
 wip he & confermide ye word w
 signes folowynge. **Here endip
 ye gospel of mark. & bigynney
 ye prolog of ye gospel of luk**

Luk was aman of syrie bi na
 zoi. & of antioche. & was ale
 che in craft. & adisciple of apostlis
 afterward he suete poul til to his
 endyng. & sermide god. & was wip
 oute greet syne. for ney he hadde
 a wip in ony tyme. ney chldren.
 and he diede in bithymie at lxxij
 zeer. & was ful of ye hooly gost. &
 whiche gospels weren writn bi ma
 then i Judee. & bi mark i ytahe.
 luk bi atryng of ye hooly gost. wz
 oot pis gospel. in ye citrees of a
 caye. ye moothe nete of his theil
 was pis. pat ye manhed of cit ihi
 ulde be opyn to feyful greekis. bi
 alle profetis p^r god ihiulde come i
 fleuth. p^r is to ltheue by alle profet
 tis. p^r crist ihiulde be god & man to
 gidre. lest cden greekis token hee
 de to ye fablis of iewis. & were hol
 diu midesir. alcone of moyses lare.
 & luk tranelide lest eyn yei were

disleyned bi fablis of eretikus. &
 foned stelpis. & felden awei fro
 treure. pis luk bigynney at ye con
 cepcion & nativite of iohu baptisid.
 & distryney ye nativite & baptyim
 & pching of cit. & his deey & rizing
 azen & allencion. **Jerom i his p
 loge on luk. ser. pleynt pis scien
 ce. & nob bigynney ye gospel. C^m p.**

In ye dapes of e
 roude kyng of ju
 dee y was a preest.
 sacarie bi name.
 of ye sort of abia
 & his wip was of ye
 douztris of aron. & hyr name was
 elizabeth. and bove were nist bifo
 re god. goynge in alle ye mande
 metis & iustifyingis of ye lord. w
 onte pleynt. and yei hadden no
 chld. for elizabeth was bareyne.
 & bove were of greet age in her dai
 es. & it bifel pat whiche sacarie
 ihiulde do ye office of preesthod i
 ye ordre of his cours to fore god
 after ye custod of ye preesthod. he we
 te forp bi lot. & entride into ye te
 ple to eurenfen. & al ye mltitute of ye
 peple was wipoute forp. & prie
 de in ye oin of eceufyng. and an
 angel of ye lord. apperide to hy. &
 stood on ye ruzthalf of ye anter of
 incense. & sacarie sernge was a
 fraped. & diede fel vpon hym. & ye
 angel seide to hy. sacarie diede p^r
 not. for pi preier is herd. & eliza
 beth pi wip ihal bere to pee a
 sone. & his name ihal be clepid
 john. and ioye & gladyng. ihal be
 to pee. & manye ihiulen have ioye
 in his nativite. for he ihal be gr
 eet bifore ye lord. & he ihal not
 drynke wyn ne sydir. & he ihal

be fulfilled wip ye holy goot. 3it
of his modir wombe. & he shal co
uerter many of ye children of y
rael: to her lord god. & he shal go
bifore hi in ye spirit & vertu of
help. & he shal turne ye hertis
of ye fadris to ye sonis. & men
out of bileue: to ye prudence of
milt me to make redi a parfyt
peple to ye lord. And zacarie sei
de to ye angel wherof shal y wi
te pis: for y am old. & my wyf har
go fer in hir dapes: and ye angel
answeride & seiðe to hi: for y am
gabriel: yat stonde nyz bifore
god: & y am sent to pee: to speke
& to enygelise to pee. yele ym
gis: and lo pon shalt bedoube &
pon shalt not moue speke til i
to ye day in which yele pigis sh
ulen be don: for pon hast not bile
ued to my wordis. whiche shule
be fulfilled in her tyme: and ye
peple was abidige zacari: & pei
woundide y he tariete in ye teple
and he zete out & myzte not speke
to hem: & pei knewen y he hadde
seyn a vision in ye temple: & he
bekenyde to hem & he diuellite stil
le doube. And it was don: whne
ye dapes of his office were fulfil
id: he wente into his hous: and
after yis dapes Elizabeth his
wyf conceyuede: & hidde hir fyue
moneys & seiðe: for lo ye lord dide
to me: in ye dapes in whiche he
biheeld to take away my reprof
a mog me. But i ye sixte moneye
ye angel gabriel was sent fro god:
into a cite of galile: whos name
was nazareth: to a mayde wed
did to a ma: whos name was jo
seph: of ye hous of dauid: & ye na

me of ye mayden was marie: &
ye angel entride to hir: & seiðe:
heil ful of grace ye lord be wip y:
blessid be pon amog wyemen: and
whane she hadde herd she was
troublid in his word: & pouzte wh
maner salitacioū pis was: & ye
angel seiðe to hir: ne drede not y
marie: for y hast found grace a
mentis god: lo pon shalt conceyue
in wombe: & shalt be a sone: &
pon shalt clepe his name ihu: pis
shal be greet: & he shal be clepid
ye sone of ye hyeste: and ye lord
god shal yue to hi: ye seete of da
uid his fadir: & he shal regne in
ye hous of iacob wyouten ende:
and of his reigne: shal be noon
ende: & marie seiðe to ye angel on
what man shal pis pig be don:
for y knowe not man: & ye an
gel answeride & seiðe to hir: ye hoo
ly goot shal come fro aboue to
pee: & ye vertu of ye hyeste shal
on shadoube pee: & yele y holy pig
yat shal be born of pee: shal be
clepid ye sone of god: & lo Chza
beth y colyn: & she also hap con
ceyued a sone in hir eelde: & pis
moneye is ye sixte to hir y is
clepid bareyn: for euery word sh
al not be impossible anentis god:
and marie seiðe: lo ye handmay
de of ye lord: be it don to me aft
er word: and ye angel departide
fro hir. And marie roos up i
yodapes & wente wip haste to
ye moitaynes to a cite of iu
dee: & she entride into ye hous
of zacarie: & grette Elizabeth:
& it was don as Elizabeth her
de ye salitacioū of marie: ye
yong child in hir wombe gladi

and Elizabeth was fulfilled wip
ye holy goot: & criede wip a greet
vois & seyde: blessid be pon am
og wyemen: & blessid be ye fr
uit of y wombe: & wherof is y
pig to me: y ye modir of my
lord come to me: for lo as ye vois
of y salitacioū was maid i my
eiris: ye yonge child gladi m
ioye in my wombe: & blessid be
pon yat hast bileued: for pilke y
gis yat ben seið of ye lord to pee
shulen be parfyth don: & marie
seiðe: oye wile magnifie ye lord:
& my spirit hap gladi: in god
my heelp: for he hap biholden ye
mekenesse of his handmayden:
for lo of yis: alle generacioū sh
len seiðe yat y am blessid: for he
yat is myzte har don to me gre
te pigis: & his name is holy: &
his mercy is fro kynrede into
kynredis: to me yat dreden hym:
he made myzt in his arm: he sta
teride proude me wip ye poust
of his herte: he sette don myzte
men fro seete: & enhaucide meke
me: he hap fulfilled hugri me w
goodis: & he hap lest ryche men
woide: he haunge myzte of his m
cy: took yrael his child as he hap
spokū to ouir fadris: to abrahā
& to his seed into worldis: and ma
rie diuellite wip hir as it were
ye moneys: & turnete azen to
hir hous: but ye tyme of berige
child was fulfilled to elizabeth:
& she bar a sone: & ye nezeboris &
colyns of hir herde: y ye lord had
de magnified his merci wip hir:
& pei praiside hi: and it was don
in ye erztey day pei came to cir
cūside ye child: & pei clepid hi

zacarie bi ye name of his fadir:
and his modir answeride & seiðe:
nay: but he shal be clepid john:
& pei seiden to hir: for no ma is i
y kynrede: y is clepid yis name:
& ye bekenede to his fadir: what
he wolte y he wet clepid: & he ar
yunge a poyntel: wroot leyunge:
john is his name: & alle me won
drude: & anon his moir was o
penyd: and his tūge: & he spak:
& blessid god: & drete was maid
on alle her nezeboris: & alle yis
wordis were pūphulshid on alle
ye moitayns of iudee: & alle men
yat herden pūttiden in her herte:
& seiden what man child shal yis
be: for ye hond of ye lord was
wip hi: and zacarie his fadir:
was fulfilled wip ye holy goot:
& profeteide & seiðe: blessid be ye
lord god of yrael: for he hap vili
ted & maid redēcioū of his peple:
and he hap rerid to us an horn of
heelp: in ye hous of dauid: his ch
ild: as he spak by ye moir of his
hooly profetis: yat were fro ye
world: heelp fro ouir eneymes:
& fro ye hond of alle me yat hati
den us: to do mercy wip ouir fads:
& to hane myzte of his hooly testa
mēt: ye greet oye yat he siboor to
abrahā ouir fadir: to yue hi sūf
to us: yat we wyoute drete deli
ed fro ye hond of ouir eneymes:
serue to hi: in hooly nisse & ryt wal
nisse bifore hym: in alle oure da
yes: and pon child shalt be clepid
ye pfete of ye hyeste: for pon sh
alt go bifore ye face of ye lord to
make redy his weyes: to yue sci
ence of heelp to his peple: into
rēmythioū of her fyue: & y

by pe unwardnesse of pe metra of
oure god: in pe which he forgyng
ge vp fro an hy. hay. vyltred. va
to yme lye to hem pat sitte in derc
neithis: & in shadowe of deef / to
dresse oure feet: into pe wepe
of pees: & pe child werite: and
was confortid in spirit: & was
in desert placis. til to pe day of
his thewys to yrael. **C. 11.**

And it was don in yd day
es a mandement weute
out fro pe empero: pat
al pe world shulde be distrined
his furthe distring was maad
of cryn iustice of surye: & alle
me wenten to make pfeithon:
ech into his owne cite: & joseph
wente vp fro galile fro pe cite
nazareth. into judee into a ci
te of daup pat is clepid bethle
em. for pat he was of pe hous &
of pe meyne of daup: pat he sh
ulte knowleche wy marie his
wyf pat weddid to hy: & was gre
et wy child: & it was don while
pei weren per: pe dayes weren
fulfillid y she shulde bere child:
and she bar hir furthe born sone:
& wlapide hi in clopis: & leyde
him i a crache. for y was no pla
ce to hy in no chaubir. **And** sh
cepherdis were in pe same cil
tre. wakynge & kepynge pe waach
of pe nygt on her flot: & lo pe an
gel of pe lord stood bysidis hem:
& pe clerenesse of god shynede
aboute hem. & pei dzedden wy
greet drete: & pe angel seide to
he: nyle ze drete: for lo y preche
to zon. a greet ioye. pat shal be
to al peple: for a sauynour is
born of y. to day to zon: y is et

pe lord in pe cite of daup: and
pis is a tokene to zon: ze shu
len fynde azong child wlapid i
clopis: & leyde in a crache: & fide
ly per was maad wy pe angel a
militude of heuenly knyghod: he
ryunge god & seynge glorie be in
pe hysse ygis to god: & in erpe
pees be to me of good wille: & it
was don. as pe angelis passiden
a wey fro hem in to heuene: pe she
pardis spaken to gidre & seiden
go we ouer to bethlem: & se we
pis word pat is maad. which pe lord
hay maad & thewid to us: & pei
hyrynge came: & fouden marie
& joseph: & pe zong child leid i a
crache: & pei seynge knewen of
pe word pat was leid to he of pis
child: and alle me pat herde won
driden: & of pes ygis y weren
leid to hem of pe shepardis: but
marie kepte alle pes wordis:
berynge to gidre in hir herte:
& pe shepardis turneden agen
glorifynge & herynge god in
alle ygis y pei hadden herd &
seyn: as it was leid to hem. **And**
ast y pe ente dayes were en
did. y pe child shulde be circisi
did: his name was clepid ihu:
which was clepid of pe angel:
bifore y he was conseynd i wom
be. **And** ast y pe dayes of pe
purgacioil of marie weren
fulfillid ast moyses lawe: pei
tooken hi into ierlm to offere hi
to pe lord. as it is writen in pe
lawe of pe lord: for enery male
kynte apenynge pe wombe. sh
al be clepid hoohy to pe lord: &
y pei shynen zyne an offryng.
ast y it is leid in pe lawe of pe

lord. a peyre of turturis. or twey
culle briddis: and lo ama was
in ierlm. whos name was syme
on: & pis ma was nist & vertu
ous. & abood re coufort of yrael:
& pe hoohy goft was i hy: & he
hadde takn an answer of pe ho
ly goft. y he shulde not se deef:
but he lan first pe est of pe
lord: & he cam in spirit ito pe te
ple: and whne his fadir & modir
ledde pe child ihu to do astir pe
custom of pe lawe for hy: he took
hi into his armes. & he blestide
god & seide: lord now you leenest
y seruait: ast y word i pees:
for my yzen han seyn ym heche
which you hast maad redy: by
fore pe face of alle pepis: lyt
to pe thewys of heren me: &
glorie of y peple yrael: & his fa
dir & his modir weren wondri
ge. on pes ygis y were leid of
hi: & symeon blestide he: & seide
to marie his modir: lo pis is sett
into re fallig: do i into re ry
lyg: agen of many me i yrael:
& into a tokene to who it shal
be agenleid: & siberd shal palle
yuz ym olbue soule: y pe pouz
tis be thewid of many hertis: &
ama was a pfelesse re dougtr of
famel of pe lynage of aser: and
she hadde gon for y many dayes:
& hadde lpyed wy hir hosebonde:
seuen zeer fro hir maytehod: &
pis was a widowe: to four dre
zeer & soue: & she departide not
fro pe temple: but seruete to god
nygt & day. in fastigis & preie
ris: & pis cam upon he in vilke
our: & knowlechte to pe lord &
spak of hi to alle y abide pe re

depcioil of yrael: & as pei hadde
ful don alle ygis. astir pe lawe
of pe lord: pei turnete agen ito
galile. into her cite nazareth: &
pe child was & was confortid ful
of wysdom: & pe grace of god was
in hi: & his fadir & modir wenten
ech zeer into ierlm: in pe solepne
day of pass: & whne ihu was twel
ue zeer old: pei wente up to ierlm.
astir pe custo of pe feeste day: &
whne pe dayes were don pei tur
nete agen: & pe child abood i ierlm.
& his fadir & modir knewe it not:
for pei getlige pat he hadde be
in pe felouship came a dayes
nurney & souzten hy among his
cousins & his knowleche: and wha
ne pei fouden hi not: pei turnete
agen ito ierlm: & souzten hi: & it bi
fel y astir pe yride day: pei fou
den hi in pe temple: sittige in pe
myddil of pe doctours. heerige
hem & arynge he: & alle me pat
herden hym: wondrit on pe pru
dence & pe answeris of hym: and
pei hyen & wondrite: & his modir
seide to hi: sone what hast you do
to us pis: lo pi fadir & y souwyge:
han souyt pee: & he seide to hem:
what is it y se souyte me: wilt
ze not y in po ygis. pat ben of
my fadir: it bihouey me to be:
and pei vnderstode not pe word:
which he spak to he: & he cam don
wy hem. & cam to nazareth: &
was suget to he: and his modir
kept to gidre alle pese wordis.
& bar hem i hir herte: & ihu pfi
tete in wysdo. age. & grace: ane
tis god & me. **C. 11.**
In pe fyftenpe zeer of
pe empire. of tyberie

ye empour. whne pilat of poince
gouernede iudee. & eroude was
prynce of galile. & filip his bro
pir was prynce of iurie & of
pe cūtre of tracon. & hlanpe ws
pnce of abilyn vndir pe pnces
of pretis anas & cayfas. pe wo
rd of pe lord was maid on john pe
sone of lacarie in deslert. & he cam
into al pe cūtre of iordan. and
prechte baptyim of penance i
to remysshon of synes as it
is writū in pe booke of pe wordi
of hape pe profete. ye vois of
a crier in deslert. make ze redy
pe weye of pe lord. make ze his
papis ryt. ech valey shal be
fulfillid. & euery hyl & hyl hyl
shal be maid low. and shewid
pigns shule be into drellid pigns.
& shap pe pigns in to pleyn wey
es. & euery fleyth shal se pe hee
pe of god. perfore he seide to pe
peple which wente out to be bap
tyid of hym. kndlyngis of ed
dus. who shewide to zoi. to
fle fro pe wyappe to conyge.
perfore do ze worp fruytis of
penance. & bigyne ze not to seye.
we han a fadir abrahā. for i leie
to zoi. & god is myty to reyle of
pes stoues pe sones of abrahā.
& now an ax is lett to pe roote
of pe tre. and pfore euery tre
pat maky no good fruyt shal
be butt don. & shal be cast into
pe fier. and pe peple axide hym.
& seiden. what pane shule we do.
he answereide. & seide to hem. he
pat hay tvey cootis. zyne to hi
pat hay noo. & he pat hay metis.
do in hē maner. & purplicas ca
me to be baptid. & pei seiden

to hi. man. what shule we do.
and he seide to hem. do ze no pig
more pan y. pat is ordeyned to
zoi. and kntis axide hym. & se
iden. what shulen also we do. &
he seide to hem. lymte ze wrong
fully no mā. ney make fall ca
lunge. & be ze apayed wip zoi.
soudis. Whne al pe peple ges
lide. & alle mē poynte in her her
tis of john. lest panetut he we
re cft. john answereide & seide
to alle mē. i baptyse zoi wip
but stronger. & i shal come af
tir me. of who i am not worp to
vnhpnde pe lace of his shoon. he
shal baptyse zoi in pe hooky goft
& fier. whos wnewyng toel in
his hond. & he shal purge his floor
of corn. & shal gedre pe whete i
to his berue. but pe chafis he
shal bzene. wip fier vnquench
able. & many opir pigns also he
apak & prechte to pe peple. But
eroude the track. whne he was
blamyd of iohm for erodias pe
wyf of his brof. & for alle pe y
nels pat eroudide. encreside
pis ouer alle. & shritte iohm i pson.
& it was don whane al pe peple
was baptid. & whne ihu was
baptid & preiede. heuene was
openyd. & pe hooky goft cam don
in bodily lykenesse. as adouise on
hi. & a vois was maid fro heuene.
you art my derelwyge sone. in
pee it hay pleid to me. & ihu hi
silt was bigynnyng as of yrt
ty zeer. pat he was gesid pe so
ne of ioseph. which was of hely.
which was of matath. which was
of lemy. which was of melch. &
was of jamne. pat was of ioseph.

pat was of matathe. & was of a
mos. & was of namū. & was of
heli. & was of nagge. & was of
matath. & was of matath. & was
of semei. & was of ioseph. & was
of hida. & was of iohana. & was
was of resa. & was of sorobabel.
& was of salatuel. & was of nery.
& was of melch. & was of addy.
& was of colan. & was of ehuadan.
& was of her. & was of ihu.
& was of cleasat. & was of jori.
& was of mathath. & was of lemy.
& was of symeo. & was of hida.
& was of ioseph. & was of jona.
& was of elyachym. & was of melca.
& was of mena. & was of mathatha.
& was of nathan. & was of dany.
& was of jesse. & was of obeth.
& was of doz. & was of salmon.
& was of nalon. & was of aminadab.
& was of aram. & was of elrom.
& was of sines. & was of iudas.
& was of iacob. & was of flanc.
& was of abrahā. & was of tare.
& was of nator. & was of seruth.
& was of agam. & was of phaleth.
& was of heber. & was of sale.
& was of chaynan. & was of arfayad.
& was of sem. & was of noe.
& was of lameth. & was of matu.
sale. & was of enok. & was of jarech.
& was of malahel. & was of caynan.
& was of enos. & was of lech. & was
was of adam. & was of god. C. m.
Ald ihu ful of pe hooky go
ft. tinnede azen fro ior
dan. and was led bi pe spi
rit into deslert. forty dayes. &
was temptid of pe deucl. & eet
no pig in po dayes. & whne vo
dayes were endid. he hūgride.
& pe deucl seide to hi. if you art

godis sone. seye to pis stoon. p
it be maid bread. & ihc answereide
to hi. it is writū. yama lyuey
not in bread aloone. but i eny
word of god. And pe deucl ladde
hym to an hyl. & shewide to
hym alle pe reuines of pe wor
ld in amomet of tyme. & seide to
hi. i shal zyne to pee al pis po
wer. & pe glorie of hem. for to me
pei ben zoi. & to whom i wole.
i zyne he pfore if you falle down
& worthipe bifore me. alle pui
gis shulen be yue. & ihc answere
ride. & seide to hi. it is writū.
shalt worthipe pi lord god. & to
hi aloone you shalt serue. & he
lodde hi into iertū. & sette hi on
pe pynde of pe temple. & seide
to hi. if you art goddis sone. sen
de pi self fro heups don. for it is
writū. for he hay comaūdid to
his aūgels of pee. & rei kepe pee
in alle pi weyes. and y rei shule
take pee in hondis. lest perane
tur. you hūte pi foot at a stoon.
& ihc answereide & seide to hi. it
is seid. you shalt not tepte pi
lord god. & whne euery teptaci
on was endid. pe fend wente a
wey fro hi for a tyme. & ihc tur
nede azen in pe vertu of pe spi
rit into galile. & pe fame wente
for of hi puz al pe cūtre. & he
tauzte in pe synagogis of hem.
& was magnified of alle mē. &
he cam to nazareth. wher he
was noullid. & entride after
his custō in pe sabat day ito a sy
nagoge. & roos to rede. & pe booke
of hape pe pfete was takū to
hym. & as he turnyde pe booke. he
foud a place where it was writū.

pe spirit of pe lord on me / for
which pig he anoyntide me: he
seute me to preche to poze me
to heele contrit me in herte. & to
preche remission to prisoneris: &
eye to blinde me: & to deliuer
hu me into remission. to preche pe
zeer of pe lord pleisur. & pe day of
zeldyng: azen / & whine he hadde clo
sid pe book: he gaf azen to pe wy
mre: & sat / and pe yren of alle
me in pe synagoge: weren bihol
dige into hy: & he began to sepe
to he: for in pis day pis scriptur
is fulfilled in zoure eeris: & alle
me iane wtruellig to hy: & won
driden in pe wordis of grace y
came forp of his mouy: & pei sei
den / wher yu pis is not pe sone
of ioseph: & he seide to he / sope
ze shulen sepe to me pis libnesse:
leche heele yu self: pe farisees sei
den to ihu / how grete pigis han
we herd don in casarnai: do you
also here in yu citre: & he seide / tr
euly / I sepe to you: p no pfete is
reliefued in his owne citre: i tren
pe / I seie to you pat many wido
wis were in pe dapes of elye pe
pfete in uzel: whine heuene ws
clolid pre zeer & hxe moneyis.
whine greet hngur was maid in
al pe erpe: & to noon of hem was
elie seut: but to sarepta of sy
don to a widowe: & many meles
were in yrael: vudirelysee pe
pfete: & noon of he was clolid:
but naman of syre: & alle i pe
synagoge heerige res pigis:
weren fillid wip wyappe: & pei
rise up & drone hi out wyonte
pe citre: & leden hy to pe top of
pe hil on which her citre was

bildid: to caste hi dou: but the pas
side & wente yur: pe myddel of
hem. And camdon into casar
nai a citre of galile: & pei he
tanze he in sabatis: & pei were
a stouped in his techyng: for his
word was in power: and in per
synagoge was a man harynge
an vncleue tend: & he criede wy
greet vois: & seide / guffe: what
to us & to pee ihu of nazareth:
art p comm to leele us: / I know
leche y you art pe hooly of god:
& ille blamyde hy: & seide / were do
ub: & go out fro hy: & whine pe fed
hadde cast hi forp into pe myddel:
he wente away fro hy: & he noy
ete hyu no pig: & drede was maid
in alle me: & pei spaken to gidre
& seide / what is pis word for i po
wer & vertu he comandit to vn
clene spiritis: & pei goen out:
& pe fame was pruplyshid of hy:
into ech place of pe citre: & ille
roos up fro pe synagoge & en
tride into pe hous of symonit:
& pe modur of symonidis wyf:
was holdu wip grete feuers:
& pei preiede hi for hy: & ille stod
ouer hy: & comandide to pe fei:
& it leste hy: & anoo she roos
up & seruete he: & whine pe su
ne wente dou: alle y hadde spe
me wip dyuerse langours ladde
hem to hi: & he sette his hondis
on ech by he self: & heelde hem:
& sendis wente out fro manye:
& cryede & seide / for you art pe
sone of god: & he blamyde & out
fride hem not to speke: for pei
wikte hy: he was cit: and whine
pe day was come. he zede out &
wente into a desert place: & pe

pepl souzte hi: & pei came to hy:
& pei heelden hi: & he shulde not
go away fro hem: to which he
he seide / for allo to opur citees: it
bihoney me to preche pe kyngdo
of god: for per fore i am sent: &
he prechide in pe synagogyis of
galile. **And it was don** whane pe pe
ple came faste to ihu:
to heere pe word of god: he stod
bydis pe pool of genasareth: &
syz two bootis stondige bydis pe
pool: and pe fyllheris were gon
don: & waitsheden her nettis:
& he wente up into a boot
pat was symonidis: & preie
de hy to lede it altyl fro pe lond:
& he sat & tanze pe peple out
of pe boot: & as he ceaside to spe
ke: he seide to symonit / seide you
into deppe: & slake zour nettis
to take fysh: & symonit answe
ride & seide to hy / comandour: we
trauelide al pe nyzt: & taken no
pig: but in yu word: / I shal sepe
out pe nett: & whine pei hadden
do pis pig: pei cloliden to gidre
a greet mltitude of fyshes: &
her net was brokun: & pei beke
myde to felowis pat were in an
opur boot: & pei shulden come &
helpe hem: & pei came & fillide
boye bootis. so y pei weren al
most drenchid: & whane symonit
petre his pis pig: he felde dou
to & pe knees of ihu & seide /
lord: go fro me: for i am a
synful ma: for he was on ech
syde a stouped: & alle y were
wip hy in pe takyng of fysh:
whiche pei token: sopeh i hyt
man james & john pe sones

of zebede: pat were felowis of
symonit petre: and ille seide to
symonit / myle you drede: now
fro pis tyme y shalt take men:
& whine pe bootis weren ledd up
to pe lond: pei leste alle pigis: &
pei sueten hy. **And it was don**
whine he was in oon of pe citees:
loama ful of lepre: & seynge ihu
felde dou on his face: & preiete
hi & seide / lord if you wolt: you
maynt make me clene: & ille he
eld forp his hond & touchide hym
& seide / I wolt: be you maid clene:
and anoo pe lepre passide a wey
fro hym: & ille comandide to hy:
y shulde sepe to no ma: but
go ltheve y pee to a preett: and
offre for yu clenhyg: as moyses
bad into wtruellig to he: & pe
word walkide aboute pe moze
of hym: & moche peple came to
gidre: to heere: & to be heclid of
her syknessis: & he wente to de
sert: & preyede: & it was don in
don of pe dapes. he sat & tanze:
& y weren farisees sittige & doc
tours of pe lawe: pat came of
ech castel of galile: & of iude & of
ierlm: & pe vertu of pe lord was:
to heele syke me: & lo me bare
in a bed: anoo pat was syk i pe
pallie: & pei souzte to ber hy
yn: & sette bifore hy: & pei fon
den not in what partie pei sh
ulden bere hy yn: for pe peple:
wente on pe roof: & by pe stlat
tis pei lecten hi dou wip pe bed:
to pe myddel bifore ihu: & whine
ihu syz pe fery of he: he seide /
ma: y synes beu forzouni to
pee: & pe strabis & farisees bi
gumen to penke: **And seynge**

who is his pat speke clafte
myes: who may foryne hines:
but god alone: & as the fuchs
re pouzts of hem: he answere
te & seide to hem: what venken
ze yuele pigis i zome hertis:
what is hizer to sepe: hines be
forzoum to pee: or to sepe ryle
up & walke: but ze wite y
mans lone hap pouer i erpe
to foryne spues: he seide to
pe syl man in paleste: i seie
to pee: ryle up: take ybed &
go into ym hous: & anon he ro
os up bfore he & toke pe bed in
whiche he lay: & wente into his
hous: & magnified god: & greet
wonder took alle: & pei magni
fiede god: & pei weren fulfillid
wip greet drede: & seide for we
han seyn merueilouse pigis to
day: And after pes pigis is
wente out & sez a puplican le
up by name: sitige at pe tol bo
re: & he seide to hi: sue you me
fwhine he hadde lest alle pigis:
he roos up & huede hi: & leup ma
de to hi a greet feeite in his ho
fper was a greet cupany of
puplicans & of ope pat were
wip he: sitige at pe mete: &
farisees & pe scribis of he gr
uathide: & seiden to hile diltuplis
whi eteu ze & dzyken wip pup
phicus & syful me: & the an
sweride & seide to hem: pei pat
ben hoole han no nete to a leche:
but pei pat ben syke for: cam
not to clepe mist me: but syful
me to penaunce: & pei seiden to hi
whi pe diltuplis of jon faste of
te & maken preieris also & of fa
risees: but yne eten & dzyke

to whiche he seide: wher ze wou
make pe sones of pe spoule to
faste: while pe spoule is wip he:
but dases shulen come whane
pe spoule shal be take a wey fro
hem: & pane pei shulen faste i po
dages: & he seide to hem also: alle
nelle for no ma takey a pese fro
a newe clop: & putty it into an
old cloping: ellis bope he bryk
pe newe: & pe pese of re newe a
cordy not to pe elde: and no ma
putty newe wip into olde botels
ells pe newe wip shal bryke pe
botels: & pe wip shal be wip
ed out: & pe botetels shu
len perillhe: but newe wip
onwy to be putt into newe bo
tels: & bope ben kept: & no man
dzykky pe elde: wole a noo newe
for he seyn pe elde is pe better:

And it was do: / **C** vi.
in pe seide firtz sabot
whine he passide by pe cor
nes: hile diltuplis pluckden eers
of corn: & pei frotyge wip her hondis:
eeten and sume of pe farisees:
seide to hem: what doen ze pat y is
not leestil in pe sabotis: & the an
sweride & seide to hem: ze han not
redd what damp dite: whine he
hugride: & pei fweren wip hi
how he entrite into pe hous of
god & took lones of pphicou &
eet: & zat to hem y were wip hi
whiche loones it was not leestil
to ete: but oonly to pres
f he seide to he: for man: is
lone is lord: zhe of pe sabot: & it
was don i anoy sabot: y he ent
de into a synagoge & tawte: &
ama was pere: & his rythoud
was dzye: & pe scribis & farisee

alpete hi: if he wolde heele hym
in pe sabot: pat pei shulde fynde
cause wher of pei shulde acuse
hy: & he wite pe pouzts of he: &
he seide to pe man pat hadde a dzye
hond: ryle up & stonde i to pe myd
del: & he roos: & stood: & the seide
to hem: y are you if it is leestil to
do wel in pe sabot or yuele: to
make a soule last: or to leese: &
whine he hadde biholde alle me a
boute: he seide to pe ma: hold for
ym hond: & he heeld for: & his ho
nd was restord to heelp: & pei
were fulfillid wip ynwildom:
f spoken to gude: what pei shul
den do of shu. **A**nd it was don
i po dages: he wente out to an
hil: to preie: & he was al nyzt
dwellege in pe preier of god: &
whine pe day was come: he clepi
de hile diltuplis: & chees twelue of
hem whiche he clepide also apost
hs: symonid who he clepide petr:
f andren his broyr: James & jo.
philip & bartholomey: mattheu
f thonis: James alsey & symonit
f is clepid zelotes: judas of ja
mes: & judas isariot y was tray
tour: and isf camidou fro pe hil
wip hem & stood i a feeldy place:
f pe cupany of hile diltuplis &
a greet multitude of peple of al
judae & ierlm: f of pe see coastis
f of tyre & sydon: y came to hee
re hi: & to be heeled of her syknes
his: & pei pat were trane lid of
vncleue spiritis: were heeled:
and alle peple souzte to touche
hi: for vertu wente out of hym
f heelde alle: & whine hile yzen
were cast up into hile diltuplis:
he seide blestid be ze poze men:

for pe kyngdom of god is zome
blestid be ze y now hugre: for ze
shulen be fulfillid: blestid be ze
pat now wepe: for ze shule lere:
ze shulen be blestid: whine men
shulen hate you: & departe you
awey: & putte shendshp to you:
f caste out your name as yuel
for mans lone: yope ze i pat day
f be ze glad: for lo your mete is
moche in heuene: for after pes
pigis: re fadris of hem dide to
pfetis: nepeles wo to you y pche
me: pat han your confort: wo
to you y ben fulfillid: for ze shu
len hugre: wo to you y now lere
en: for ze shulen mozne & wepe:
wo to you whine alle me shule
bleste you: after pes pigis re fa
drys of hem diden to profetis:
But i seie to you y heere: lone ze
zoure enemyes: do ze wel to hem
y hatide you: bleste ze me y cinse
you: preyeze for me y defanie you:
f to hy pat smytty pe on o cheke:
shewe also pe tof: f fro hy y taky
awey fro pee a clop: nyle y for
bete pe cote: and yue to ech pat
stry pe: f if amia taky away
yo pigis pat ben yne: are you
not azen: and as ze wolen pat
men do to you: do ze also to hem
in lyk maner: f if ze louen hem
pat louen you: what yank is to
you: for syful me loue me pat
loue he: f if ze doen wel to he y
doen wel to you: what grace is
to you: synful me doen yis ying:
f if ze leenen to he of whiche ze
hopen to take azen: what yank
is to you: for synful me leenen
to syful me: to take azen as mo
che: nepeles lone ze your enemye

4. & do ze wel / and leene ze hopige
no pting pot. & zour mede shal
be moche / & ze shulen be pe loue
of pe herte. for he is benygne
ou vnkynde me & yuel me. **¶** For
be ze merciful. as zour fadir is
merciful. nple ze deme. & ze shu
len not be demp. nple ze dedpne.
ze shule not be dedpned / foryne ze.
it shal be forzoni to zou / zine ze. &
it shal be zoni to / per shule zine mo
zoure bohi a good mesur. & wel fillid.
ze shal u to gidre & ouer flowige
for bi pe same mesur. bi which
ze meten: it shal be meten azen to
zou. & he seide to hem a hknese.
whep pe blynde may lede pe bly
de: ne fallen pei not bope into pe
dyche. a discipule is not a boue pe
maistur / but ech shal be par fyt.
if he be as his maistur. **¶** And what
seest thou in pi broperis yze a mot.
but thou biholdist not a beem pat
is in ym owne yze. or how maist
pou seie to pi brop. broper ouste.
I shal caste out pe mot of ym yze.
ze pou biholdist not a beem i ym
owne yze. **¶** pocrute. first take
out pe beem of ym owne yze. &
pāne pou shalt se to take pe mot
of pi broperis yze. **¶** It is not a
good tre. y makir yuele fruytis
nep an yuel tre. rat makir go
ode fruytis / for euery tre. is
knowu of his fruyt. & menga
dere not figus of pornes: nep
men gader a grape of a bonstb
of hteris / a good mā. of pe good
tresour of his herte byyngir
forp goode vgis. & an yuel mau
man. of pe yuel tresour byy
ger forp yuel vgis. for of pe
plente of pe herte. pe mouy spe

Erp. **¶** And what depen ze me lord
lord. & doen not po pigis rat
sepe / ech pat comey to me & hee
rer my wordis. & dorp hem. I
shal thewe to zoni to whom he
is lyk / he is lyk to aman y biler
an hors pat diggete depe & sette
re fudamet on a stoon. & whie
greet flood was maid pe flood
was hirtid to y hous. & it my
te not moue it / for it was fou
did on a sad stoon / but he pat
heerir & dorp not. is lyk to a
man bildige his hous on erpe
wyoute fudamet. into which
pe flood was hirtid. & a noon it
felle dou. & pe fallig don of pat
hous. was maid greet. **¶** **¶**
And whie he hadde fulfild
alle his wordis into
ve eeris of pe peple. he
entride into cafaruon / but a ser
uaunt of a centurien pat was
precious to hym was syk & dy
wyngge to pe depe. & whie he
hadde herd of ihu. he sente to
hym pe eldre men of ierusalem. &
preiede hi pat he wolde come &
heele his seruauit. & whie pei
camen to ihu. pei preiede hym
biyli. & seide to hi. for he is wor
pi y pou graute to hy pis pig.
for he louey our folk. & he bldi
de to us a synagoge. & ihu wen
te wip hem. & whie he was not
fer fro pe hous pe centurie sen
te to hy frendis & seide. lord nple
pou be trauelid / for I am not
woxy. y pou entre vnder my
root. for which pig. & y deme
de not my self woxy. y come
to pee / but seie pou bi word. &
my child shal be heeled / for I am

ama ordeyned vnder power. &
hane knytis vnder me. & I seie
to pis go. & he gory. & to a noyr
come. & he comey. & to my seruauit
do pis pig. & he dorp. & whie pis
pig was herd. ihu wondride. &
seide to pe peple luyngge hi / tren
hi. I seie to zoni. neyr in yrael. I
foud lo greet fey. & pei pat we
re sent turneten azen home. &
fouiden pe seruauit hool which
was syk. **¶** And it was don aft
ward ihu wente into a cite. pat
is clepid naim. & hile discipulis &
ful greet peple meten wip hy.
& whie he cam myz to pe zate of
pe citee. lo pe loue of a woman
pat hadde no mo children. was
born out deed. & pis was a wido
we. & moche peple of pe citee wip
hy. & whie pe lord ihu hadde seyn
hy. he hadde reyne on hyr. & seide
to hyr nple pou wepe. & he cam
myz. & touchide pe beer. & pei pat
baren. stode. & he seide. zonge
mā. I seie to pee ryse up. & he
pat was deed. saut up azen. &
bigan to speke. & he zaf hy to hi
modir. And diede took alle men.
& pei magnified god. & seiden.
for a greet profete is risen amog
us. & for god hay visited his po
peple. & pis word wente out of
hy into al iudee. & into al pe ci
tre aboute. **¶** And Johnis disci
phis tolde hy. of alle ves pigis.
ze John clepde tweyne of hile
discipulis & sente he to ihu & hie
art pou he pat is to come. or a
biden we anoy. & whie pe me
cam to hi. pei seiden. John bap
tist sente us to pee. & seide. art
pou he pat is to come. or we

abyden anoy. and in pat our he
heelde many me of her syknes
his & wondis & yuel spurtis. & he
zaf sxt to many blynde me. & ihu
answeride & seide to hem. go ze
azen & telle ze to John. po pigis
pat ze han herd & seyn. blynde me
seen. crokid me goen. mesehis be
maid dene. deef men heere. deede
me rylen azen. poze me ben ta
bi to prechyng of pe gospel. & he
pat shal not be standid i me.
is blelid. & whie pe messangers
of John. weren go forp. he biga
to seie of John to pe peple. what
went ze out into desert to se.
a reede wayid wip pe wynd. but
what went ze out to se. aman
clapd wip softe cloris. lo pei p
ben in precious clop & in delpees.
be in kyngis housis. but what
went ze out to se. a pfete. zhe
I seie to zoni. & moze vā appete.
pis is he of whom it is writu. lo
I sente my angel bifoze pi face.
which shal make pi weye redy
bifoze pee. certis I seie to zoni
per is no mā moze pfete amog
children of wyne van is John.
but he y is lesse in pe kyngdom
of heuenes. is moze van he.
¶ And alle pe peple heerige & pyp
plicans pat hadde be baptisid
wip pe baptym of John. mistifi
eden god. but pe farisees & pe
wyse me of pe lawe pat were
not baptisid of hi. dispiliden pe
concel of god. as ens he sile. & pe
lord seide. pfoze to who shal I
sepe me of pis generacion lyk.
ze to whom ben pei lyk. I pei ben
lyk to children entige in chepig
& spekinge to gidre & seigge.

we han songu to zou wip pypis.
 & ze han not dālid we han mand
 moznig: & ze han not wept for
 John baptist cam nes etyunge
 breed ne drynkige wip: & ze seie
 he har a fend māns lone cam
 etyunge & drynkige: & ze seien
 lo amā deuour: & drynkige wip
 a frend of puplicans & of syn
 ful mē: & wipdom is iustified
 of her lones. **B**ut oon of pe far
 sees preiete ihū: y he shulde etc
 wip hym. And he entride into pe
 hous of pe farisee: & sat at pe me
 te: & lo a synful wōmā y was i pe
 citee. as she knew y ihū sat at
 pe mete. in pe hous of pe farisee.
 she brougte an alabastr box of
 oymemet & she stood bihynde bi
 hydis his feet: & bigan to mouthe
 his feet wip teeris: & wipete
 wip pe heeris of hyr heed: & kiste
 his feet: & anoyntide wip oyme
 met: & pe farisee seynge rat had
 de deyd hi: seide wip yne hym
 silt seynge: if pis were affete:
 he shulde wite: who & what ma
 ner wōmā it wer: rat touchy
 hi: for she is a synful wōmā: &
 he answerte & septe to hi: sym
 out I haue silt pig to seie to pee:
 & he seide: manik seie pon: & he
 answerte: twey detours we
 ren to oo lenet: & oon oute sy
 ne hūdrū pens: & pe of fyfty
 but whne pei hadde not wher
 of pei shulde zelde: he for zat to
 bope: who pāne louey hi more:
 symonit answerte & seide: y get
 se pat he: to whom he forzat mo
 ze: & he answerte to hy: y hast
 demyd ryzth: & he turnede to pe
 wōmā & seide to symonit seest

ron pis wōmā: I entride into y
 hous: pon zat no watu to my
 feet: but pis har moitid my fe
 et wip teeris: & wipid wip hyr
 heeris: pon hast not zomū to me
 a colt: but pis hyen she entri
 de ceelide not to kisse my feet:
 pon anoyntidest not myn heed
 wip ople: but pis anoyntide my
 feet wip oymemet: for pe which
 pig I seie to pee: many synes be
 forzomū to hyr: for she har loued
 moche: & to who is seile forzomū:
 he louey lesse: & he seide to hyr:
 y synes ben forzomū to pee: &
 pei pat laten to gidre at pe mete:
 bigimen to seie wip yne he silt:
 who is pis rat forzomū synes:
 but he seide to pe wōmā: y seip
 har mand pee silt: go y in pees.
And it was dō. **C**on
 after ward: & ihū made
 aourney bi citees & cas
 tels: prechige & euāgelizinge
 pe rewme of god: & ewelue wip
 hi: & sū wymen pat weren hee
 lid of wickid spiritis & synelles
 marie y is deyd manideles of
 whom seiene deuels wenten
 out: & Joone pe wif of chule pe
 pcurato of eroude: & lūāne &
 many ope: y mynistrde to hy
 of her rycheles: & whne myche
 peple was come to gidre: & me
 hyeden to hy fro pe citees: he sei
 de bi a synilitude: he pat soluy
 zede out to soue his leed: & wip
 he soluy: sū fel bi sydis pe were:
 & was defoulid: & byddis of pe
 epr eeten it: and oyr fel on a
 stoon: & it sprong up & duede:
 for it hadde not moitūre: and
 oyr fel amōg pagnes: & pe por

nes sprungen up to gidre: & strā
 ghde it: and oyr fel into good er
 pe: & it is sprōg up: & made an
 hūdrū fold fruyt: he seide pes
 rignis & cryede: he pat eerns of
 heeryng heet: he but hile dis
 cypis are den hi: wat was pis
 parable was: & he seide to hem:
 to zom it is grautid to knowe
 pe pnynte of pe kyngdom of
 god: but to opere mē in para
 blis: y pei seynge se not: and
 pei heerige vnder stonde not:
 & pis is pe parable: pe seed is
 godis word: & pei pat ben bish
 dis pe weye: be pes pat hee
 ren: and after ward pe fend comey
 & taky away pe word fro pei her
 te: lest pei bileunge be mand la
 af: but pei rat fel on a stoon: be
 pes y whne pei han herd: restey
 uen pe word wip iope: & pes han
 not rootis: for at a tyme pei bile
 uen: & in tyme of tēptacion pei
 goen away: but pat y fel among
 pagnes: ben pes pat herde: & of bi
 synelles & richellis & lūdis of hyr
 pei goen for: & ben strāghd: & bym
 gen for no fruyt: but pat rat fel
 into good erpe: ben pes pat in a good
 herte & best heere pe word & holde:
 & byngen for frut in pacience.
No man lizney a lantern: & hi
 ley it wip a vessel: or puttyt it on
 dur a bed: but on a candlestake: y
 mē rat entren se lyt: for y is no
 pnynt pig: which shal not be ope
 nyd: neyr hid pig: which shal
 not be knowū: & come ito opyn

perfore se ze how ze heeren: for it
 shal be zomū to hym y har: & who
 eney rat har not: shal rat he
 wener y he haue: shal be takū a
 wey fro hym: & his modir & bysen
 came to hym: & pe mpxten not co
 me to hy for pe peple: & it was teeld
 to hym: y modir & bysen ston
 den wipointe for: willige to se pee
 and he answerte & seide to he: my
 modir & my bysere ben ysele: rat
 heeren pe word of god & doen it:
 And it was don in oon of pe dāes:
 he wente up into aboot & hile disti
 phis: & he seide to hem: passe we on
 pe see: and pei wente up: & while
 pei roweden: he slepte: and a tem
 pest of wipnd cam dōwn into pe wa
 tir: & pei weren drym hūdrū & pi
 dur wip waves & weren i pel: &
 pei came up: & reiseden hi & seide:
 comāndū: we perillhen: & he roos
 & blānde pe wipnd & pe tempest
 of pe watir: & it ceelide: & pesible
 te was mand: & he seide to hem: whe
 re is zour fey: which dredunge
 wondzult: & seide to gidre: who gel
 līt pon is pis: for he comāndy to
 wipdis & to pe see: & pei obeyen
 to hym: & pei rowiden to pe kūt
 of gerasen: pat is azens galile:
 and whne he wente out to pe lond:
 aman ran to hi pat hadde a deuēl
 long tyme: & he was not dōpid
 wip cloy: neyr dibellid in hous:
 but i sepulchris: pis whne he syz
 ihū: fel dōū bifore hy: & he crynge
 wip a greet vois: septe: what to
 me & to pee: ihū pe sone of hyete: &
 god: y bileche pee y pon timent
 not me: for he comāndide pe vn
 dene spūit: y he shulde go out
 fro pe man: for he took hi ofte ty

mes and he was bound wip charynes & kept in stocks & whine re bon dis weren broken: he was lad of de uelis into desert: and ihs aride hi & seide: what name is to pee? & he seide a legion: for many deuels weren entrid into hi: And pei ppyeden hi: p he shulde not coman de he: p pei shulden go into helle: and p was a floc of many sibyn: lefswige man hyl: & pei preyeden hi: p he shulde suffre hem: & ent into he: & he suffride hem: & so pe deuels wenten out fro pe man: & entiden into pe sibyn: & wip a bire pe floc wente heedlige into pe pool: & was drenchid: & whine re herdis laren pis pig don: pei flowen & teelden into pe citee: & i to pe towne: and pei zeden out to se pat pig: pat was don & pei ca men to ihs: & pei fouden pe man sittige clond: fro who pe fendis wente out: & in hool mynde at his feet: & pei dreedden: and pei p sy zen toolde to he: how he was maid hool of re legion: & al pe miltitude of re citre of gerasen: preyede hi: p he shulde go fro he: for pei we re holdu wip greet drede: he wen te up into a boot & turnede azen: & pe ma of who pe deuels were gon out: preyede hi: p he shulde be wip hi: ihs leste hym & seide: go a zen into pin hous: & telle how gre te pigis god hay don to pee: & he wente purjal pe cite: & prechide how grete pigis ihs hadde don to hi: **A**nd it was don whine ihs was gon azen: pe peple ressepye de hym: for alle were abydyge hi: and lo amā to who pe name was iairus: & he was prince of a sy

nagoge: & he fel down at re feet of ihs: & preyede hi: pat he shulde entre into his hous: for he hadde but o dougter almost of twelf year eold: & she was deed: & it bifel: pe while he wente: he was pringun of re peple: & a woman p hadde a flur of blood twelf year: & had de spendid al hir catel in lechis: & she mygte not be curid of ony: & she cam wip bihynde: & touchide re heime of his cloy: and andoo pe flux of hir blood ceaside: & ihs sei de: who is p touchide me? & whine alle me denyede: pete seide: & pei p were wip hi: comandou: pe peple prusten & dilsen pee: & p seist who touchide me: & ihs seide: su mā hay touchid me: for p ver tu zede out of me: & pe womā lē ge p it was not hid fro hi: cam tremliche & fel down at his feet: & for what cause she hadde touchid hi: she shewide bifore al re peple: & how andoo she was hechid: & he seide to hir: dougter pi fery hay maid pee saft: go you i pees: & it whi le he spak: a mā cam to pe pnce of re synagoge: & seide to hi: pi dougter is deed: nyle pon traueler pe manstir: & whine pis word was herd: ihs answeride to pe fadir of re damysel: nyle p drede: but bi leue pon onely: & she shal be saft: and whine he cam to re hous: he suffride no mā to entre wip hi: but pete & ihs & james & re fa dir: & re modir of re damysel: & alle wepten & bwepteden hir: & he seide: nyle ze wepe: for pe damy selis not deed: but slepy: & pei doornede hy: & witten p she was deed: but he heeld hir hond & cry

ete & seide: damysel ryse up: and hir sprit turnede azen: & she roos anon: & he comānide to zyne to hir: to ete: & hir fadir & modir wondred greetly: & he comānide hem: pat pei shulde not sepe to ony: pat pig: pat was don: **A**nd whine re twelue apol chis were clepid to gidre: ihs zaf to he: & ihs pōw on alle deuels: & pat pei shulden heele sylmethe: and he sente hem for to preche pe kyngdom of god: & to heele sylme: & he seide to hem: no pig take ze in re weye neyr zerd ne stipe: ney breed ne money: & ney haue ze two cootis: & into what hous p ze entren: dwelle ze yere: & go ze not fro ren: & who elie ressepye not you: go ze out of vat citee: & shake ze pe poudre of your feet: ito witneslig: on he: & pei zeden forp: & wenten aboute bi castels prechige & heelge eny wher: and eroude tetraht: herde alle pigis pat were don of hi: & he doucde for pat it was seid of su men: p ihs was rise fro deap: & of su me: p elve hadde ap perid: but of ope: p don of re elte pfetis was risu: and eroude sei de: ihs haue biheedid ihs: & who is pis: of who i heere suche pi gis: & he soughe to se hy: and re apoths turnede azen: & telden to hi alle pigis pat pei hadde don: and he took he: & wente bihydis into a desert place: & is bechlagda: & whine re peple twelue pis: pei solewiden hi: & he ressepyede he: & spak to he of re kyngdom of god: and he heeld he: pat hadde ne de of cure: & pe day bigan to

borne down: and re twelue canie & seiden to hi: leue re peple: & pei go & turne into castels & tow nes: pat ben aboute: & pei fynde mete: for we ben her in a desert place: & he seide to he: zyne ze to he to ete: and pei seiden: per ben not to us: mo ran fyne loones: & twelue fyllhis: but pōwētū: & we go & bye metis: to alle peple: and pe me were almost fyne youland: & he seide to hile discipulis: make ze hem litte to mete: by cūpany es a fify to gidre: & pei dide so: & pei made alle me litte to mete: and whine he hadde take pe fyne loones & twelue fyllhis: he bihaeld into heuene: & blestide hem & brak: & whine to hile discipulis: pat pei sh ulde sette forp bifore re cūpanyes: & alle me eeten: & were fyllfilled: & pat pat leste to he of broken metis was taku up: twelue coffins: and it was don whine he was aloone: p inge: hile discipulis were wip hym: & he aride hem & seide: who seyen re peple pat i am: & pei answeri den & seiden: ihs baptist: ope seien: elve: & ope seien: o pfete of re for mer is risu: & he seide to he: but who seye ze p i am: symonid pete: answeride: & seide: re cat of god: and he blamige hem: comānide pat pei shulde seie to no mā: & sei de: pes pigis: for it bihouep mān sone: to suffre many pigis: & to be repued of re eldre me: & of re pnces of prestis: & of ihs: & to be slayn: & pe rydder day to ryse a zen: & he seide to alle: ihs ony wole come astir me: denpe he hy self: & take he his croll eny day: & lu we he me: for he pat wole make

p is sit youland. you lande. eest hādū d. curi. dāst and d. nre

his hys laif: thal leese it and he y
leest his hys: for me thal make it
salf and what pfitit it to a man
if he wene al pe word & leese hi self.
I do peyrig of hi self: for who so
thamey me & my wordis: mans
sone thal thame hi whiche he co
mey in his mageste & of pe fadris
of pe hooky angelis. **A**nd I seie
to you verli y ben siime stondege
her. Whiche thynlen not tatte deyr:
til pei seen ye rewme of god: & it
was don after pes wordis. almeit
eyste dapes: & he took pete & james
& john: & he stizet into an hyl: to
preie: & while he preiete: pe lyk
nesse of his cher was chengid. &
his clopyng was whyt thynge: & lo
twep men spaken wyth hy: & moyses
& elye weren seyn i maneste: & pei
sajen his goyng out. which he th
nile fulfille in ierlm: & pete & pei
pat were wyth hy: weren heyr of
sleep: and pei wakige sajen his
maneste: & pei twep me y stode wyth
hy: & it was don whane pei departi
den fro hy: pete seide to ihu: co
maund me it is good: y we be here
& make we her yre tabernadis
oon to pee & oon to moyses: & oon to
elye: & he wiste not: what he thil
de sepe: but while he spak pes y
gis: a clowde was maid. & oustha
deide he: & pei dzedden: whane
pei entride into pe clowde: & a vois
was maid out of pe clowde: & seide
pis is my dereworpe sone: heere
ze hy: & while pe vois was maid:
ihu was solidu aloone: & pei we
ren stille: & to no ma seiden i po dan
es out of po ygis. y pei hadden
seyn: but it was don i pe day su
yng: whane pei came dou of pe

hil: moche peple mette hem: & lo a
ma of pe ciupany: cryete & seide
maufur: y bileche pee. bihold my so
ne: for y have no mo: & lo a spirit
takep hi: & suddenly he cryet & hur
tlyp down: & todraue hy wyth so
me: & vnepe he goy away alto
dradyngge hy: and y preiede r
dultphs: y pei shulden caste hy
out: & pei myste not: & the ankre
ride: & seide to hem: Al vnsepyful
genaciou & weyward: how longe
thal y be at you: & suffer you: & bi
ge thidur y sone: and whane he cam
my: pe deuyl hurthide hi down: & to
brayde hi: and the blamede pe vn
clene spirit: & heelde pe child: &
zeldide hi to his fadir: & alle men
wondride greetly in ye greetnesse
of god: and whiche alle me wondri
den in alle ygis pat he deide: he seide
to hile dultphs: putte ze yele wor
dis in your hertis: for it is to co
me y mans sone be betrayed to
pe hondis of me: & pei knete not
pis word. & it was hid before he:
pat pei feelde it not: and pei dzed
den to are hi: pis word. **A**nd a po
nt entride into hem: who of he
thulde be grettest: and ihu seipe
pe pouzris of pe herte of he: took
a child & seide hi biydes hi: & seide
to hem: who eue ressemye pis
child in my name: ressemye me:
& who eue ressemye me: ressemye
ney hi y sente me: for he pat is
leest amog you alle: is ye grettest:
and john answereide & seide: conuili
dour: we syzen amand castige out
fendis in y name: & we han for
bodii hy: for he suet not yee wy
vs: & the seide to hi: myle ze forbe
de: for he y is not azens vs: is

for us: and it was don whiche pe day
es of his takig up weren fulfil
lid: he seide faste his face to go to
ierlm: & sente messangeris before
his siz: and pei reden & entride into
a citee of samaritans: to make
redy to hi: & pei ressemye not
hi: for pe face was of hi: goyng
into ierlm: & whane james & john
hile dultphs syzen: pei seide: lord
wolt pon pat we sepen y fier: come
down fro heuene: & waste hem:
and he turnede: & blamede hem & seide
ze witen not whos spiritis ze ben
for mans sone cam not to leese me
nis souls: but to saue: & pei wete
into anoy castel. **A**nd it was don
whiche pei walkiden in pe weye: amand
seide to hi: y thal sue pee: whidur
eue you go: & the seide to hi: for is
han demes: & buddis of pe eyr han
nestis: but mans sone hay not whe
re he reste his heed: and he seide
to anoyer: sue you me: and he seide
lord suffer me first to go: & brie my
fadir: & the seide to hi: suffer y deide
me brie her deide me: but go you &
telle ye kyngdom of god: and anoy
seide: lord y thal sinne pee: but fi
rst suffer me to leese al yis y be
at hoom: & the seide to hi: no man
pat puttis his hond to ye plou: &
biholdige backward: is able to re
rewme of god. **A**nd after pes ygis: pe lo
d ihu ordeyneide also opri
seuenty & tweyne: & sente he bi tweyn
ne & tweyne before his face: into
euery cite & place whidur he ws
to come: & he seide to hem: y is mo
che rypp corn: & fense werkmen:
y fore preie ze ye lord of pe rypp
corn: pat he sente werkme into

his rypp corn: go ze lo y sente you: as
lambren among wolues: y fore nyle
ze be: a sachel newe: & nye: & theoon:
& grete ze no ma bi ye weie: into wh
hous ze entride first sepe ze: pees to
pis hous: & if a sone of pees be yer:
you: pees thal reste outhi: but if
noon: it thal turne agen to you: &
diuelle y in pe same hous: etige
& dypnige po ygis y ben at hem:
for a werkman is worp his hnt: my
le ze passe from hous into hous: & i
to what euer citee ze entren: & pei
ressemyen you: ete ze po ygis y ben
sett to you: & heele ze ye syken men
pat ben in pat citee: & sepe ze to he
pe kyngdom of god thal neye into
you: into what citee ze entride: & pei
ressemyen you not: go ze out into ye
streetis of it: & sepe ze we wyppen
of azens you pe pollder pat deuy
de to us of your cite: nepeles wite
ze pis yis: y ye rewme of god th
al come up: y seie to you: y to lodo
it thal be ehyer: ran to pat citee
in pat day. **A**nd to pee coroplaum
wo to pee betlayda: for if in tyre &
sidon ye vertues hadde be don: whi
che han be don i you: hi tyme pei
wolden ha seite in hayr: & aplyhes
& hane don penance: nepeles to ty
re & sydon it thal be ehyer in ye
dome: ran to you: & you casarnail
art enhauid til to heuene: y thalt
be drenchid til into helle: he pat
heery you: heery me: & he pat
dispilip you: dispilip me: & he pat
dispilip me: dispilip hy pat sente
me. **A**nd pei two & seuenti dult
phs: turnede agen wyrope: & sei
den: lord also denelis ben suget to
us in y name: & he seide to hem:
y saiz sathanas fallige down fro

heue as leyt: & lo I hane zoun to
 you power to trede on serpentis
 & scorpiōis. & on al ye vertu of ye
 enemy: & no yig shal anoye you
 neyres nyle ze iose in yis ying
 pat spiritis ben suget to you: but
 iose ze y' zour names ben writen
 in heuenes. In yille our he gla
 dide in ye hooly gost: & leide / I Eno
 wleche to ree fadir: lord of heuene
 & of erpe / for you hast hyd res ym
 gis fro wyle me & prudent: & hast
 thewid he to finale children: the
 fadir: for so it pleside bifore yee
 alle yigis ben zoun to me of my
 fadir: & no mā woot who is ye so
 ne: but ye fadir: & who is ye fadir:
 but ye lone: & to whom ye lone wo
 le thewe / and he turnete to hile
 disciplis & leide / bleid ben ye yre:
 pat seen po yigis pat ze seen / for
 I seie to you pat many pletis &
 yigis wolden hane seyn po yigis
 pat ze seen: & yei lyzen not: & hee
 re po yigis pat ze heere: & yei her
 den not: & lo awys mā of ye lawe
 roos up: & teptinge hi & seyinge
 maistr: what yig: shal I do to
 hane euilastige lyf: & he seide to
 hi: what is writen in ye lawe: how
 redist you: he answeride & leide
 you shalt loue y' lord god of al
 ym herte: & of al y' loule: & of all
 y' strengtis & of al y' mynde: &
 y' neyebore as y' self: & ihe seide
 to hi: you hast answerid rytly: do
 yis yig: & you shalt lyue: but he
 wylle to nisthe hi self: seide to
 ihe: and who is my neyebore: &
 ihe byheeld & leide / A man cam don
 fro ierlm into ierico: & fel amog
 reues: & yei robbiden hi: & woude
 den hi & wenten away: & lefren

ye man half a lyue: & it bifel pat a
 pcest cam don ye same weye: & pat
 side for whine he hadde seyn hym
 also a deue whine he was brydis
 ye place: & sau hi: passide for: but
 a samaritā goyng ye wey: cam
 bilidis hi: & he syz hi: & hadde reu
 pe on hy: & cam to hi & boond to gi
 dre his wondis: & hilde ym oyle &
 wyn: & leide hi on his beest: & leide
 into an ostye: & dide ye cur of hym
 and anoy day he brougte for ryer
 pans: & zaf to ye osteler: & leide / ha
 ue ye cur of hi: & what eide y' shal
 zyne on: I shal zelde to yee: whane
 I come azen / who of yis yre semer
 to yee: was neyebore to hym pat
 fel amog yefis: & he seide / he y'dide
 mercy into hi: & ihe seide to hi: go
 you & do y' on lyk maner: & it was
 don while yei wenten: he entride
 to a castel: & awōmā martha by na
 me: resleyuete hi into hir hous: &
 to yis was a sister: marie by name
 which alid sat by sidis ye feet of
 ye lord: & herde his word: but mar
 tha blyede aboute ye ofte scripyle
 & she stood & leide / lord takist you
 no kepe: pat my sistr hay left me
 aloone to serue: yfore seie you to
 hir: pat she helpe me: & ye lord
 answeride: & leide to hir: martha
 martha you art bly: & art trou
 blid aboute ful many yigis: but
 o yig is necessaire: mary hay cho
 si ye beste part: which shal not
 be take away fro hir. **C. 21.**
And it was don whine he
 was preyng in a place:
 as he ceestide: oon of his
 disciplis leide to hi: lord teche us
 to prey: as John tauyte hile disci
 plis: & he seide to hem: whine ze prey:

seje ze / fadir: halewid be y' name
 y' kyngdom come to: zyne to us to
 day: our escheypes breed: & forzyne
 to us our lyues: as we forzyuen
 to ech mā pat owy to us: & leide
 us not into teptacioū: and he sei
 de to hem: who of you shal hane a
 frend: & shal go to hi at mydnygt:
 & shal seje to hi: frend leene to
 me yre loones: for my frend comey
 to me fro ye weye: & I hane not
 what I shal sette bifore hi: & he
 wylle for answer: & seie / nyle
 you be heuy to me: ye dore is now
 shatt: & my children ben wy me
 bed: I may not ryse & zyne to yee:
 and if he shal dwelle stille knoc
 kige: I seie to you: youz he shal
 not ryse & zyne to hy for pat y' he
 is his frend: neyeres for his coti
 nuel aryg: he shal ryse & zyne to
 hy: as mane as he hay uede to: &
 I seie to you: aze ze: & it shal be
 zoun to you: seke ze: & ze shulen
 fynde: knocke ze: & it shal be ope
 nyd to you: for ech pat aryp: taky
 & he pat sekyp: fyndy: & to ama
 pat knocky: it shal be openyd
 yfore who of you aryp his fadir
 breed: wher he shal zyne hi a
 stoon: or if he aryp fystly: wher
 he shal zyne hi a serpent for ye
 fystly: or if he aryp an ey: wher
 he shal reche hi a scorpiō: per
 fore if ze whine ze ben yuel: bi
 nen zyne gode zifis to zour chil
 dren: how moche more zour fa
 dir of heuene: shal zyne agood
 spyt to me pat aryp hi: **C. 22.**
And it was crāige out a fend: & he
 was donbe: & whine he hadde cast
 out ye fend: ye donbe mā spak:
 & ye peple wondride: & sinne of

hem seide: in bellebub pnce of deue
 lis: he casty out deuclis: & ower
 teptinge: aride of hi a tokene fro
 heuene: & as he sau ye youtis
 of hem: he seide to hem: eny reu
 me departid azens it self: shal
 be desolat: & an hous shal falle
 on a hous: & if sathanas be depar
 tid azens hi self: how shal his reu
 me stonde: for ze seien pat I cas
 te out fendis in bellebub: & if
 I in bellebub caste out fendis:
 in whom caste out zour sones:
 yfore yei shulen be zour domes
 me: but if I caste out fendis
 ye syngur of god: yāne ye reu
 me of god: is comit among you
Whine a strong armed mā be
 pry his hous: alle yigis y' he wel
 dry ben in pees: but if a stronger
 ran he come xpon hi: & oucome
 hi: he shal take away al his ar
 met: in which he trustide: & shal
 deele abrood his robbries: he pat
 is not wy me: is azens me: & he
 pat gedry not wy me to gydre:
 natry a brood: whine an vndene
 spyt goy out of amā: he wan
 dry by drie places: & sekyp recte
 & he fyndige not: seip / I shal tur
 ne azen to myn hous: fro wha
 nes I cam out: & whine he comey
 he fyndy hit densid wy befyms:
 & saure arayed: yāne he goy &
 taky wy hi seueue ower spri
 tis werse ran hi self: & yei en
 tren & dwellen yel: & ye laste y
 gis of pat man: ben moad wor
 se ran ye formere **And it was**
 don whine he hadde seid res ym
 gis: awōman of ye cupany re
 ride hir vois & seide to hi: bleid
 be ye wombe pat bar yee: and

blemid be ye teetis pat p'haft lobij
he seide/but zhe blemid be rei p
heerē re word of god & kepen it
And whine pe peple riinen to
gidre: he bigan to seie/vis ge
naciou is a weyward genaciou/
it setip a tokene: & a tokene sh
al not be zomū to it: but ye toke
ne of jonas pe pfete/for as jonas
was a tokene to mē of nymue:
so māns lone shal be to vis ge
neraciou/ye queene of ye souy sh
al ryle in dom wip mē of vis ge
naciou: & shal condepne hem/for
she cam fro pe endis of ye erpe:
for to heer pe wylsom of salomō
& lo her is a gretter pan salomō
men of nymue shule ryle i doom
wip vis genaciou: & shule condep
ne it/for rei diden penance i pe
prechig of jonas/and lo her is a
gretter pan jonas. **N**o mā ten
dyr alantne: & putty in hidis ney
vndir a boyshel/but on a candil
sticke: p' rei pat goen yn. se liz
ye lanternne of yi body: is ym yre/
if ym yre be synple: al yi body
shal be lizty/but if it be weyward:
al yi body shal be derkful/ p'fore
se you: lest pe lizt pat is m pee
be derknessis/ p'fore if al yi body
be bryt: & haue no part of derk
nessis: it shal be al bryt: & as a
lanterne of brytneisse: it shal zy
ue lizt to pee: & whine he spak: a
farile preide hi p' he shulte etc
wip hi/ & he entride & lant to pe
mete: & pe farile bigan to seie
gellige wip yne hi self: why
he was not wantyū bi fore me
te: & pe lord seide to hi/ now ze fa
rilees cleulen pat pat is wipou
te forp of ye cuppe & pe plater:

but pat pig p' is wip fine of zomū
is ful of ranyne & wickidness
foolis. Wher he pat made pat p'
is wipou te forp: made not allo
pat is wip yne: nepeles pat p'
is ouerpluysh zyue ze almes:
& lo alle pigis ben cleue to zomū
But wo to zomū farilees pat ti
pen myte & rulle & ech eer be:
& leeuē dom & pe charite of god
for it bihofte to do reke pigis: &
not leeuē po/wo to zomū farilees
pat louen pe firste chaperis i li
nagogis: & saluaciōis i chepis/
wo to zomū p' ben as sepulchris p' be
not seyn: & men walkige aboue
& wten not/but oon of pe wyle
mē of pe laue answere: & seide
to hi/ wantt pou sepyge res pigis:
allo to vs doist dylpht: & he seide
allo wo to zomū wyle mē of laue/
for ze chargin mē wip brypys
whiche pei mou not be: & ze
zomū self. wip zomū o fyingur wu
chen not pe heupnessis/wo to zomū
pat bylden tombis of pfetis: &
zomū sadris sloulen hē/ tren
ly ze wittenen: p' ze conkēten to
pe werkis of zomū sadris/for
pei sloule hē: but ze bylden her
sepulchris/verfore ye wylsom of
god seide/ & shal seide to hem p'
fetis & apontis: & of hem rei sh
ulen sle & purlyke/ pat pe blo
od of alle pfetis p' was shed fro
pe makig of ye world: be sougt
of vis genaciou/ fro pe blood
of pe nit abel: to pe blood of a
charie: p' was slayn bi tikere
anter & pe hous/so/ & seie to:
it shal be sougt of vis genaciou/
wo to zomū wyle men of pe laue:
for ze han takū alwey ye kepe

of kyming: & ze zomū self entriden
not: & ze han forbedū hem p' entde
and whine he seide res pigis to he
re farilees & wyle mē of laue: bi
gimen grenouly to zgenante:
& stoppe his mony of many pigis:
aspyngē hi/ and sekynge to take
su pig of his mony: to acule hi/
And whine moche/ **C. xi.**
peple stood aboute. so p'
rei treede ech on oyr: he
bigan to seie to hile dylphts/ be ze
war of ye soundis of ye farile
es: p' is p'ocrisye/for no pig is
hild: p' shal not be shewid/ ney
hid: pat shal not be wist/for whi
yo pigis pat ze han seid in derknes
sis: shule be seid in lizt: & pat pat
ze han spokū in eer in couchis: sh
al be prechid in roofes/and/ & seie
to zomū my frendis/be ze not a feerd
of hem pat sleen ye body: & astur
res pigis han no more what pei
shulen do/but/ & shal shewe to
zomū: who ze shulen drede/drede ze
hi: pat astur he hay slayn: he hay
pouwer to seide into helle: & so/ &
seie to zomū: drede ze hi/ wher fine
sparowis ben not seld for alweyue
halpens: & oon of hem is not i for
zetynge bifoze god: but allo alle
ye heeris of zomū heed: ben non
bnd/ p'fore nyle ze drede: ze ben
of more prys pan many sparowis/
treuly/ & seie to zomū ech mā pat
knowlechy me bifoze me: māns
lone shal knowleche hi bifoze pe
aūgelis of god/but he p' demper
me bifoze mē: shal be demped bifoze
pe aūgelis of god/and ech p' seiy
aword azeus māns lone: it shal
be forzomū to hi/but it shal not
be forzomū to hym: pat blakfemy

azeus pe hooly god. **A**nd whine
pei leden zomū into synagogis: & to
maistratis & potestatis: nyle ze
be bily hous or what ze shule an
swer: or what ze shule seie/for pe
hooly god shal teche zomū in pat
our: what it bihouey zomū to seie/
and oon of ye peple seide to hym/
maistr seie to my broyer p' he
departe wip me pe eritage/ &
he seide to hi: man who odyne
me a domelma or a departer on
zomū: & he seide to hē/ se ze & be war
of al conetile/for pe hē of aman
is not in ye abundaunce of yo pigis:
whiche he weldy/and he tolde to hē.
a licnesse & seide/ ye feeld of a ry
che man: brynte forp plenteuou
fruytis: & he pouyte wip yne hi
self: & seide what shal/ & do for/
haue not whidm/ & shal gadre my fruy
tis: & he seiy vis pig/ & shal do/
& shal proue don my bernis: &
& shal make gretter/and yidm/
& shal gadre alle pigis p' growe
to me & my goodis/ & & shal seie
to my soule/ soule pou hast many
goodis kept into ful many zeeris/
rette p' etc drynke: & make feest
and god seide to hi/ fool in vis myt
pei shulen take yi hē fro pee/ &
whos shulen po pigis be: pat p'
hast arayed: so is he pat treson
ryp to hi self: & is not riche in god/
& he seide to hile dylphts/ p'fore/ &
seie to zomū: nyle ze be bily to zomū
hē: what ze shule etc/ ney to zoe
body: wip what ze shule be clodid/
ye hē is more pan mete: & pe body
more pa clodig/ biholde ze croubis:
for rei lounen not ney repen/ to
whiche is no celer ne berne: &
god fedy hē/ how moche more ze

ben of more prijs pan pei. & who
of zoi bypenkyng. may pinte
to co cubite to his stature. yfore
if ze moien not pat pat is leest.
What ben ze bly of opur pigis.
bihold ze ye hlyes of ye feeld how
pei wesen/pei tranele not ney
spynen. & i seie to zoi. y ney
salomo in al his glorie was clo
pid as oon of pyle. And if god do
yrius ye hey pat to day is in
ye feeld. & to morowe is cast into
an ouen. how myche more zoi
of lytil fey. & nyle ze seke. Wht
ze shulen ete oz what ze shulen
drynke. & nyle ze be reishd an hy
for folkis of ye world. seken alle
yese pigis. & zoi. fadir woot. y
ze neten alle yese pigis nepeles
seke ze first ye kygdom of god. &
alle yese pigis shulen be cast to
zoi. **N**yle ze lytel floc drede. for
it pleside to zoi. fadir. to zoi. &
a kyngdom. selle ze po pigis pat
ze han i possession. & zoi. almes.
& make ze to zoi. lachelis pat wer
en not olde. trelour pat failip not
in heuenes whidur a yeeft neyep
not. neyep monye destruyep
for wher is y. tresour. y. y. y.
herte shal be. **W**e zoi. leendis
gud aboue. & lanches brenyge
in zoi. hōdis. & be ze lyk to men
pat abyden her lord. wshane he
shal turne azen fro ye weddi
gis. pat whine he shal come &
knocke. anoon y. opyne to hy.
blelid be po seruantis. y. whine
ye lord shal come. he shal fynde
wakige. trenly. y. seye to zoi.
y. he shal gude hy self. & make
hem sitte to mete. & he shal
go & serue he. and if he come i

ye secide wakig. & if he come i
ye yuide wakig. & fynde so. po
seruantis ben blelid. & wite ze
yis pig. for if an holebonde mā
wite i what oin ye yeeft wote
come. soyei he shulde wake &
not snuffe. hys hous to be myned
and be ze redy. for in what oin
ze gessen not. māns lone shal
come. & peti. seide to hi. lord seip
est y. yis parable to vs. oz to alle.
and ye lord seide. who gessid yon
is a trewe dispenser. & a prouet.
whom ye lord hay ordeyned on his
meyne to zoi. hem i tyme. mesu
re of whete. blelid is pat serua
nt. pat ye lord whine he come y
shal fynde so doynge. verily.
seye to zoi. y. on alle pigis y. he
weeldur. he shal ordeyne hy. y.
if pat seruaunt seye in hys herte.
my lord tarney to come. & bigyn
ne to smyte chyliden & handma
dens. & ete & drynke & be fillid
ouer mesur. ye lord of pat ser
uaunt shal come in ye day pat
he hapip not. & ye oin pat he
woot not. and shal departe hi.
& pinte his part wip ansey
ful me. **B**ut pilke seruaunt pat
knew ye wille of his lord. & ma
de not hi redy. & dide not astur
his wille. shal be betu wip ma
ny betigis. but he pat knew not
& dide woyri pigis of storkis. sh
al be betu wip fense. for to ech
mā to whō. moche is zoi. mo
che shal be azid of hi. and y.
shulen are more of hi. to whō
y. bntoken moche. y. cam to se
te fier into erpe. & what wote
y. but y. it be kyndlyd. and y.
haue to be baptyfid wip a bapty

and how am y constreyned. til
pat it be parfyty don. **W**eene
ze y. i. cam to zoi. pces ito erpe.
nay y. seye to zoi. but departig
for fro yis tyme. y. shule be fy
ne departid i oon hous. y. shu
len be departid azen tveyne.
& tveyne shule be deptyd azen
y. y. fadir. azen ye loue. &
ye loue azen ye fadir. y. modur
azen ye douzter. & ye douzter a
zen ye modur. ye holebond is
modur azen ye lones wyf. & ye
lones wyf. azen hie holebondis
modur. and he seide also to ye pe
ple. whine ze seen a cloude ryft
ge fro ye sime goyng don. a
noon ze sepen reyn comen. & lo it
is don. and whine ze seen ye son
blobyge. ze sepen pat heete sh
al be. & it is don. **P**ocritis ze
kinnen proue ye face of heuene
& of erpe. but how preue ze not
yis tyme. but what. & of zoi
silt ze demen not pat pat is nist
but whine yon goist wip y. ad
uerlarie in ye weye to ye pnce.
do blynesse to be delnyed fro
hi. lest perauentur he take
yee to ye dometina. & ye domet
mā btake yee to a manful ar
er. & ye manful arer seide
yee into pson. y. seie to yee yon
shalt not go fro y. til yon
zeld ye latte ferris. **E**m. **A**
d sū men were pre
sent i pat tyme. pat teel
den to hi of ye galilees.
whos blood pilat mygide wip ye
sacrificas of hem. and he anse
ride & seide to he. weene ze y. rese
me of galile were syneris more
pan alle galilees. for y. suffri

den such pigis. y. seie to nay. alle
ze shulen peristhe in lyk maner.
but ze haue penance. & as po etz
tetene. on whiche ye tour in sy
loa fel doil & slois he. gessen ze
for y. were detouris more pan
alle me. pat dibellen i yerlm. y.
seie to zoi. nay. but also ze alle shu
len peristhe. if ze doe not penan
ce. & he seide yis liknesse. aman
hadde a fige tre plantid in his
vyne zerd. & he cam sekige fruyt
in it & fond noon. and he seide to
ye tiber of ye vyne zerd. lo y. zee
yis be sye. y. coom sekende fruyt
i yis fige tre. & y. fynde noon. y.
fore kute it don. wher to occupy
it ye erpe. & he ansewerige. seide
to hi. lord suffre it also yis zee.
ye while y. delue abonte it. & y.
shal dūge it. if it shal make frui
t. if nay. in tyme comyge yon
shalt kute it don. & he was techi
ge in her synagoge in ye sabotis.
And lo anōman f. hadde a spirit
of sykenesse exetene zeeis. &
was crofid. & ney oin mā my
te loke upward. whom whine he
hadde seyn. he clepide to hi. & lei
de to hir. Woman yon art delny
ed of y. sykenesse. & he lettide on
hir. hys hondis. & anoon she stood
uprit. & glorified god. & ye p
ce of ye synagoge anseweride ha
uyge dedeyn for he hadde heehd
in ye saboth. & he seide to ye peple.
y. ben hie dayes. in whiche it bi
houey to worche. y. fore come ze
in yele. & be ze heehd. & not i ye
day of saboth. but ye lord anse
ride to hi & seide. **P**ocrite wher
ech of zoi. vntrey not in ye sa
both. hys ore oz alle fro ye crache.

ledy to watn: bihofte it not
pis dougtr of habzahi. who sa
thanas hap bound lo eritene ze
ris. to be vnboudu of pis boond
in ye day of pe laboth: & whine he
seide pefe pigis: alle hile adu-
ries weren a thamed and al pe
peple ioped in alle pigis: pat we-
ren gloriously doen of hi. **¶** fore
he seide to what pig is ye fig do
of god lyk: & to what pig shal
gelle it to be lyk: it is lyk to a co-
of leuene: which a man took &
caste into his jerd: & it wat: &
was maid into a greet tre: &
foulis of pe er: restide in ye bran-
chis of: & eft soone he seide to
what pig shal i gelle ye king-
dom of god lyk: it is lyk to sour-
doy: pat a woman took & hidde
it into ye meluris of mele: til
al were sourid. **¶** And he wete
by citees & castels: techinge & ma-
kinge a iourney into ierlm: & a
man seide to hi: lord if per ben fe-
we: pat ben lamed: & he seide to
hem: stryne ze to entri by ye stre-
it: zate for i seie to zoi. manpe
seeken to entri: & pei shule not
monke for whine ye holschonde
ma is entrid & ye doze is clolid:
ze shulen bigyne to stonde wip
oute for: & knoeke at ye doze &
seye: lord opyne to us: & he shal
answer: & seie to zoi: i knowe &
not: of whems ze ben: pane ze
shulen bigyne to seye: we han
etū bifoze pee & drūku: & m ou-
re strectis pou hast tanyt: & he
shal seie to zoi: i knowe zoi not:
of whems ze ben: gop away fro
me: alle ze worcheris of wickid-
nesse: pere shal be wepyng &

grutys of teep. whine ze shal be
abzahi & ianc & jacob: & alle pe
pfetis in ye figdom of god: & zoi
to be putt out: & pei shule come
fro ye east & west: & fro ye nor-
th & sou: & shulen sitte at ye mete
in ye rewme of god: & lo pei pat
werē ye firste: ben ye laste: & pei
pat werē ye laste: ben ye firste.
¶ In pat day sume of farilees ca-
me ny: & seiden to hi: go out & go
out & go fro hems: for eroude wo-
le sle pee and he seide to hem: go
ze & seye ze to pat for: lo i caste
out fendis: & i make parfith: hee
pis. to day & to morwe: & ye yud-
de day i am euidid: nepeles it bi-
houep me to day & to morwe: &
ye day y answer: to walke: for it
fallip not a pfete to perillhe out
of ierlm: ierlm ierlm pat elect-
pfetis: & stouest hem y be sent
to pee: hons ofte wolde i gadre
to gidre y tones. as a byrd gadry
his nest vnder fepetis: & pou wol-
dist not: lo zoi: hons shal be left
to zoi: desert: & i seie to zoi: ze
shulen not se me: til it come.
Whine ze shulen seie blestid
is he pat comep i ye name of ye
lord. **¶** **C^m xij.**
¶ And it was don whine he
hadde entrid ito ye hous
of a prince of farilees. in ye sa-
both to ete bread: pei aspienden hi
and lo aman spk in ye draperye:
was bifoze hi: and ihe answerd
ge spak to ye wyle me of lank
& to ye farilees & seide: wher:
it is leetful to heele in ye laboth:
& pei heelden pees: & ihe took &
heehde hi: & leet hi go: & he an-
swerde to he & seide: whos alle

or ore of zoi shal falle into a
pitte: & he shal not auoo drabe
hi out in ye day of laboth: & pei
myte not answer: to hi to pes
pigis. **¶** He seide also a parable
to men bedū to a feeste: & biheeld
hons pei chesyn ye firste sittig
placis: & seide to hem: whane y
art bedū to ludalis: sitte not
at ye mete in ye firste place:
lest pamenture a worrier pan
pou be bedū of hi: and lest he co-
me y clepde pee & hi: & seie to pee:
zyne place to pis: & pane pou sh-
alt bigyne wip shame: to holde
ye loweste place: but whine pou
art bedū to a feeste: go & litte dou
in ye laste place: y whine he comep
pat bad pee to ye feeste: he seye
to pee frend come hys: pane wor-
shyp shal be to pee bifoze me y
sitten at ye mete: for ech y enhaū
cip hi: shal be lowid: & he y meky
hym: shal be hyed. **¶** And he se-
de to hi: pat hadde bedū hi to ye feel-
te: whine pou makst a mete or a
souper: nyle pou clepe y frendis:
nepir y brupen: ney colyns: ney
nereboris: ne riche me: lest pane
tur pei bidde pee azen to ye feeste:
& it be zoldū azen to pee: but whi-
ne pou makst a feeste: clepe po-
ze men: feble: crokid: & blynde: &
pou shalt be blestid: for pei han
not wherof: to zelde pee: for it sh-
al be zoldū to pee: in ye rufing
azen of nist me: & whine oon of
hem pat laten to gidre at ye me-
te hadde herd pes pigis: he seide
to hi: blestid is he y shal ete bred
in ye rewme of god: & he seide to
hi: i mā made a greet souper:
& clepde manpe: & he sente his

seruant in ye our of soup: to seie
to me y were bedū to ye feeste:
y pei shulden come: for now alle
pigis ben redy: and alle bigimen
to gidre to ercile hem: ye firste
seide: i hane bouzt a toben: & i
hane nede to go out: & se it: i pie
pee: hane me extulid: & petopre
seide: i hane bouzt fyne zokkis
of oxū: & i go to pue he: i pie
pee: hane me extulid: & anopir
seide: i hane weddid a wyf: & i
foze i may not come: & ye seruant
turnede azen: & tolde pes pigis to
his lord: pane ye holschonde man
was wryp: & seide to his seruant:
go out sibype into ye grete stre-
tis & smale strectis of ye citee: &
brynge yn hdir poze me & feble:
blynde & crokid: & ye seruant seide:
lord it is don as pou hast coman-
did: & zit y is a voyde place: and
ye lord seide to ye seruant: go out
into weyes & heggis: & constrey-
ne me to entri: pat my hous be
fulfillid: for i seye to zoi: y noon
of yo men pat ben clepid: shal
taste my soper: and moche peple
wente wip hy: & he turnede & se-
de to he: if ony man comep to me
& hatip not his sadn: & modn: &
wyf & tones: & brupen & sultris:
& zit his owne lyk: he may not be
my diltple: and he pat berip not
his cross: & comep after me: may
not be my diltple. **¶** For who of
zoi willige to bylde a tour: wher-
he first sitte not: & kointep ye
spenlis y ben nedeful: if he hane
to parfoume: lest after y he hap
lett ye fundament: & moib not p
fourme: alle pat seen bigyne
to stozne hi & seye: for pis mā bigā

to bilde: & myzte not make an
ende: or what kyng wat wole
go to do a bateile agens anopn
kyng: wher he sittip not first
& biwenkyt: if he may wy ten
poufend go agens hy: wat comen
agyn hy wy tibenety poufend:
elhs 3it while he is aferr: he
sendige a messanger: preier
po rygis wat ben of pees: so y
foze ech of you wat foxlaky not
alle rygis wat he hay: may not
be my diltiple. Salt is god: but
if salt vanis: the: in what ryg
shal it be saueryd: ney i erpe:
ney in dughille it is profita
ble: but it shal be cast out: he
wat hay peris of heerig heer: he

Ald puppl. **C. 26.**
cans & synful me we
ren neryuge to hym:
to heer hi: & ye fariles & dmi
bis gruchide: seynge: for yis
relleyner synful me: & ety
wyr hem: and he spak to he yis
parable & seide: what ma of you
wat hay an hūdrū theep: & if
he hay lost oon of hem: wher
he leuey not wynty & nyne i
desert: & goy to it: wat perulthi
de: til he fynde it: & whne he
hay fouden it: he wyep & leip it
on his shuldrys: and he comen
hoom & clepy to gidre hile fre
dis & negeborns & leip to hem:
be ze glade wy me: for i haue
foude my theep: wat hadde pe
rultid: & i seie to you: so ioye
shal be in heuene on o synful mā
doynge penance: more pan on
wynty & nyne mite wat han no
uede to penance: or what wō
mā hanngye ten belaitis: & if

she hay lost o belait: wher she
teendip not a lanterne. & tur
ney uplodon ye hous: & sek
diligently til wat she fynde it:
and whne she hay foudū: she
clepy to gidre frendis & nege
borns: & seip: be ze glade wy
me: for i haue foudū ye belait:
wat i hadde lost: so i seie to you:
ioye shal be before angelis of
god: on o synful mā doynge
penance. **C. 27.** And he seide and
hadde tiber sonis: ye zonger
of he seide to ye fadir: fadir:
gyue me ye porcion of catel
wat fallip to me: & he departid
to he ye catel: & not aferr na
ny dayes. Whane alle rygis we
ren gedud to gidre: ye zonger
sone wente fory in pilgryma
ge ito a ferr kūtze: and yere
he wastid hile goodis: in luy
ge lecherously: and aferr wat
wat he hadde endid alle rygis: a
strong hūgr was maid i wat
cūtze: & he bigan to haue nede:
& he wente & brow hym to oon
of ye citeyenes of wat cūtze:
and he sente hi into his tolm:
to fede sibyn: & he coneytū to
fille his wombe of ye coddis
wat ye hoggis eeten: & no mā
zak to hi: & he tuede agen into
hi silt: & leip: how many hynd
me in my fadis hous han plen
te of loones: & i perulthe he
poxis hūgr: i shal ryse up
& go to my fadir: & i shal seie
to hi: fadir: i haue syned ito
heuene & before pee: & now i
am not worpi to be clepid y
sone: make me as oon of ym
hynd me: & he roos up & am

to his fadir: & whne he was in
aferr: his fadir sez hi: & was
aferr by mercy: and he ran &
fel on his necke: & kistid hym:
and ye sone seide to hi: fadir:
haue syned into heuene & before
pee: & now i am not worpi to
be clepid y sone: and ye fadir
seide to his seruantis: sibyn bri
ge ze fory ye firtie stoole: & clo
pe ze hym: & gyue ze a ryg i his
hond: & sthoon on his feet: and
brynge ze a fat calf & slee ze:
& ete we & make we feste: for
yis my sone was deed: & hay ly
ued agen: he perultid: & is
foudū: & alle men bigimen
to ete: but his eldre sone was
in ye feeld: & whane he cam &
neryede to ye hous: he herde a
synfoupe & a croude: & he cle
pid oon of ye seruantis: & as
ide wat pes rygis were: & he
seide to hy: y broyr is commi:
& y fadir slow: a fat calf: for
he relleynde hi sak: & he was
wzoy: & wolde not come yu:
perfore his fadir zede out: &
bigan to preie hi: & he answere
rite to his fadir & seide: lo so
many zenis i serue pee: & i
neue brak y comandemēt: &
you neuere zane to me akide:
wat i wy my frendis shulde
haue etū: but aferr wat yis y
sone wat hay deuourid his sub
stance wy hooris cam: y haue
slayn to hym a fat calf: & he
seide to hi: sone y art ouermo
re wy me: & alle my rygis be
yme: but it bihoft to make fe
este & to haue ioye: for yis y
broyr was deed: & lyuede agen:

he perultid & is foudū. **C. 28.**
And he seide also to hile dilti
phs: ver was a ryche
mā wat hadde a baylyf:
and yis was defamed to hi: as
he hadde wastid his goodis: & he
clepid hym & seide to hy: wat
heer: y yis ryg of pee: & zelde
refenngye of y baylyf: for you
myzt not now be baylyf: & ye
baylyf seide wy yue hy silt: wlt
shal i do: for my lord taky atsey
fro me ye baylyf: dehe may i
not: i shame to bege: i woot
wat i shal do: wat whane i
am remoued fro ye baylyf: yei
relleyue me into her hous: yei
foze whne alle ye dettouris of
his lord were clepid to gidre:
he seide to ye firtie: how moche
owst you to my lord: and he
seide: an hūdrū barels of oyle:
& he seide to hi: take y caucioū:
& sette loone & wryt fyfety af
turward he seide to anopn: &
how moche owst you: which
answerde an hūdrū corys of
whete: & he seide to hym: take
y lettris: & wryt foure stoze:
& ye lord preiude ye baylyf of wat
fiduēlle: for he hadde don prude
ty: for ye sonis of yis world: ben
more prudent in her genacioū:
pan ye sonis of lyt: & i seie to
you: make ze to you frendis of
ye richesse of wickidnesse: wat
whne ze shulen fayle: yei rel
leyue you into euilastige taber
nadis: he p is trewe in ye leeste
pis: is trewe also in ye moze:
& he wat is wickid i a lytel ring:
is wickid also in ye moze: perfore
if ze were not trewe in ye wic

bed ying of richell. who shal bita
ke to you pat pat is verrey. & if
ze weren not treibe in ope mems
ying. who shal yne to you pat
pat is zoni. **N**o seruant may
serue to tibe lordis. for ep he
shal hate peton. & loue petoy.
ep he shal drave to petoon &
shal dispile petoy. ze moir not
serue to god & to richesse. but pe
fairlees pat weren couentouk.
herde alle pes pigis. & rei doz
nyden hi. & he seide to he. ze it be
pat iusticien you bifoze me. but
god hay knowen zoni. her tis.
for pat pat is hi. to men. is ab
hominacion bifoze god. pe laipe
& pftis. til to zoon. fro pat ty
me pe reikme of god is enage
lid. & ech man doir violence to
it. forsoy it is lyter. heuene & er
re to passe. pan p^o tial falle go
re laipe. **E**ueri ma. pat forsa
ky his wyf. & weddy anoper.
doir lecherie. and he p^o weddy
pe wyf forsa. of pe holebonde.
doir anoutrie. **T**her was a ry
che man & was clopid in purp
& wht silk. & eet euery day sthy
myst. & p^o was a beggere lalarus
by name. pat lay at his zate ful
of bylis. & couentide to be fulfil
lid of pe crumes pat fillen dou
fro pe ryche man's boord. & no
ma. zaf to hi. but houndis came.
& lokede his bylis. & it was don
pat pe begger diete. & was born
of angelis into abrahams bosum.
and pe ryche man was deed also.
& was buried in helle. & he reside
his yzen. whane he was in tur
mentis. & laiz abrahm aferr.
& lalarus in his bosum. & he crede

Lende. fadir abrahm haue mern
on me. & lende lalarus p^o he dy
pe pe ende of his fingur in wa.
to kele my tuge. for i am turme
tid in pis flauime. and abrahm
seide to hym. soue haue mynde.
for you hast ressed good p
gis in pi lyf. lalarus also yuel
pigns. but he is uois conforid.
& you art turmentid. and i alle
pes pigns. a greet derk place
is stablithid bityre us. & zoni
pat pei p^o volen fro hem. passe
to zoni. moir not. ney fro pe
nis passe on hydur. & he seide.
p^oane. i. preye pee fadir. pat p^o
seide hym into pe hous of my
fadir. for i haue syne byperen.
pat he witnesse to he. lest also
pei come into pis place of tur
mentis. and abrahm seide to hi.
pei han moysen & pe pftis. he
re pei hem. & he seide. way fadir
abrahm. but if ony of deed me
go to hem. pei shulen do penan
ce. & he seide to hi. if pei heere
not moyses & profetis. neyr
if ony of deed men ryse azen. pei
shulen bileue to hy. **E**ueri
And ihu seide to hile dis
ciphs. it is impossible.
pat adaudis come not
but wo to pe pat ma. by whom
pei comen. it is more pftable
to hym. if anylue stoon be put
aboute his necke. & he be cast in
to pe see. pan pat he stande
oon of pes lytle. ta. ze heede zoni
silk. & p^o biopur hay syned azen
pee. blame hym. & if he do penan
ce. forgyne hym. and if seueue
synis in pe day he do syne azen
pee. & seueue synis in pe day. he

be conitid to pee. & seye it forpi
ker me. forgyne you hy. and pe
aposthis seiden to pe lord. euer
esse to us seye. & pe lord seide.
if ze han seye as pe corn of seue
ney. ze shulen seye to pis more
tre. be you draibn up bi pe roo
te. & be ouer plantid into pe see.
& it shal obeie to zoni. but who
of zoni hay a seruant eringe or le
sewysse oxis. which seye to hym
whane he turney azen fro pe fe
eld. anoon go & sitte to mete. &
seye not to hym. make redy p^o
soupe. & gide pee & serue me. whi
le i ete & drynke. & aftr pis you
shalt ete & drynke. wher he hay
grace to pat seruant. for he dide
pat pat he comandide hym. nay
i gelle. so ze whine ze han don al
le pigis pat ben comandid to zoni.
seye ze we ben vnprofitable ser
uants. we han don pat p^o we
ouzten to do. **A**nd it was don pe
while ihu wente into ierlm. he
passide ynz. pe myddel of samu
rie & galile. and whine he entrid
into a castel. ten leprouse me ca
men azen hi. whiche stood afer.
& reseden her vois & seiden. ihu
comandour. haue mercy on us.
& as he spz hom. he seide. go ze. & se
ye ze zoni to prestis. and it was
don pe while pei wenten. pei we
ren clenid. & oon of hem as he spz.
p^o he was clenid. wente aze mag
nifyinge god. & a greet vois.
and he sel don on pe face bifoze
his feet. & dide pankis. & pis
was a samaritan. & ihu answeri
de & seide. wher ten be not clenid.
& wher ben pe nune. p^o is noon
fondi p^o turnede azen & zaf glorie

to god. but pis alien. and he seide
to hym. ryse up go you. for pi stey
hay maid pe laif. **A**nd he was
arid of pe fairlees. whine pe reu
me of god comey. & he answere
to hem & seide. pe reuime of god
comey not wy asspyng. neyr
pei shule seie. lo her. or lo yere.
for lo pe reuime of god is wy inc
zoni. & he seide to hile disciphs. day
es shulen come whine ze shule
desire to se o day of man's lone.
& ze shulen not se. & pei shule
seye to zoni. lo heere & lo yere. mile
ze go. ney aze ze. for as leit sthy
myge from vndir heuene. sthyner
into pe pigis pat ben vndir heue
ne. so shal man's lone be i his
day. but first it byhouey hy to
suffre many pigis. & to be repro
ued of pis generacion. & as it sh
don in pe dayes of noe. so it sh
al be in pe dayes of man's lone.
pei eeten & drunken. weddide wy
ues. & weren zoni to weddiges.
til into pe day. & pe which noe en
tride into pe sthy. & pe greet flo
od cam & loste all. als as it was
don in pe dayes of loth. pei eete
& drunken. bouzten & selden. plan
tiden & bildeten. but pe day p^o loth
wente out of sodom. pe lord rey
nede hyer & bymistoon fro heue
ne & loste alle. lyk pis pig. it shal
be. in what day man's lone sh
al be stheuid. in pat hour he y
is in pe root & his vessels i pe hous.
come he not don to take hem a
wey. & he pat shal be in pe feeld.
also turne not azen bihynde. be
ze myndeful of pe wyf of loth. who
euere seke to make his lyf laif.
shal lese it. and who euer. leesip

it: that quene it / but / seie to
 you / in pat nyzt tveyne shulen
 be in o bed / on that be takn: &
 petos forlakn: tveyn wimen sh
 ulen be gr'ndige to gidre / peton
 shal be takn: & petos forlakn
 tveyne in afield: peton shal be
 takn: & petos left: pei answerē
 & sepen to hy / wher lord which
 seide to hem / wher ever ye body
 shal be: yidur: shulen be gadrid
 to gidre also ye eghs / *xxv.*

And he seide also to hem
 a parable: y it bihouey
 to preve evermore: & not
 tale: & seide: per was a huge in
 a tree: pat dzedde not god: ney
 shamede of me: and a widowe
 was in pat citee: & she cam to
 hym & seide: venge me of my ad
 ner sarie: and he wolde not long
 tyme: but aft' ves pigis he seide
 wip yne hy sult: yon / y dzedde not
 god: & shame not of man: neye
 les for pis widowe is hein to me.
 I shal venge hy: lest at ye laste
 she couyge condeyne me: & pe
 ye lord seide: heere is what ye
 domelma of wikkidnesse seip: &
 wher god shal not do v'raunce
 of pis chofne cringe to hy nyzt
 & day: & shal hane pacience in
 hem: sopeky / seie to you: for soo
 ne he shal do v'raunce of hem.

Thepeles gessit pon pat wanes
 lone couyge shal fynde seip in
 erpe: & and he seide also to su men
 pat tristete in hem sult: as pei we
 reu'rtful: & dispilden ope: pis
 parable seynge: tveyne me wen
 ten up into ye temple: to preve
 peton a farilee: & petos a pup
 plian: & ye farile stood & preiede

by hi sult: pete pigis & seide: god
 I do panfigis to yee: for I am not
 as ope men: raneynomris: & mist
 anowtrereis: as also pis pupli
 can: / I faste tveyn in ye woke:
 I zyne tytes of alle pigis: y I ha
 ne in posselhou: and ye pupli
 stood a fer: & wolde ney reyle his
 pzen to heuene: but smoot his
 brest: & seide: god be merciful to
 me syner: treuly / seie to you:
 pis zede dolen into his hous: & wa
 nified fro ye of: for ech pat en
 haunty hy: shal be mad long: & he
 pat meky hy: shal be enhauntyd.
And pei broun ten to hy zonge
 children: pat he shulde touche
 hem: and whne pe dupleis say
 en pis pig: yei blanede he: but
 ihe depde to gidre he: & seide: out
 fre ze childe to come to me: &
 nyle ze forbete hem: for of o su
 che is ye kigdom of heuene: treu
 ly / seie to you: who eie shal not
 take ye k'ngdom of god as a ch
 ild: he shal not ent' into it: and
 a pnce aride hy: & seide: goode mal
 tur in what yng: doynge: shal
 I weelde enelastynge lye: & ihe
 seide to hy: what leit you me go
 od: no man is good but god also
 ne: you knowst ye comande men
 tis: you shalt not sle: you shalt
 not do lecherie: you shalt not do
 yeste: pon shalt not sepe fall wit
 nessyng: wozldhye in fadir: & in
 modir: wylch seide: / I hane kept
 alle ves pigis fro my zongye: &
 whne pis yng: was herd ihe se
 ide to hy: zt o yng: failey to yee:
 selle you alle yngis: pat y' hant
 & zyne to pore me: & you shalt
 hane tre four in heuene: & come

& hane y' me: whne ves pigis
 weren herd: he was sozweftul:
 for he was ful ryche: and ihe se
 ynge hy maad sozn: seide: how
 hard pei pat han money: shulde
 entre into ye kigdom of god: for
 it is lyter: a camel to passe pur:
 a needhis yze: van a ryche man
 to entre into ye kigdom of god:
 & pei y' herden ves pigis: seiden:
 who may be maad sat: & he se
 ide to hem: yo yngis: pat ben in
 possiblie anentis me: ben possi
 ble anentis god: but petre sei
 de: lo we han left alle pigis: &
 han suwed yee: and he seide to hy:
 treuly / seie to you: y is no m'n
 pat shal forlake hous or fadir
 & modir: or bryen or wyf or chil
 dren or feoldis: for ye reuue of
 god: & shal not resleyue many
 mo pigis in pis tyme: & in ye wo
 rd to compynge enelastynge lye:
And ihe took his twelue disciples
 & seide to he: lo we goen up to
 ierlm: & alle pigis shulde be en
 did pat ben w'mu by ye profe
 tis of mams lone: for he shal
 be bitrayed to hepen me: & he
 shal be stozned & stourgid & bi
 spat: and aftir pat pei han sto
 gid: pei shulen sle hy: & ye prid
 de day he shal ryle asen: & pei
 vndir stoden no pig: of rese: &
 pis word was hid fro hem: & pei
 vndir stoden not yo pigis: pat
 weren leid: but it was don wha
 ne ihe cam nyz to ierito: a blind
 man sat bysides ye weye: & beg
 gide: & whne he herte ye peple
 passige: he aride what pis was:
 and pei seiden to hy: pat ihe of
 nazareth passide: & he cryede &

seide: ihu ye lone of danny: hane
 mercy on me: And pei pat wen
 ten bifoze blamyden hym: pat
 he shulde be stille: but he crye
 de moche ye moze: pon lone of da
 ny: hane mercy on me: and ihe
 stood & comaudide hi to be brouzt
 fory to hy: and whne he cam nyz:
 he aride hym & seide: what wolt
 you pat / I shal do to yee: & he sei
 de lord pat / se: and ihe seide to hy:
 bihoold: y ferp hay maad ye sat:
 and anon he sayz: & suede hym:
 & magnified god: and al ye pe
 ple as it sayz: zat heryng to god:
And ihe turne *xxvi.*
 de asen & walkide to jeri
 co: and lo ama sache bi
 name: & pis was a pnce of pup
 phicus: & he was ryche: & he louz
 te to se ihu who he was: & he nyz
 te not for ye peple: for he was ly
 til in statut: & he ran bifoze & an
 ede into a sycomour tre: to se hy:
 for he was to passe fro yems: and
 ihe biheeld vp whne he cam to ye
 place: & sayz hym: & seide to hy: sache
 haafte yee & come don: for to day
 I moot dwelle in yin hous: & he
 hyngre cam don: & ioyge resley
 uede hy: & whne alle men sayen:
 ye gruathiden seynge: for he hadde
 turned to a synful man: but sache
 stood & seide to ye lord: lo lord / y zyn
 ne ye half of my good to pore me:
 and if I hane ony pig: defraudid
 ony man: I zelde foure so moche:
 ihe seip to hy: for to day heelp
 is maad to pis hous: for pat he is
 abrahams lone: for mams lone
 cam to beke & make sat: pat pig
 pat perithide: **W**hne pei herde
 ves yngis he addide & seide a pa

table for pat he was nyz ierlm.
 & for peigesside p' anoon pe king
 dom of god shulde be thewid/ per
 fore he seide/ a worpi mā wente
 into aser citre/ to take to hym
 a kingdom & to turne azen/ and
 whne his ten seruautis weren
 clepid/ he zaf to hem ten besai-
 tis/ & seide to hem/ chaffar ze/ til
 i come/ but his cite seynes hatide
 hy/ & leuten a messanger after
 hym/ & leiden/ we wolen not pat
 he regne on vs/ and it was don/ the
 turnede azen/ whne he hadde ta-
 ke pe kigdom/ and he comaūdide
 his seruautis to be clepid/ to whi-
 che he hadde zyne money/ to wi-
 te how moche ech hadde wīne
 by chaffarig/ & ye furste cam & sei-
 de/ lord/ pi besait hay wīne ten
 besaitis/ he seide to hy/ wel be p'
 good seruait/ for in lytel pig/ p'
 hast be trewe/ pou shalt be ha-
 uyge power on ten citees/ & pe
 copr cam & seide/ lord pi besait
 hay maid fyue besaitis/ & to pis
 he seide/ & be pou on fyue citees/
 & pe pydde cam & seide/ lord lo pi
 besait p' i hadde putte xpm in a shi-
 darie/ for i dradde pee/ for pou
 art a sterne mā/ p' tabit anwey.
 pat pat pou settidest not/ & pou
 repist pat pat pou hast not so
 wīl/ he seip to hy/ wickid seruait
 of pi moup/ i deme pee/ wistit
 pou p' i am a sterne mā/ takige
 anwey pat pig/ pat i settide not/
 & repige p' ring/ pat i seip not/
 and whn hast pou not zomū my
 money to pe boord/ & i comyge
 shulde haue axid it wīp/ whn is/
 & he seide to men stondige nyz/
 take ze anwey fro hy/ pe besait:

& zyne ze to hym pat hay ten be-
 saitis/ & rei seiden to hym/ lord
 he hay ten besaitis/ & rei seide
 to hy/ lord he hay ten besaitis/
 and i seie to zomū/ to ech mā p' hay
 it shal be zomū/ & he shal encre-
 se/ but fro hy pat hay not/ alld
 pat pig/ pat he hay shal be takū
 of hy/ nepeles brynge ze hūw
 po myne enemyes pat wolden
 not pat i regnede on hem/ & ale
 ze bifore me/ and whne pes pi-
 gis weren seid/ he wente bifore
 & zede up to ierlm/ and it was
 don whne ihe cam nyz to bechfa-
 ge & betanye at pe moūt pat is
 clepid of olyuete/ he sente hūw
 dūplis & seide/ go ze into pe castel/
 pat is azens zomū/ into wīnd/ as ze
 entren ze shulen fynde a colt of
 a alle tyed/ on which neile man
 sat/ vntye ze hy/ & brynge ze
 to me/ & if ony mā are zomū whi-
 ze vntye/ yus ze shulen seie to
 hy/ for pe lord desirep his werk/ & rei
 pat weren sent/ wente forp/ and
 fonden as he seide to he/ a colt ston-
 dige/ and whne rei vntyeden pe
 colt/ pe lordis of it seide to he/ whi-
 vntye ze ye colt/ & rei seiden/ for
 pe lord hay note to hym/ & rei led-
 den it to ihi/ and rei castige her
 clopis on pe colt/ & setten ihi on
 hy/ & whne he wente/ rei stre-
 widen her clopis in pe weye/ &
 whne he cam nyz to pe comyge
 don of pe moūt of olyuete/ alle
 ye peple pat cam don biginen
 to ioye & to herie god wī greet
 vois/ on alle pe vertues pat rei
 hadden seyn/ & seide/ blefid be pe
 kīg/ p' comey in pe name of pe
 lord/ pees in heuene/ & glorie in

hise pigis/ & sūme of pe farile
 es of ye peple/ seiden to hym/
 mantir/ blame pi dūplis/ &
 he seide to hem/ i seie to zomū/ for
 if pes ben stille/ doones shule
 crye/ and whne he nevede/ he
 sez pe citee/ & wepte on it/ & sei-
 de/ for if pou haddist knowe/ p'
 shuldist wepe alle/ for in pis
 day pe pigis ben in pees to pee/
 but now rei ben hid fro pi zen/
 but dayes shulen come in pee/
 & vyne enemyes shulen enprou-
 ne pee wīp a pale/ & rei shulen
 go aboute pee/ & make ye streit
 on alle sidis/ & caste pee doū to pe
 erpe/ & pi stones pat ben in pee/
 and rei shulen not leene in pee/
 a stoon on a stoon/ for pou hast
 not knowū pe tyme of pi visita-
 tion/ and he entride into pe tem-
 ple/ & bigan to caste out men
 sellinge peryne & bryge & seide
 to hem/ it is writū/ pat my hous
 is an hous of preyer/ but ze han
 maid it a den of peues/ & he was
 techyge euī day in pe temple/ &
 pe pnces of prestis & pe scribis
 & pe pnces of ye peple/ longte to
 leese hy/ & rei fouden not what
 rei shulden do to hym/ for al ye
 peple was occupied & herde hym/
 & it was/ **Chap. x.**
A don i oon of pe dayes whne
 he taughte ye peple i pe tēple/ &
 prechide ye gospel/ ye pnces of
 prestis & scribis camen to gadre
 wīp ye eldze mē/ & rei seiden to hy/
 seie to us in what power/ p' donst
 pes pigis/ or who is he pat zaf to
 pee pis power/ & ihe answeride
 & seide to hem/ & i shal are zomū
 oo word/ answer ze me to was

ye baptym of iohn/ of heuene/
 or of men/ & rei pouzten wīp me
 hem silt/ seynge/ for if we ley-
 en of heuene/ he shal seie/ why
 vāne bileuen ze not to hy/ And
 if we seyen of mē/ al ye peple sh
 al stoune vs/ for rei ben certeyn/
 p' iohn is a pfete/ & rei answeri-
 den/ & rei knewen not/ of whē
 it was/ & ihe seide to he/ ney/ i seie
 to zomū/ in what power/ i do pes
 pigis/ and he bigan to seie to ye
 peple/ pis parable/ amā plantū
 a vyne zerd/ & hyrde it to thieris/
 & he was in pilgrymage long ty-
 me/ and in pe tyme of gadig/ of
 grapis/ he sente a seruait to ye
 thieris/ pat rei shulden zyne
 to hym of ye fruyt of ye vyne
 zerd/ whiche beeten hy/ & leete hy
 go/ vout/ and he pouzte it to sen-
 de anoy seruait/ & rei beete pis
 & turnetiden hy soore & leete hy
 go/ and he pouzte it to sende/ ye
 pydde/ & hy also rei wōdide & cal-
 tid hy out/ and pe lord of ye vy-
 ne zerd seide/ what shal i do/ i
 shal sende my derewoxpe sone/
 perauetur/ whne rei seen hy/ rei
 shulen dzele/ and whne ye tilie-
 ris hēn hy/ rei pouzte wīp yne
 hē silt/ & seiden/ pis is pe epr/ ale
 we hy/ pat pe eritage be oure/
 & rei castide hy out of ye vynerd/
 & killede hy/ whi/ shal vāne pe lord
 of ye vynerd do to hem/ he shal
 come & distrie pes thieris/ & zyn-
 ue ye vynerd to ope/ and whne
 pis pig/ was herd/ rei seide to hy/
 god forbode/ but he biheld he/ &
 seyde/ what vāne is pis pat is
 writū/ pe stoon which mē bildige
 repuede/ pis is maid ito ye heed

of re corner / ech þæt ſhal falleð þat
ſoon. ſhal be to byſid / but on
whom it ſhal falle. it ſhal alto
breke hym / & þe pnces of preſtis
& tribis ſouzen to leſe on hym
hondis in þat our. & þei dreed
þe peple / for þei kuenen. þæt to
hem he leide þis likeneſſe / & þei al
pceden & ſenten aſpries. þat
ſeigneð hem miſt / þat þei ſhul
den take hi in word. & bitake hi
to þe power of þe pnce. & to þe
power of þe miſtre. & þei aſide
hym & ſeiden / maſtir we wite.
þat riȝtly þou leiſt & techſt / & þæt
takſt not þe pſone of mā. but
þou techſt in treupe þe weye
of god / is it leſful to us. to ȝyue
tribut to þe empour or nay. & þæt
he biheold þe diſſent of hem. and
leið to he. what tēpten ze me.
thene ze to me a peny / whos
image & ſupſcription haſt it. þei
anſweriden & leið to hy. þe emp
ouris. & he leið to he. zelle ze þe
fore to þe empour. þo pigis þat
ben þe empouris. & þo pigis þat
be of god. to god. & þei miȝte not
reþone his word. biſore þe pe
ple. and þei wondred in his an
wer. & heelden pees / ſūme of
þe ſaduces þæt denyeden þe aen
ryſig. fro deſt to hy. camen &
ariden hi & leið. maſtir moyses
wroot to us. if þe broþ of ony
mā haue a wyf & be deed. & he w
wipouten cyres. þat his broþur
take his wyf. & reyle ſeed to his
broþer. & ſo þei were ſeueþe þu
peren / þe firſte took a wyf. & is
deed. wipouten cyres. & þe broþur
ſynge took hyr. & he is deed w
outen ſone. & þe þridde took hyr

allo & alle ſeueþe. & leſten not
ſeed. but ben deed. & þe laſte of
alle þe wōman is deed. þæt þe
þe ryſing aen. whos wyf of
hem ſhal ſhe be. for ſeueþe had
den hyr to wyf. and he leið to
hem. ſones of þis world wedde.
& ben ȝoum to weddigis. but þei
þat ſhul be had wōm of þat
world. & of þe ryſig aen fro deſt.
neþr ben weddid neþr wedde
wynes. neþ ſhul mouwe die
more for þei ben euene wip an
gels. & ben þe ſones of god. &
þei þe ſones of riſing aen.
fro deſt. & þat deede men ryſen
aen. alſo moyses thewede biſy
dis þe boþſh. as he ſey þe lord
god of abrahā. & god of ſam.
& god of jacob. & god is not of
deed me. but of lynnge me. for
alle me lynnē to hy. and ſūme
of tribis anſwerige. ſeiden / maſ
tir þou haſt wel leið. & þei durſte
no more aſe hi ony pig. but he
leið to hem. how ſeyen me & þæt
to be þe ſone of dāny. & dāny
hi ſilf ſey in þe book of pſalme.
þe lord leið to my lord. ſitte þou
on my ryȝt half. til þat þæt putte
vynne enemyes a ſool of þi fe
et. & þæt dāny clepþ hy lord.
& how is he his ſone. & in heerig
of al þe peple. he leið to hiſe
diſciples. be ze war of tribis. &
wolen wandre in ſtocks. & loue
ſalutaciōis in chepyng. & þe
firſte chāneris i ſynagogis. &
þe firſte ſittig placis in feſtis.
þat denoune þe houſis of widoles.
& ſeyne long preyig. þeſe ſhul
take þe more dānaciō.
JAld he biheold. **CH**

& ſey þe ryche me þat caſtlen
her pſis into þe treſerie. but
he ſey alſo a lytel pore widowe
caſtinge tikei ferpigis. & he
leið. treuli. & ſey to ȝou. þæt þis
pore widowe. kente more þan
alle me. for why alle yeſt of pig
þat was plenteuous to hem. kē
ten to þe ȝiſtis of god. but þis
widowe of þat pig þat ſatide
to hyr. kente al hyr lyf. þat
ſhe hadde. and whāne ſū me leið
of þe temple. þæt it was aparelid
wip goode ſtoones & pſis. he leið.
þeſe pigis þat ze ſeen. dānes ſhul
come in whiche a ſoon ſhal not
be leſt on a ſoon. whiche ſhal not
be diſtroyed. and þei ariden hy &
leið. comāndour whāne ſhulen
þeſe pigis be. & what tookne ſhal
be whāne þei ſhul bigyne to be
don. & he leið. & ze þat ze be not
diſſeyned. for māne ſhul come
in my name. & ſeyge for i am. &
þe tyme ſhal neze. þæt þe wyle ze
go after hem. and whāne ze ſhul
len heer. batelis & aſpries wip
ner wyle ze be aſceid. it bihouen
firſt þeſe pigis to be don. but not
at noon is an ende. þāne he leið
to hem. folk ſhal ryle aens folk.
& reuene aens reuene. grete
monygis of erpe ſhulen be by
placis. & peſilencis & ligis.
& dēdis fro heuene. & grete to
kenes ſhulen be. but biſore alle
þeſe pigis. þei ſhulen ſente her
hondis on ȝou. & ſhulen pſiue
bitake into ſynagogis & kepi
gis. dānyge to epigis. & to
miſtis for my name. but it ſhal
falle to ȝou into witneſſig. & þæt
putte ze in ȝour hertis. not to þe

be biſore. how ze ſhulen anſwere
for i ſhal ȝyue to ȝou mony &
wyſdom. to whiche alle ȝou. ad
uerſaries ſhulen not mouwe a
ȝenſtonde. & aen ſey. & ze ſhul
be takn of ſadur. & modur & byſen
& colins & frendis. & by deſt þei
ſhul tūmte of ȝou. & ze ſhul
be in hate to alle me. for my name.
and an heer of ȝour heed. ſhal not
peruſhe in ȝour. patience ze ſhul
le weelde ȝour ſoulis. but whāne
ze ſhulen ge ierlin be cūprouned
wip an oost. þāne wite ze þæt þe de
ſolaciō of it ſhal neze. þāne þei
þat ben in iudee. fle to þe moūters.
and þei þat ben in þe myddil of it.
go away. and þei þat ben i þe tū
treis. entre not into it. for yeſe
ben dānes of viciuſite. þat alle vi
gis þat ben witi. be fulfilld.
& wo to hem þat ben wip childe.
& norſthen in þo dānes. for a gre
et diſeſe ſhal be on þe erpe. and
wzappe to þis peple. & þei ſhul
falle by þe ſharpenſſe of ſweerd.
& þei ſhulen be lad pſoners. to al
le folkis. & ierlin ſhal be deſonlid
of hepen me. til þe tynes of na
ciōis be fulfilld. **And** to kenes
ſhulen be in þe ſūne & þe mone
& in þe ſterre. & i þe erpe ouleyig
of folkis for confuſiō of ſoun of
þe ſee. & of floodis. for me ſhul
were dāne for dāne & abydyng.
þat ſhul come to al þe world.
for vertues of heueneſ ſhulen
be moued. and þāne þei ſhul ge
māns ſone comyge in a cloude.
wip greet power & maieſte. &
whāne þeſe pigis bigynen to be
maad. biholde ze & reyle ze ȝour
heedis. for ȝour redēpciō neze.

And he seide to hem a hennesse / so
ze ye fige tre & alle trees / whane
ye byngen for nou of hem self
fruyt. ze witen pat somer is nix /
so ze whne ze seen pes pigs to be
don. wite ze pat ye kyngdom of god
is nix / treuly / seie to you. y^r pis
generacion shal not passe. til
alle rygis be don / heuene & erpe
shule passe. but my word is shule
not passe / but take ze heede to you
self. lest peramentur you. her
tis be grend wip glote nye & dri
kenesse. & bilynesses of pis lyf. &
vilke day come endepn on you /
for as a mare it shal come on al
le me pat sitten on ye face of al
erpe / verfore wake ze preingne
in ech tyme. yat ze be had worpi
to fle alle pes rygis pat ben to co
me & to stonde bifoze manns lone /
& in dayes he was techige in ye
temple / but in mytis he zete out
& dwelhte in ye moit pat is clepid
of olyuete / & al ye peple roos eer
ly to come to hi i ye temple & to heere
Ad ye halp **Chy** **Chy**
day of yerf loones pat is
leid palk neyete. & ye pn
ces of prestis & ye strabis souzten
hon per shullen sle ihu / but per
dredde ye peple / and sathanas
entride into judas. yat was cle
pid starioth. oon son of ye twel
ue / and he wente & spak wip ye
pnces of prestis & wip ye maiet
tratis. how he shulde bityaye
hi to hem / and per iopenen & ma
den couenant. to zyne hym mo
ney / & he bilyzte / and he souzte
oportunyte. to bityaye hi wip
outen peple / but ye dayes of yerf
loones camen. in whiche it was

nede y^r sacrifice of palk wed
slayn / and he sente petre & iohn
& seide / go ze & make ze redy to
vs ye palk. y^r we ete & ye se
den / wher wolt you y^r we make
redy / and he seide to he / lo whne
ze shulen entre into ye citee. a
man berynge a vessel of watir.
shal uete you / same ze hi into ye
hous. into whiche he entrey. & ze
shulen seye to ye hostebonde man
of ye hous. ye maistr seye to yee
wher is a chaubie. wher / shal ete
ye palk wip my discipulis / and he
shal shewe to you a greet loup
place strewid. & yere make ze re
dy / and per zeden & fouden as he
seide to he. & per maden redy ye palk
and whne ye oon was come. he
sat to ye mete & ye twelue apost
lis wip hi / and he seide to hem
wip desir / i haue desirid to ete w
you pis palk. bifoze yat i suffre
for i seye to you. yat fro pis ty
me i shal not ete it. til it be ful
fillid in ye rewme of god / & whne
he hadde take ye cuppe. he dide
gracis & seide / take ze & departe
ze amog you / for i seye to you. y^r
i shal not drynke of ye kynde of
ye wyne. til ye rewme of god co
me / and whne he hadde take breed.
he dide panthigis & brak & zat to he.
& seide / pis is my body. yat shal
be youn for you / do ze pis pig. in
myte of me / he took also ye cuppe.
astur yat he hadde loupid. & seide
pis cuppe is ye newe testament
in my blood. yat shal be shed for
you nepeles lo ye hond of hi yat
bityayep me. is wip me a yeta
ble / & manns lone goy. astur y^r it
is determyned. nepeles we to

pat ma. by whom he shal be bity
ed / and per bygnen to seke amog
hem. who it was of hem. yat was
to do pis pig. **And** stryf was
madd among he. which of hem
shulde be seyn to be grettest / but
he seide to hem / kyngis of hereue
me. ben lordis of hem / and per y^r
han poiver on hem. ben clepid
good doeris / but ze not so / but he
yat is grettest amog you. be ma
ad as zonger / and he yat is bifoze
goet. as a seruait / for who is gret
ter. he yat sitty at ye mete. or he
yat mynestrey. wher not he y^r
sitty at ye mete. & i am i ye myd
del of you. as he yat mynestrey
and ze ben yat han dwelhd wip
me in my temptaciouis / and i
dispole to you. as my fadir hay dis
posid to me a rethure / y^r ze ete &
drynke on my boord in my rew
me. and sette on trones & deme
ye twelf kyngedis of isrl. and
ye lord seide to symonit. lo satha
nas hay arid you. y^r he shulde ri
dele as wheete / but i haue preied
for yee. yat y^r fery faile not / and
you shi tyme comitid. confer me
y^r beryen / whiche seide to hi / lord
i am redy to go. into pson & in
to deap wip yee / and he seide / i seie
to yee petre. ye tok shal not fro
we to day. til you yues forsake y^r
you knowst me **And** he seide
to hem / whne i sente you wipou
ten sachel. & strypp & schoon. wher
omy pig. faillide to you. & per seide
no pig / verfore he seide to he / but
now he yat hay a sachel. take also
a strypp / and he yat hay noon. sel
le his cote & bygge a lyverd / for i
seie to you yat zit it bihouep y^r pig

pis writu to be fulfillid in me / and
he is arettid wip wicked me / for
yo rygis yat ben of me. han een
de / and per seiden / lord lo twelue
dis here / and he seide to hem / it is
ynouy. & he zete out. & wente aft
ye custom into ye hil of olyues / &
ye discipulis fuden hym / and whne
he cam to ye place. he seide to hem.
preie ze lest ze entre into teptaci
on / & he was taku ansey fro hem.
so moche as is a stoon cast. and
he knelede & preiede & seide / fadir
if you wolt. do ansey pis cuppe fro
me / napeles not my wille be don.
but yin / and an angel apperde to
hi fro heuene. & confortide hy / and
he was madd in agonye. & preiede
ye lenger. & his swoot was madd
as dropis of blood remygge dou in
to ye erpe / and whne he was rili
fro preier. & was conui to hile dis
cipulis. he foud hem sleepige for he
wynesse. & he seide to hem / what
slepen ze / wyle ze & preie ze. yat
ze entre not into teptaciou / zit wh
le he spak. lo a cupany / and he y^r
was clepid judas oon of ye twel
ue. wente bifoze he / and he cam
to ihu. to kille hym / & ihe seide to
hym / judas bityayest you manns
lone wip a coll. / and per yat were
aboute hi & open yat y^r was to co
me. seiden to hym / lord wher we
smyten wip swerd. & oon of he
smoot ye seruait of ye pnce of
prestis. & battide of his rix cere /
but ihe answerde & seide / suffre
ze til hidur / and whne he hadde tou
chid his cere. he heelde hi / & ihe
seide to he yat came to hy. ye pn
ces of prestis & magistratis of ye
temple & eldre men / as to a pee

ze han gon out wy swerdis & sta
ues. whie / was wy zoi eche day
in ye temple. ze streiten not out
hondis into me / but pis is zoi
our & ye power of derknessis / and
pei tooken hy & ledde i to ye hous of
ye pynce of prestis. & petre siode
hi a fer / and whie a fier was kyn
delid in ye myddel of ye greet how.
& ye saten aboute. petre was i
ye myddel of hem / whom whie a
dampsel hadde leyh hym sittige at
ye litz & hadde biholdn hy. she sei
de / & pis was wy hy / and he de
nyede hym. & seide / womman / kno
we hi not / and after a litz. anoy
man ey / hy & seide / & zoi art of he
but petre seide / a man / i am not
and whie a space was maid as
of an our. anoyr affermyde &
seide / treuly pis was wy hy / for
also he is of galile. & petre seide
man / i noot what you seist / and
anoon zit while he spak ye col
treis / and ye lord turnede azen.
& biheeld petre. & petre hadde my
de on ye word of ihu as he hadde
leid for bifore pat ye for & rowe.
pues you thalt denye me / & pe
tre zete out. & wepte bitterly. &
ye me pat heelden hym. stornede
hi & smyten hym / and pei blind
felden hym. & smyten his face.
& ariden hi. & seiden / arede you
crist to us. who is he pat smoot
pee. / also pei blasfemyge seiden
azens hym many ope rygis / and
as ye day was come. ye eldre
me of ye peple. & ye princes of
prestis. & ye scribis came to gi
dre. & ledde hi into her coucil.
seiden / if you art crist. seie to us.
and he seide to hem / if i seie to

you. ze thulen not bilene to me.
& if i are. ze thulen not answere
to me. ney ze thulen despyse me.
but after pis tyme. manys sone
shal be sittige on ye rythalf of
ye vertu of god / perfore alle sei
den / pane art you ye sone of god.
and he seide / ze seien pat i am / &
pei seiden / what zit desyre we wit
nessig. for we vns leif. han heyd
of his moir. **A**nd al pe unlikende of
hem arilen & ledde hy to
pilat. and pei bigynnen to accuse
hym. & seiden / we han founden pis
turnyge up sodoon our folk. and
forbedige tributis to be zoni to
ye empour. & seyinge y hi self
is crist & kyng. & pilat aride hi & sei
de / art you kyng of ieris. & he
answeride & seide / you leist / and
pilat seide to ye princes of prestis.
& to ye peple / i fynde no ying of
cause in pis man. & pei wore an
ger. & seiden / he moneye ye peple.
techyge yinz al / Judee bigynge
fro galile til hindur. and pilat
heerige galile. aride if he wer
aman of galile. & whie he knew
y he was of ye power of eron
de. he sente hy to eroude. which
was at ierhu in yo dayes / and
whie eroude syz ihu. he wode
ful moche / for long tyme he co
uentide to se hi / for he herd ma
ny rygis of hi. & hapide to se hi
tokene to be do of hy / and he ar
ide hym i many wordis. & he an
sweride no ryg to hy / and ye pi
ces of prestis & ye scribis stoden.
stedfastly accusige hym / but e
roude wy his coft dispide hym.
& stornede hi & clopide wy a whit

clou. & sente hym azen to pilat.
and eroude & pilat were maid
frendis fro pat day / for bifore pei we
ren enemyes to gidre. & pilat cle
pide to gidre ye pnces of prestis.
& ye maiestatis of ye peple. &
seide to hem / ze han brought to me
pis ma. as tynge awei ye pe
ple. & lo i arynge bifore you. fy
de no cause in pis man. of yes pi
gis. in which he ze accuside hy. ney
eroude / for he har sent hi azen to
us. & lo no ryg worpi of deyr is
don to hi / and pfore / i shal ame
de hym & delivere hy / but he wol
te nede delivre to hem don bi ye feel
te day / and al ye peple criede to
gidre & seide / dolhi awei. & delivre
to us barabas / which was sent
into pson. for disturblig maid
in ye cite & for manlessig / and
etionne pilat spak to hem. & wol
de delivre ihu. & pei vndurcriede
& seiden / crucifie crucifie hi. & pe
pudre tyme he seide to hem / for
what pnel hay pis don. / i fynde
no cause of deyr in hi / pfore / i sh
al chastise hi. & i shal delivre / and
pei countymeden wy greette voy
ces. arynge pat he thulde be cru
cified. & ye voices of hem woren
stronge / and pilat demede her
aryng to be don / and he deliviede
to hem. hi pat for wallepyng &
seduction was sent into prison.
whom pei ariden but he bitook
ihu to her wille / and whie pei
ledde hym. pei toke aua hym of our
nen comyge fro ye tou. & pei ley
den on hym ye cross. to bere af
tir ihu. and per shabede hy mo
che peple. & wy men pat weple
den & by mozteden hy. & ihu tin

nede to hem. & seide / donys of ie
rhu nyle ze wepe on me. but we
pe ze on zoi silt. & on zoi sones.
for lo dayes thulen come. i wh
che it shal be seyd / blessed be ba
reyn wy men. & wombis y hem
not born chylzen. & ye teetis y
han not zoi souke / pane pei thul
len bigyne to sepe to moztrens.
falle ze don on us / and to smale
hillis. keue ze us / for if in a gre
ne tre pei doen pes rygis. what
shal be don in a drye. / also ope
riwey wickide me were led wy
hy. to be slayn / and after pat pei
camen to a place pat is clepid
of caluarie. pere ye crucified
hi / and ye pnces / don on ye ryt
half. & yecop on ye left half / but
ihu seide / fadir / forgyue he. for pei
witen not what pei doen. & pei
departide his cloys & kasten lot
tis. & ye peple stood abydyge. &
ye pncis stornede hi wy he. &
seiden / ope men he made saaf. ma
ke he hi self saaf. if pis be crist
choine of god / and ye kypis neye
den & storneden hym. & pfore to hi
vynegre. & seiden / if you art kyng
of ieris. make pee saaf / and ye
hypleprou was writu ouer hi.
wy greet letris. & of latyn. & of
chew. pis is ye kyng of ieris. &
don of pes pnces pat hangiden.
blasfemyden hi & seide / if you art
crist make yis self saaf & vs / but pe
toy answerige blameide hi & seide
ney you dredist god. y art i ye
same dapnacion / and treuly we
maly. for we han reslyned wor
pi rygis to werkis. but pis dide
no ryg of pnel. & he seide to ihu.
lord haue myd of me. whane

þou comest ito þi kyngdome / & ihc sei-
de to hy / treuly / & seie to þee: þis
day þou shalt be wyþ me i para-
dis / and it was almeist þe lyste
our: & derkness were maid in
al þe erpe into þe nyghte our: &
þe lyste was maid derk: & þe veil
of þe temple was to rent a two
and ihc cþunge wyþ greet vois:
seide / fadir into þi hondis: / I bi-
take my spirit: & he seynge þes
þyngis 3af up þe goost: & þe centu-
rien seynge þat þis þat was
don: glorified god & seide / verily
þis mā was nist / and al þe peple
of þe þat weren þere to gidre at
þis spectacle: & 3en þe þyngis þat
weren don: linyteden her brestis
& turnden azen / but alle his knowe
stoden aser: & wyne þat suede
hy fro galile: seynge þes þyngis
& lo andan joseph bi name of ar-
mathe a citee of judde: & was
a decurion: a good mā & a nist /
þis man consentide not to þe cou-
cil: & to þe dedis of hem: & he a
bood þe kyngdom of god þis ioseph
cam to pilat: & aside þe body of ihc
& took it dou / & wylapide it in a de-
ne lþuen dlop: & leyde hi in a gra-
ue heþu: in which not 3it ony mā
hadde be leid: & þe day was þe euþ
of þe halidag: & þe saboth bigan
to lþyne: & þe wyemen lþynge þ
camen wyþ hi fro galile: syen þe
grau: & how his body was leyd:
& þe turndeden azen & maden re-
dy fivete smellige spices & opne
metis / but i þe saboth þe restide
astir þe comādemēt / **C. xiii.**
But in oday of þe wote ful
eerly þe camē to þe gra-
ue: & broukten fivete smel-

lige spices: þat þe hadden araied
and þe fōiden þe soon turned a
way fro þe graue: and þe 3eden
yn & fōiden not þe body of þe
lord ihc / and it was don þe wyl-
le þe weren a stouped in þe
of þis þyng: lo twey men stoden
biþdis hem i lþynge dlop / and
wylle þe diedden: & bōweden her
semilant into þe erpe: þe seide
to hem / what seken ze hy þat
lþyne wyþ dede me: he is not
her: but is risi / haue ze myde
how he spak to 3ou: wylle he
was 3it in galile: & seide / for it
bihoþey mann: lone to be bry-
tū into þe hondis of dþful me
& to be crucified: & þe 3yde day
to ryle azen / & þe biþougt on
his wordis: & þe 3eden azen fro
þe graue: & tolden alle þes þyngis
to þe enleuene & to alle opere
þe þe was mary maibiden & jo-
ne & marie of james & opere
wyne þat weren wyþ þe: þat
seiden to aposthis þes þyngis / and
þes wordis were seyn bifoze þe
as maduēlle: & þe bilenēd not
to þe / but petre roos up & ran
to þe graue: & he bōwde down
& 3e þe lþnen cloþis lþynge al
oone / & he wente by hi silt: wō-
drige on þat þ was don / **And**
lo twyne of hem wenten i þat day
into a castel: þat was fro ierlm
þe space of sixty furlongis: bi
name emaks: & þe spaken to
gidre of alle þes þyngis þat hadde
biþalle: & it was don þe while þe
talkeden & loutte by hem silt: &
hi silt neyete & wete wyþ þe but
her þen were holdū þat þe þe
wen hym not: & he seide to hem

what ben þes wordis þat ze speke
to gidre wandrynge: & ze ben
lozlyful: & oon whos name was
cleofas: auliveride & seide / þou
þi silt art a pilgrym i ierlm:
& hast þou not knowū what þy-
ngis ben don in it in þese dayes:
to whom he seide / what þyngis:
& þe seide to hi / of ihc of nālaŕeth
þat was amā pfete myt i m
work & word: bifoze god & al þe
peple / and how þe byette prestis
of oure þynges broken hy into
dþnacion of deþ: & crucified
hi / but we hopiden þe shulde
haue azenbōwt istl: & now on
alle þes þyngis: þe 3yde day is
to day: þat þes þyngis were don
but also summe wyemen of ou-
ris maden us ascerd: wylle
bifoze day weren at þe graue
and wylle his body was not fōi-
dū: þe camen & seiden / þe þe
3en also alyt of angelis: wylle
seyn þat he lþyne / and summe
of ouren weten to þe graue: &
þe fōiden so: as þe wyemen sei-
den: but þe fōiden not hi / and
he seide to þe a foolis & slowe of
herte: to bilene in alle þyngis þat
þe pfetis han spokū / wher it bi-
hoþe not eit to suffre þes þyngis:
& so to entre into his glorie: & he
bigan at moyses & at alle þe pro-
fetis declaride to hem in alle scrip-
turs: & were of hi: & þe camen
myþe castel: whidur þe wente: &
hemade cūtenaūce þat he wolde
go feryere: & þe contrēyneden
hi & seiden / dwelle wyþ us for it
drawyþ to nygt: & þe day is now
bōwde down / and he entride wyþ
þe: & it was don while he sat at

þe mete wyþ hem: he took bread
& blestide & brak & took to þe: &
þe 3en of hem weren openyde:
& þe knenwen hi / and he wāyt
stide fro her 3en: & þe seiden to
gidre / wher our herte was not
brenge in vs: while he spak
to us in þe weye: & openyde to
us lþturs: & þe risen wyþ þe
same our: & wente azen to ier-
lm: & fōiden þe enleuene gedū
to gidre: & hem þat were wyþ þe
seynge / þat þe lord is risi / veri-
ly: & apperide to symonit: & þe
tolden what þyngis were don in
þe weye: & how þe knenwen hi
in bryk yng of breed: **And** þe
while þe spaken þes þyngis: ihc
stod in þe myddil of hem & sei-
de to hem / pees to 3ou / I am: ny-
le 3e dede / but þe weren asfay-
ed & agast: & þe liden þe to se:
a spirit: & he seide to hem / what
ben ze troublid: & þe 3yngis comē
up into 3ouwe hertis: & ze ny
hondis & my feet: for i my silt
am / feele ze & se ze: for a spirit
hay not flesch & boones: as
ze seen þat i haue: & wylle he
hadde seid þis þyng: he athenwīde
hondis & feet to hem: & 3it wyl-
le þe bileneden not: & wōndri-
den for ioye: he seide / han ze her
ony þyng: þat shal be etū: & þe
pfriten hi a part of a fyllth rol-
tid: & an hony combe: & wylle
he hadde etū bifoze þe: he took
þat þat leste & 3af to hem: &
seide to þe / þes ben þe wordis
þe 3e spak to 3ou: wylle i was
3it wyþ 3ou: for it is nede þe alle
þyngis be fulfilled: þat ben wri-
tū i þe laue of moyses & in þe

fetis. & in psalmys of me / pane
he openide to hem witt. v^r rei
shulden vnderstonde scriptu
ris / & he seide to hem / for yus it
is writen. & yus it bihoofe it
to suffer. & yus azen fro deop
in ye yridde day / & penance &
remission of synes to be pre
chid in his name to alle folkis.
bigynnyng at ierlm. & ze ben
witnessis of yes ygis. & i shal
sende ye biheest of my fadir in
to you / but lute ze in ye citee.
til yat ze be clopid w^r ven fro
an hys / & he ledde hem forp to
betanpe. & whne his hondis
weren list up. he blestide hem
and it was don ye while he
blestide hem. he departide fro
hem. & was born into heuene.
and rei worshippide & wente
azen into ierlm w^r greet ioye.
& weren enen more i ye temple
hermyng & blestige god. **He**
re endy ye gospel of hys
& bigynne ye plog on ye e
gospel of john. //

This is john ye euange
list don of ye discipulis of ye lord.
ye which is a virgyn chosun of
god / whom god clepide from ye
spouelis. whne he wolde be wed
did / and double witness of vir
gynrye is join to hym i ye gos
pel. in yis yat he is seid lored
of god bifore ope discipulis. and
god hongynge in ye cross. brook
his modir in keepynge to hi. yat
a virgyn shulde kepe a virgyn
yis john i ye gospel bigynne al
done ye werk of vncorruptible
word. & witnessip yat ye kyn
dey lone of god is maad man.

and y^r hit was not takun of
derknessis. & he shewy^r ye fir
ste myracle. which god dide at
ye weddigis to shewe wher
ye lord is preied to ye feede.
ye w^rin of ye weddigis ony
to faple. v^r whne elde ygis he
chaungid. alle newe ygis pat
ben ordeined of est. appere. jo
hn wroot yis gospel in aspe. ac
tu yat he hadde w^ritun ye apo
calyps in ye yle of pathmos. ne
veles he wroot ye gospel. after
alle ye gospeleris. yat also an
vncorruptible ende by a virgyn
in ye apocalyps. to hy. to w^ris
an vncorruptible bigynnyng. is
join in genesis in ye bigynnyng
of hooly scriptur. for est leu i ye
apocalyps. i am ye bigynnyng. &
ye ende. and yis john is he. yat
knew. v^r ye day of his depa. tis
was comu. & he clepide to gide
hys discipulis in effeie. & shewe
de est. bi many p^remys of my
racle. & zede don into a doctur
place of his buryng. & whne he
hadde maad preyer. he was put
to his fadris. & was moche w^r
oute sorwe of deop. how moche
he is founden cleue fro corrupcion
of fleish. **Jerom in his plog o**
john. leu al yis. & now bigynne
ye gospel. //

In ye bigynnyng was
ye word. & ye word was
at god. and god was
ye word. yis was in
ye bigynnyng at god. alle ygis we
re maad by hi. & w^route hi was
maad no yis. yat yis. yat was ma
ad in hy was hys. & ye hys was ye
hys of me. and ye hys shynen in

derknessis. & derknessis caprehendi
den not it. / Zman was sent to god.
to whom ye name was john. yis
man cam to witnessip. yat he
shulde bere witnessip of ye hys.
yat alle me shulden bilue bi hy.
he was not ye hys. but yat he
shulde bere witnessip of ye hys.
ye was a very hit. which hitney
ech ma yat comen into yis world.
he was in ye world. & ye world
was maad by hym. & ye world knew
not hi. he cam to his owne yis
gis. & hys resseynede hy not. but
how manye euer resseynede
hy. he gaf to hem power. to be maad
ye sones of god to hem y^r bileneide
in his name. ye whiche not of blo
dis neyr of ye wille of fleish.
neyr of ye wille of ma. but be born
of god. & ye word was maad ma.
& dwellede among us. & we han
seyen ye glorie of hy. as ye glorie
of ye don bigetun lone of ye fadir.
ful of grace & of trewe. **John**
berry witnessip of hy. & crayer
& leu yis is whom i seide. he y
shal come after me. is maad bi
fore me. for he was to fore me.
& of ye pleute of hy. we alle han
take. & grace for grace. for ye la
we was join by moyses. but gra
ce & trewe is maad bi ihu est.
no man eyz eue god. no but ye
don bigetun lone yat is in ye bo
li of ye fadir. he hay told out.
And yis is ye witnessip of john.
whne ierlm senten fro ierlm. &
tis & defenes to hym. y^r rei shul
den are hym. who art you. he
knewlechte & demyde not. and
he knewlechte. for i am not
cris. & rei ariden hi. what pane.

art you eue. and he seide. i am not
art y^r a p^rete. & he answeride. may
perfore rei seiden to hi. who art
you. yat we zyne an answer to
yes yat senten us. what seist y^r
of yis. he seide. i am a vois
of a cryer in desert. dwelle ze ye
weye of ye lord. as i have ye p^re
te seide. and rei yat were sent.
weren of ye familie. & rei aride
hi & seide to hi. what pane bapti
list you. if you art not est. neyr
eue. neyr a p^rete. / John answeride
to hem. & seide. i baptise in watir.
but in ye myddil of you hay stonde
don. yat ze knowen not. he it is
y^r shal come after me. yat was ma
ad bifore me. of w^ris. i am not wor
ri to lose ye yisong of his shoo.
yele ygis weren don in betanpe
byzonde jordan. wher iohu was
baptisge. **Thomay day john hys**
ihu comyge to hym. & he seide. lo
ye lomb of of god. lo he yat doy a
wey ye hines of ye world. yis is he
yat i seide of. after me comen is
aman. which was maad bifore me
for he was rarer y^r i. and i. Fenis
hi not. but yat he be shewid i ihu.
pfore i cam baptisge in watir.
and john bar witnessip. & seide.
y^r i zyn ye sp^rit comyge don as
a culier fro heuene. & dwellede on
hy. & i knew hi not. but he yat sente
me. to baptise in watir. seide to me.
on whom you seest ye sp^rit comy
ge down & dwellege on hi. yis is he
yat baptisip in ye hooly gost. and
i zyn & bar witnessip. y^r yis is
ye lone of god. / Thomay day john
stod. & tweyne of hys discipulis.
and he biheold ihu walkige & leu.
lo ye lomb of god. and tweyne dis

caplis herden hym spekege: & sole
widen ihu: and ihu turnede & spake
sunge hi: & seip to hem: what seke
ze: And pei seiden to hi: rabi: y is
to sepe maistr: wher dwellest þu?
& he seip to hem: come ze & se: and
pei came & spen wher he dwelli
de: & dwelten wyþ hi pat day: & it
was as ye tempe our: and andreu
pe broþ of symonit petre was con
of ye tweyne pat herde of iohu:
& hadden syned hi: þis soond first
his broþr symonit: & he seide to hi:
we han soude melias: y is to seie
et: and he ledde hi to ihu: & ihu bi
heeld hi: & seide: þou art symonit
pe sone of whana: þou shalt be
clepid cefas y is to seie petre: &
on ye moxwe he wolde go out in
to galile: & he soond filip: and he
seip to hi: one þou me: filip was
of bethsaida pe citee of andreu
& of petre: filip soond nathanael:
& seide to hi: we han soude ihu
pe sone of ioseph of nazareth:
whom moyses woot in pe lawe
& psetis: & nathanael seide to hi:
of nazareth may ligood þig be:
filip seide to hi: come & se: ihu þy
nathanael comyge to hi: and
seide to hi: lo verily a man of isrl:
in who is no gyle: nathanael sei
de to hym: wher of hast þou kno
wit me: ihu answeride: & seide
to hi: bifore y filip clepide þee
whne þou wer vnder pe fyge tre:
y spz þee: nathanael answeride
to hi: & seide: rabi þou art pe
sone of god: þou art kyng of isrl:
ihu answeride & seide to hi: for y
seide to þee: y spz þee vnder pe
fyge tre: þou bileuest: y thalt
se more þan þes þigis: and he

seide to hem: treuli treuli y seie
to þou: ze shule se heuene openid:
& ye angelis of god: stynge vp
& comyge dou on mans sone:
Id ye radde: **A**nd ye weddis weren
maad in ye came of gali
lee: & ye modir of ihu was þer:
And ihu was clepid & hile disti
phis to ye weddis: & whne þyn
fauld: pe modir of ihu seide to hi:
pei han not wyne: and ihu seip to
hi: what to me & to þee woma:
my our cam not it: his modir
seip to ye mynistris: what else
þig he seye to þou: do ze: & þere
weren sett fyre stoonen canes
astir pe denlig of ye ierwis: hol
dige ech: tweyne erre þe metre
tis: & ihu seip to hi: fille ze pe pot
tis wyne: & þei fillede he vp
to pe mony: & ihu seide to hem:
drawe ze now: & bere ze to pe ar
chitrit: & þei bareu: & whne
ye architryn hadde tadd pe wa
maad wyne: & wiste not werof it
was: but pe mynistris witen
pat drowen pe watir: pe archi
tryn depy pe sponse & seip to
hi: ech man lettir furst good wy:
& whne me ben fulfild: þane þat
pat is worse: but þou hast kept
pe good wyne to þis tyme: ihu
dide þis pe bigynnyng of signes
in ye came of galile: & ihu wile
his glorie: and hile distyphs bile
ueden ihu: astir þes þigis he cam
dou to casarna: & his modir &
hile bysen & hile distyphs: & þei
dwelten þere not many daies:
and pe pall of ierwis was nyg:
& ihu wente vp to ierlm: and
he soond in ye temple men sil

lige oru: & sheep & culuers: &
changeris sitige: and whne he
hadde maad as it wer a bouge
of suale cordis: he droof out alle
of ye temple: & oru: & sheep: &
he thodde ye money of change
ris: & turnede vpldou þe booz
dis: and he seide to hem: þat seel
den culuers: take away fro hen
nis þes þigis: & nyle ze make
pe hous of my fadir: an hous
of marchandise: & hile distyphs
hadden mynde for it was writu:
ye feruet loue of þyn hous hap
eti me: þfore ye ierwis answe
riden & seiden to hi: what took
ne thewist þou to us: y þou
doist þes þigis: ihu answeride
& seide to hi: vndo ze þis temple:
& in þre dayes y thal reile it:
þfore ye ierwis seiden to hi: i four
ty & fyre þeer þis temple was
bildid: & thalt y in þre dayes rei
le it: but he seide of ye temple
of his body: þfore whne he was
risu fro deþ: hile distyphs had
den mynde: y he seide þes þigis
of his body: & þei bileueden to pe
scriptur: & to pe word þat ihu
seide: and whne ihu was at ie
rlm in pall: i pe feeste day: wa
nye bileueden in his name: se
yuge his signes þat he dide: but
ihu trowide not hi self to hem:
for he knew alle me: & for it was
not nede to hi: y ony ma shulde
ber witnessig: for he wiste wh
was in man: **A**nd þer was aman of
pe farisees: & nicodeme
by name a þnce of ye ierwis: &
he cam to ihu by nyg: & seide to hi:
rabi: we witen þat þou art co

mi fro god maistr: for no ma
may do þes signes þat y doist:
but god be wyþ hi: ihu answeride:
& seide to hi: treuli treuli y seie
to þee: but anna be born azen: he
may not se þe kyngdom of god:
nycode me seide to hi: how may
anna be born: ihu whne he is
eld: wher he may entre azen i
to his modis wombe: & be born
azen: ihu answeride: treuli treu
li y seie to þee: but anna be born a
zen of watir: & of ye hody goft: he
may not entre into þe kyngdom of
god: þat þat is born of ye flesch:
is flesch: and þat þat is born of
ye spirit: is spirit: wondre y not:
for y seide to þee: it bihouey þou
to be born azen: & ye spirit bre
þir wher he wole: & þou heerist
his vois: but þou woost not fro
whems he comey: ne whidur he
goy: so is ech man þat is born of
ye spirit: nycode me answeride
& seide to hi: how may þese þigis
be don: ihu answeride: & seide to hi:
þou art a maistr i isrl: & kno
wist not þes þigis: treuli treu
li y seie to þee: for we speken þat
þat we witen: & we witnesen y
þat we han seyn: & ze taken not
ou: witnesig: if y haue seid to
þou erpely þigis: & ze bileue not:
how if y seie to þou heuently þigis
shulen ze bileue: & no ma strey
into heuene: but he þat cam dou
fro heuene: mans sone þat is i
heuene: and as moyses arerde
a serpent i desert: so it bihouey
mans sone to be reild: y ech ma
þat bileuey in hi peristhe not:
but haue enelastige lyf: for god
louede so þe world: y he gaf his

don bigetū lōne / v̄ ech mā pat bīle
nep in hī peritthe not: but haue
euerlastige lyf / for god sente not
his lōne into ye world: v̄ he iuge
ye world: but pat ye world be sa
ued by hī: he pat bīleuey in hym
is not demyd: but he pat bīleuey
not: is now demed: for he bīleuey
not in ye name of ye don bigetū
lōne of god: v̄ is is ye doom: for
lyt cam ito ye world: v̄ men lo
ueten moze derkuelis vā lyt
for her werkis werē yuele: for
ech man pat don yuele haty ye
lyt: and he comey not to ye lyt:
pat hīle werkis be not reproved:
but he pat don treupe: comey
to ye lyt: v̄ hīle werkis be sthe
wid: v̄at pei bē don i god. **A**ll
pes pigis ihe cam i hīle dyltph
into ye lond of iudee: v̄ pei he
dyltphid wip hem i baptiside
v̄ John was baptisige men non
bi hydīs salm: for many watr
weren yere: v̄ pei camē i werē
baptisid: and John was not iit
sent ito p̄lōn. **A**lfoze a quetti
ou was maid of Johnis dyltphs
wip ye ieris of ye purificaci
on: and pei camē to John: v̄ lei
den to hī: maid: he pat was w
pee byonde Jordan to whom v̄
hast boyn witneslig: lo he bap
tisey v̄ alle me comen to hī: John
answeride: v̄ seide: Amā may
not take ony pig: but it be zo
mā to hī fro heuene: ze zōu sll
berē witneslig to me: v̄ i ley
de: i am not cit: but v̄ i am lēt
bifore hī: he pat hap a wif: is
ye holebōnde: but ye frend of ye
spoule: v̄ stōndy v̄ heery hī:
ioyer wip ioye for ye vois of ye

spoule: p̄fore in pis pig my ioye
is fulfilled: it bihoney hī to weye:
but me to be maid lalle: he pat
cam fro aboue: is aboue alle:
he pat is of ye erpe: speky of ye
erpe: he pat comey fro heuene:
is a bone alle: and he witnesly
pat pig pat he hap lēyn v̄ herd: v̄
no man taky his witneslig: but
he pat taky his witneslig: but
hay confermed pat god is lōyfast:
but he whom god hay sent: spe
ky ye wordis of god: for not to
me lū: god zyne ye sp̄rit: ye
fadr lōney ye lōne: v̄ he hay zo
mā alle pigis in his hond: he pat
bīleuey in ye lōne: hay euelast
ge lyf: but he pat is v̄bileful
to ye lōne: shal not le euelastige
lyf: but ye wryppe of god dyl
ley in hym. **A**lfoze as ihu lēyde
pat ye farisees herde: v̄
ihu makey i baptisid modtphs
pau John: pouz ihe baptisid not:
but hīle dyltphs: he lēte iudee:
v̄ wente azen ito galilee: v̄ bihof
te hī to passe by samarie: p̄fore
ihē cam into a citee of samarie:
pat is leid sicar: bi hydīs ye place
pat Jacob zaf to Joseph his lōne:
v̄ ye welle of Jacob was yer: v̄
ihē was wery of ye iourney: v̄
lat pus vpon ye welle: v̄ ye ou
was as it wer ye syte: v̄ a wō
mā cam fro samarie: to drayve
watur: v̄ ihē lēy to hī: zyne me
drynk: v̄ hīle dyltphs weren
gon into ye citee: to bpe mete
p̄fore pilke wōman of samarie
lēy to hī: hōt pou whie v̄ art
a wō: aryt of me drynk: pat
am a wōmā of samarie: for

news v̄lde not to dele wip sama
ritans: ihe answeride: v̄ seide to
hī: if you wistit ye ziste of god:
v̄ who he is pat lēy to pee zyne
me drynke: you parauetir wōl
dist haue aryt of hī: v̄ he shilde
haue zōm to pee: quyl watur
ye wōman lēy to hī: sū: v̄ hōt
not wher yne to drayve: v̄ ye put
is deep: wher of p̄ane hast you
quyl watur: and wher v̄ art
grett pan oue fadr Jacob: v̄at
zaf to us ye put: v̄ he draynk
of: v̄ hīle lōnes v̄ hīle bectis
ihē answeride v̄ seide to hī: ech
mā pat drynk of pis watur:
shal purte ete lōne: but he v̄
drynk of ye watur pat i shal
zyne hī: shal not purte wipou
ten ende: but ye watur v̄ i shal
zyne hī: shal be maid in hym
a welle of watur lēyng v̄ ge up
into euelastige lyf: ye wōman
lēy to hī: sū: zyne me pis wat
pat i purte not: nep come hī
dur to drayve: ihe lēy to hī: go
clepe yi holebōnde: v̄ come hīdur
ye wōman answeride: v̄ seide:
i haue noon holebōnde: ihe lēy
to hī: pou seidist wel: v̄ i haue
noon holebōnde: for pou hast had
fyne holebōndis: v̄ he pat pou
hast: is not ym holebōnde: pis
pig pou seidist lōpely: ye wō
man lēy to hī: lōrd: i se: v̄ pou
art a pfete: oue fadr is wō
shypede in pis hīl: v̄ ze seyen
at ierlm is a place: wher it
bihoney to wozlthpe: ihe lēy
to hī: wōman bīleue pou to
me: for ye oue shal come: wha
ne nep in pis hīl: nep i ierlm ze
shulen wozlthpe ye fadr: ze

wozltthpe pat ze knowen not:
we wozlthpen pat pat we kno
wen: for heelre is of ye ieris:
but ye tyme is comē v̄ now it
is: whāne treise wozlthpers
shulen wozlthpe ye fadr i sp̄
rit v̄ treupe: for also ye fadr se
ky sūche: pat wozlthpe hym:
god is a sp̄rit: v̄ it bihoney hē
pat wozlthpen hī: to wozlth
pe in sp̄rit v̄ treupe: ye wōman
lēy to hī: i woot pat melias
is comū: v̄ is leid crist: p̄fore
whie he comey: he shal telle us
alle pigis: ihe lēy to hī: i am
he pat speky wip v̄: v̄ anoon hīle
dyltphs camē: v̄ wonduden v̄
he spac wip ye wōman: neples
no mā seide: to hī what sekit
pou: or what spekit pou wip hī:
p̄fore ye wōman lēte hī watur
pot: v̄ wente into ye citee: v̄ seide
to po mē: come ze v̄ ze amān
pat seide to me alle pigis: pat
i haue don: wher he be cit: and
pei wenten out of ye citee: v̄ ca
men to hī: iu ye meene while
hīle dyltphs p̄reiden hī v̄ seide:
manstr ete: but he seide to hem:
i haue mete to ete: pat ze kno
wen not: p̄fore dyltphs seiden
to gadre: wher ony mā haue bz
ouyt hī mete to ete: ihe lēy to
hem: my mete is: v̄ i do ye wille
of hī pat sente me: v̄ i pat four
me ye werk of hī: wher ze lēye
not: v̄ zit four moneris ben:
v̄ rype corn comey: lo i seie to
zōu: hītey v̄p zōu: i zen v̄ se ze
ye feeldis: for now pei ben wō
te to repe: v̄ he pat repy: ta
ky hīre: v̄ gaday fruyt into
euerlastige lyf: pat boye he pat

sony & he pat repy: hane ioye
to gidre in pis pig is pe word
trewe. for anoyr is pat sony.
E anoyr pat repy: I sente zoi to
repe. pat pat ze han not trane
hd. & ze han entrid into her tra
uehs. and of pat citee many
samaritanis bileden in hy.
for pe word of pe wōman pat
bar witneslig. & he seide to me
alle pigis pat I hane done. &
foze whie samaritans came
to hi. & pe prieden hi to diuile
pere. and he direhte pere twey
dayes. & manye mo bileden
for his word. & seide to pe wo
man. & now not for pi speche
we bileden. for we han herd
E we witen. & pis is verily pe
saviour of pe world. and af
tir rise dayes he wente out
fro pēnus & wente into galile
E he bar witneslig. & a plete
in his owne citee hap noon ho
nour. & foze whie he cam into ga
lile. me of galile reserueden hi.
whie pei hadden seyn alle pigis
pat he hadde don i ierlm i pe feet
te day. for also pei hadde come to
pe feette day. & foze he cam eft
soone into pe cane of galile.
where he made pe watir wyn.
And a litel big was. whos so
ne was lyk at castarnan. whie
pis hadde herd & ihu shulde come
fro iudee into galilee. he wete
to hi & priede hi. & he shulde
come don. & heele his sone. for
he bigan to dye. & foze ihc seide
to hi. but ze se tokenes & gre
te wondris. ze bileden not. & pe
litel big seyn to hi. lord come
don. bifore & my sone dye. ihc

seyn to hi. go. in sone hūcy. & pe
mā bileden to pe word pat ihc
seide to hi. & he wente. & now
whane he cam don. pe sernan
tis camen azen hy. & telden
to hi & seiden. & his sone hūcy.
and he aride of he pe our. & wh
ich he was amendid. & pei seide
to hi. for iusterdag in pe senye
our. & pe feuer sette hy. & foze pe
fadir knewe pat yllke our it was.
in which ihc seide to hi. in sone
hūcy. & he bileden. & al his how
ihc dide eft pis secide tokene.
whie he cam fro iude into galile.
for yes pmi. **A**nd was a feette day
of ierlm. & ihc wente
up to ierlm. & in ierlm is a wa
llig place pat in hebreu is na
med bethsaida. & hap fyne por
chis in pise lay a greet multitu
de of sike me. blynde crokide
dye. abidige pe moing of pe
watir. for pe angel of pe lord
cam don certeyne tymes into
pe water. & pe watir was mo
ued. and he pat first cam don
into pe cisterne aft pe moing
of pe watir. was maid hool of
what eu sike nelse he was hol
du. & amā was pere hanpge
eize & pratty zeer in his sike nelse.
E whie ihc hadde seyn hym
luggys & hadde knowu. & he had
de moche tyme. he seyn to hym.
wolt you be maid hool. & pe sike
mā answeride to hi. lord. I ha
ue no mā. & whie pe watir is
moued. to putte me into pe sil
terne. for pe while I come. an
oy god don bifore me. ihc seyn
to hy. rise up. take pi bed & go.

and andon pe mā was maid ho
ol. & took vp his bed & wente for
and it was sabat. in pat day. &
foze pe ierlm seide to hi. pat was
maid hool. it is sabat. it is not
leeful to pee. to take away pi
bed. he answeride to he. he pat
made me hool. seide to me. take
pi bed & go. & foze pei aride hym.
what mā is pat. pat seide to y.
take up pi bed & go. but he pat
was maid hool. wite not whio
it was. and ihc boide a wey. &
pe peple pat was sett in pe pla
ce. after ward ihc found hi in pe
temple. & seide to hy. lo you art
maid hool. now nyle you do syn
ne. lest ony worle pig. bifalle to
pee. yllke mā wente & telde to pe
ierlm. & it was ihu. & made hi hool.
foze pe ierlm pursuete ihu.
for he dide pis pig in pe sabat.
E ihc answeride to he. my fadir
worchip til now. & I worche.
perfoze pe ierlm souzte more
to sle hi. for not oonly he brake
pe sabat. but he seide pat god was
his fadir. & made hy euene to
god. & foze ihc answeride. & seide
to hem. treuly treuly. I seye to
zoi. pe sone may not of hy sile
do ony pig. but pat pig. & he se
ey pe fadir doynge. for what
euer pigis he doyn. pe sone doyn
in lyk maner. & thewy to hi
alle pigis pat he doyn. and he sh
al thewe to hym greter werke.
pan pe se. & ze wondren. for as
pe fadir reisy deed me & quyte
ney. so pe sone sheney who he
wolt. for ney pe fadir. ingep o
my man. but hap zoi in ech don

to pe sone. & alle me honou. & pe
sone. as pei honoure pe fadir.
he pat honourey not pe sone.
honourey not pe fadir. pat seide
hi. treuly treuly. I seie to zoi. & at
he pat heery my word. & bileden
to hi. pat seide me. hap euilast
ge lyf. and he comen not into don.
but passy fro deyr into lyf. treuly
treuly. I seie to zoi. for pe our
comen & now it is. whie deete
me shulen heer. pe vois of god
dis sone. & pei pat heere. shule
lyne. for as pe fadir hap lyf in
hi self. so he zaf to pe sone to ha
ue lyf in hi self. he zaf to hi potter.
to make don. for he is manis so
ne. nyle ze wondre pis. for pe our
comen. in which alle me pat be
in buriels. shule heer. pe vois
of godis sone. & pei pat hando
goode pigis. shulen go into a
zen ryng of lyf. but pei pat han
don ynel pigis. into azen ryng
of don. & may no pig do of my
self. but as I heer. I deme. & my
don is nyl. for I seke not my
wille. but pe wille of pe fadir. &
seide me. & I bere witneslig
of my self. my witneslig is not
trewe. anoyr is pat berry wit
neslig of me. & I woot pat his
witneslig is trewe. pat he berry
of me. & ze senten to iohu. & he
bar witneslig to trewe. but I
take not witneslig of mā. but
I seye pes pigis. pat ze be sark.
he was a buterne breynge. &
shynge. but ze wold not gla
den at an our in his liz. but I
hane more witneslig pan iohu.
for pe werkis pat my fadir zaf
to me to parfourme he. yllke

werkis pat / do. beren wænelessig
of me. pat ye fadir sente me / &
ye fadir pat sente me. he bar
witnessig of me. neþ ze herden
enet / his vois: neþ ze syzen his
liknesse / & ze han not his word
dibellig in zoi: for ze bileuen
not to hi whom he sente / seke ze
scripturis: in þe which ze ges
sen to haue euilastige luf / & þo
it ben pat beren witnessig of
me / & ze wolen not come to me:
pat ze haue luf / I take not cle
renesse of me: but I haue kno
wn zoi þe han not þe lone of
god in zoi / I cam i þe name of
my fadir: & ze tooken not me /
if anop come in his owne name:
ze sthule ressejue hi / how mon
ze bileue pat ressejue glorie ech
of opur: & ze seken not þe glorie
pat is of god aloone: nyle ze ges
se þe I am to acuse zoi auentis
þe fadir / it is moyses pat acu
syt zoi: in who ze hope / for if ze
bileuete to moyses: þanetun ze
sthulen bileue also to me / for he
wzoot of me / but if ze bileue not
to his lettris: how sthule ze bi
leue to my wordis. // **c. vi.**

After þes þingis ihc wen
te ouer þe see of galile:
pat is tiberias / & a gre
et mltitude sthude hi: for þe
syzen þe tokenes þe dide on
hem pat werē syke / þfore ihc
wente into anhil: & lat þe wip
hile distylis / & þe pass was ful
myz: a feente day of þe ieris /
þfore wane ihc hadde luf up his
þzen: & hadde seyn pat a greet
mltitude cam to hi: he seip to
filip / wher of sthulen we bye

loones: þe þes me etc. / but he sei
de þis þing: tēþige hi / for he wot
te what he was to do / filip an
swerde to hi / þe loones of tiberias
hyndid pens. sthulen not to he:
þe ch man take a litil what / don
of hile distylis andren þe bo
pur of symon petre: seip to hi /
a child is here pat hay fyne bar
ly loones & twey fytthys / but
what ben þese among so manje
þfore ihc seip / make hem sitte to
þe mete: & þwas moche þep in
þe place / and so men lauten to
þe mete as fyne poulend in nou
bre / and ihc took fyne loones /
& whie he hadde do þankigis:
he departite to me pat satten
to þe mete: & also of þe fytthys:
as moche as þe wolden / & whie
þe weren sthulid: he seide to hile
distylis / gader ze þe relis pat
ben left: & þe peristhe not: & þe
þe gaderite & fillten twelf cof
fyns of relise of þe fyne barly
loones & twey fytthys: pat lette
to hem pat hadde etu / þfore þe
me whie þe hadden seyn þe sig
ne pat he hadde don: seide / for þe
is verily þe pfecte pat is to co
me in to þe world / and whie ihc
hadde knowu: þe þe were to co
me to take hi & make hi þig:
he sthuloone eft into anhil: &
whie euentyd was comu: hile
distylis wente don to þe see: &
þe wente up into a boot: & þe
camē on þe see to casarnan: &
derknessis weren mad þane:
& ihc was not come to he: & for
a greet wynd blew: þe see roos
up / þfore whie þe hadden ro
wid as fyne & twenty finlon

gis or þatty: þe seyn ihc walki
ge on þe see: & to be nyl þe boot /
and þe dide: & he seide to hem /
I am: nyle ze drete: & þore þe
wold take hi to þe boot: & anco
þe boot was at þe lond: to which
þe wenten. **¶** An petop day þe
peple ftood on þe lee sy: þe
was noon opur boot þe but con
and pat ihc entride not wip hi
se distylis into þe boot: but hi
se distylis aloone wente / but
oper bootis came fro tiberias:
bistdis þe place wher þe hadde
etu breod: & diden þankigis to
god / þfore whie þe peple hadde
seyn: þe ihc was not þe: ne þe
hile distylis: þe wenten up in
to bootis: & came to casarnan
seþige ihc / and whie þe hadde
fondu hi ouer þe lee: þe seiden
to hi / raby how come þou hydur:
ihc answerte to hem & seide / tren
li treuli / I seie to zoi: ze seke me
not for ze syzen þe myracles: but
for þe eten of loones & were fil
led / worche not mete pat þe
chyp: but pat dibellip into euil
rige luf / which mete manys lone
sthal zine to zoi for god þe fadir
hay markid hi / þe þore þe seide
to hi / what sthulen we do: þe we
worche þe werkis of god: ihc an
swerde: & seide to þe / þis is þe werk
of god: þe bileue to hi: who he
seute / þfore þe seide to hi / what
tokene þane dost þou: pat we
seu & bileue to þe: what worcht
þou / þou fadris eeten manys in
desert: as it is writu he zaf to
hem breod: fro heuene to ete: þe
þore ihc seip to þe / trenli trenly
þe seip to zoi: moyses zaf zoi not

breod fro heuene: but my fadir
zyney zoi uery breod fro heuene
for it is uery breod pat comeþ
don fro heuene: & zyney luf to þe
world / þfore þe seiden to him / lord
þie zine us þis breod: & ihc seide
to þe / I am breod of luf / he pat
comeþ to me: sthal not hugre:
he pat bileueþ in me: sthal neue
þu sthulid: but I seide to zoi / þe han
seyn me: & ze bileuete not. **¶** All
þing pat þe fadir zyney to me:
sthal come to me: & I sthal not ra
te hi out: pat comeþ to me / for
cam don fro heuene: not þe I do
my wille: but þe wille of þe pat
seute me: & þis is þe wille of þe
fadir pat sente me / pat al þing
þe fadir zaf me: I lese nouzt
of it: but azen reise it in þe laste
day: & þis is þe wille of my fadir
pat sente me / & ech mā pat seip þe
lone & bileueþ in hi: haue euilast
rige luf: & I sthal azen reise him
in þe laste day: þfore ieris gruc
chide of hi: for he hadde seid: I am
breod pat cam don fro heuene:
& þe seide / whie þis is not ihc þe
lone of ioseph: whos fadir: & mod
we han knowu / how þane seyn þis:
þe cam don fro heuene: & þfore
ihc answerte: & seide to hem / nyle
ze grucche to gidre. **¶** No mā may
come to me: but if þe fadir pat
sente me draue hym: & I sthal
a zen reise hi in þe laste day: it is
writu in pfectis: and alle me sthu
len be able for to be tanzt of god /
ech mā þe herte of þe fadir: & hay
lerned: comeþ to me / not for any
mā hay seyn þe fadir: but þis pat
is of god hay seyn þe fadir / so þe
lopeþ: I seip to zoi: he pat bileueþ

in me: haue enelastige hif. I am
breed of hif. zom fadris eeten
mana in desert: & ben deed. I
is breed comyge dou fro heuene.
if ony man ete of: he die not.
I am hynge breed: pat cam dou
fro heuene. if ony man ete of
of ris breed: he shal lyue wyon
ten ende. And ye breed pat y shal
al zyne: is my fleish. for ye hif
of ye world. perfore ye ieris
chiden to gidre & seiden. how may
ris zyne to us his fleish to ete.
pfore ihu sey to he. treuly eten
hif. I seie to you. but ye ete ye fleish
of man's sone & drynken his blo
od: & shulen not haue hif. I
he pat ety my fleish & drynke
my blood: haue enelastige hif. & y
shal azen reyle hi in ye laste day.
for my fleish is verrey mete: &
my blood is verrey drynk. he pat
ety my fleish & drynke my blo
od: dwellyn in me & y in hi. as my
fadir hynge seute me: & y lyue
for ye fadir. and he pat ety me:
he shal lyue for me. ris is breed
pat cam dou fro heuene. not as
zom fadris eeten mana: & ben
deed. he pat ety ris breed: shal
lyue wyon ten ende. he seide pes
pigris i ye synagoge: techige
in casarnai. perfore manye of
hile dysyples heerige seide. ris
word is hard: who may heere
it. but ihu wittege at hi sylf. y
hile dysyples grunthen of ris
pig: seide to hem. ris pig shal
dryn you. pfore if ye seen man's
sone drynge wher he was bibe
re: it is ye spirit pat quykneye
ye fleish. pfiten no pig. ye wor
dis pat y haue spokn to you: be

spirit & hif. but y ben liue of
zon: pat bileue not. for ihu wite
fro ye bigynnyng: whiche weren
bileunge. & who was to bityge
hif. and he seide. pfore y seide to y:
pat no man may come to me: but
it were zom to hif of my fadir.
fro ris tyme many of hile dyl
phs wente abak: & wente not
now wy hif. pfore ihu seide to
ye. twelue. wher ye wolen also
go asey. & symon petri answere
ride to hi. lord to whom shul
we go. you haue wordis of en
lastige hif. & we bilyue & han
known. y you art cit ye sone
of god. perfore ihu answerte
to he. wher y chees not you. th
elue. & soon of you is a fend. &
he seide ris of judas of symon
darioth. for ris was to bityge
hif. Whiche he was con of ye twelue.
After pes pigris. **C. vii.**
ihu walt de into galilee.
for he wolde not walke i
to iudee. for ye ieris souzte to
sle him. and y was wy a feeste
day of seewis. senotegia. & hile
bryen seiden to hif. passe fro hen
& go i to iudee. y also yndylphs
seen y werkis y you doist. for
no man doy ony ying in hildis.
& hi sylf seky to be oppn. if y
doist pes pigris. shewe y sylf
to ye world. for neyr his bryen
bileneten in hif. pfore ihu sey
to hem. my tyme cam not yet.
but zom tyme is eimozore redy.
ye world may not hate you. so
peli it haty me: for y bere wit
nellig. pof. pat ye werkis of
it ben yuele. go ye vp to ris
feeste day: but y shal not go up

to ris feeste day. for my tyme
is not yet fulfilled. whiche he had
de seide pes pigris. he dwelte in
galile. **A**nd after y his brye
weren gon up. vane he zede
up to ye feeste day. not opely.
but as in pryuyte. pfore ye ie
wis souzten hi in ye feeste day.
& seiden. wher is he. & moche
grunthig was of hif among ye
peple. for liue seiden y he is
god. & ope seide nay. but he dyl
ceyney ye peple. neyeles no
man spak openly of hif. for drede
of ye ieris. but whiche ye wyd
dyl feeste day cam. ihu wente
up into ye temple & taunte. &
ye ieris wondred & seide. hon
can ris ma letris: lipen he hay
not lerned. ihu answerte to he.
& seide. my doctryn is not myn.
but his pat seute me. if ony man
wole do his wille. he shal kno
we of ye techig. wher it be of
god. or y. **C. viii.** of my sylf. he
pat spek of hi sylf seky his
owne glorie. but he pat seky
ye glorie of hi pat seute hi: is
lofate. & vnyrt. whiche is not
in hi. wher moyses zaf not to
you a lawe. & noon of you doy
ye lawe. what seken ye to sle
me. & ye peple answerte & sei
de. you haue a deuyl. who seky
to sle pee. ihu answerte & seide
to he. y haue don ouer. & alle
ye wondren. pfore moyses zaf
to you circucio. not for it is
of moyses. but of ye fadris. & i
ye sabat ye circucio. ama. if
ama take circucio in ye sa
bat. pat ye lawe of moyses be
not brokn. han ye indignatio

to me. for y made al ama hool i
ye sabat. **C. ix.** pyle ye deme after
ye face: but deme ye arreful
dom. pfore sime of ierlm seide.
wher ris is not he. whiche ye ieris
seken to sle. & lo he spek openly.
& ye ieris no pig to hi. wher ye
pnces kuiken dyl. y ris is cit.
but we knowen ris ma of whiche
ma he is. but whiche cit shal co
me. no man woot of whiche he
is. pfore ihu cryede in ye temple.
techige & seide. ye kuiken me. &
ye knowen of whiche y am. & y
cam not of my sylf. but he is
trewe pat seute me. whiche ye kno
wen not. y know hi. & if y seie
y knowe hi not. y shal be hif.
to you a here. but y know him
for of hi y am. & he seute me. per
fore ye souzten to take hi. & no
man sette on hi hondis. for his our
cam not yet. and manye of ye pe
ple bileneten in hif. seiden. wha
ne cit shal come. wher he shal
do mo tokenes. pan yo pat ris doy.
farisees herden ye peple milige
of hi pes pigris. & ye pnces & fari
sees seuten mynistris. to take
hi. pfore ihu seide to he. zit a lital
tyme y am wyon: & y go to
ye fadir. pat seute me. & shule
seke me. & ye shulen not frinde.
and wher y am. ye moou not co
me. pfore ye ieris seiden to he
sylf. whidur shal ris go. for we
shulen not frinde hif. wher he wole
go into statrig of hepen me. &
wole teche ye hepen. what is
ris word whiche he seide. & shu
len seke me. & ye shulen not frin
de. & wher y am. ye moou not co
me. but in ye laste day of ye greet

seeke: the good & crpe & seide: if
any man purst: come he to me
& drynke: he pat bileren i me as
ye scripture seip: floodis of quike
watur shulen flowe fro his wom-
be: but he seide: pis pig of ye spi-
rit: who me pat bileren in hi
shulden take: for ye spirit was
not yett joyn: for the was not yett
glozified: pfoze of pat cupawye
whie ye hadden herd res wor-
dis of hi: ye seiden: pis is vili-
a plete: ope seiden: pis is crist:
but sume seiden: wher eit comen
fro galilee: wher ye scripture
seip not: pat of ye seed of dauid:
& of ye castel of bethleem wher
dauid was: eit comen: pefoze
dilectioun was maad amog ye pe-
ple for hi: for sume of hem wolde
haue takn hi: but no ma sette
hondis on hi: pfoze ye mynistres
came to billykyns & farilees: &
ye seide to he: whi brouste ze not
hi: ye mynistres answeriden: ne
we man spak so: as pis ma spe-
ke: pefoze ye farilees answeri-
den to hem: wher ze ben dilectioun
also: wher oure of ye pnces or of
ye farilees: bileren in hi: but
pis peple pat knowen not ye la-
we: ben cursid: nycodem seip to
hem: he pat cam to hi by nyzt: &
was oon of hem: wher oure lare
demer aman: but it haue first
herd of hi: & knowe what he do-
th: ye answeriden: & seide to hi:
wher art a ma of galilee also:
seke p apturis: & seip: p a plete
reip not of galilee: & ye seiden
asenrech to his hous:
But the wete: **John**
into ye mount of olivete:

John
viii
Eerly eft he cam into ye temple
and al ye peple cam to hi: & he
sat & taughte he: & scribis & far-
sees brygen an woman takn ma-
nour: & ye seiden: hur in ye
myddel: & seiden to hi: man: pis
woma is now takn in auouthe:
& in ye lawe moyses comaunde
us: to stoune suche: pfoze what
seist thou: and ye seiden: pis pig
temptige hi: & ye mynten ac-
cuse hi: & the broude hi self doth
& woot whi his figur in ye eere
and whie ye abiden at yunge hi:
he reistide hi self & seide to hem:
he of zou pat is wyoute synne:
first caste a stoon into hur: & eft
he broude hi self: & woot in ye
eere: & ye heerige res pigis we-
ten away: oon after anoth: & ye
bigynnen fro ye eldres me: & the
dyette aloone: & ye woman ston-
dige in ye myddel: & the reistide hi
self: & seide to hur: woman wher
ben ye pat acuseden pee: no
ma hap dāpned pee: she seide: no
man lord: the seide to hur: neper
i thal dāpne pee go pou & now
astward nyle p syne more: p
foze eft the spak to hem & seide:
I am ye lizt of ye world: he pat
suey me: walken not in derknes:
his: but thal haue ye lizt of lif:
pfoze ye farilees seide: pou berst
witnellig of pi self: pi witnellig
is not trewe: the answeriden &
seide to he: and if i bere witnel-
lig of my self: my witnellig is
trewe: for i woot fro whennis
i cam: & whidur i go: but ze w-
te not fro whennis i cam: ne whi-
dur i go: for ze deme afur ye fle-
sch: but i deme no ma: & if i de-

John
me: my dom is trewe: for i am
not aloone: but i & ye fadir pat
seint me: and in zour lare it
is writn: p ye witnellig of tikep
me is trewe: i am pat bere wit-
nellig of my self: & ye fadir
pat seint me: bere witnellig
of me: pfoze ye seiden to hi: whe-
re is pi fadir: the answeriden me
p ye fadir: if ze knowe
my fadir: if ze knowe me: pa-
mentur ze shulde knowe also
my fadir: the spak res wordis
in ye temple: techige in ye te-
ple: & no ma coot hi: for his our
cam not yett: pfoze eft the seide
to hem: lo i go: & ze shulen seke
me: & ze shulen dye in zour fi-
ne: whidur i go: ze moun not
come: pfoze ye ieris seiden:
wher he thal sle hi self: for he
seip: whidur i go: ze moun not
come: & he seide to he: ze ben of by-
neve: i am of aboue: ze ben of
pis world: i am not of pis wor-
ld: pfoze i seide to zou: pat ze sh-
ulen die in zour synne: for if ze
bileren not pat i am: ze shu-
len die in zour synne: pfoze ye
seiden to hi: who art thou: the
seide to he: ye bigynys whiche
also speke to zou: i haue many
pigns to speke & to deme of zou:
but he pat seint me: is soyt fast:
& i speke in ye world res pigns
pat i herde of hi: and ye kneke
not: p he depide his fadir god: p
foze the seip to hem: whie ze han
reistid manns sone: pāne ze shule
knowe: p i am & of my self: i do
no pig: but as my fadir taughte
me: i speke res pigns: and he pat
seint me: is wip me: & seint me

not aloone: for i do enmore po-
pigns pat ben pleyng to hym:
whane he spak res pigns: manye
bileren in hi: pfoze the seide to ye
ieris: pat bileren in hi: if ze dis-
ellen in my word: verily ze shule
be my diliphs: & ze shulen knowe
ye trewe: & ye trewe thal ma-
ke zou fre: pfoze ye ieris answe-
riden to hi: we ben ye seed of abra-
ham: & we seruete nene to man:
hou seist pou: p ze shulde be fre:
the answeriden to he: trenh trenh:
i seie to zou: ech ma pat doy syne:
is seruaut of synne: & ye seruaut
dwellyn not in ye hous wyoute
ende: but ye sone dwellyn wyoute
ende: pfoze if ye sone make zou fre:
verily ze shulen be fre: i woot
p ze ben abrahams sones: but ze
seken to sle me: for my word ta-
kep not in zou: i speke po pigns
pat i seip at my fadir: & ze doen
po pigns: p ze syzen at zour fadir:
ye answeriden & seiden to hi: abra-
ham is our fadir: the seip to hem:
if ze ben p sones of abrahā: do
ze ye werkis of abrahā: but now
ze seken to sle me a ma: pat ha-
ue spoke to zou trewe pat i her-
de of god: abrahā dide not pis
pig: ze doen ye werkis of zoure
fadir: pfoze ye seiden to hym:
we ben not born of fornicacioun:
we han o fadir god: but the seip
to hem: if god wer zour fadir: so
peth ze shulden loue me: for i pat-
lite fory of god: & cam: for wep-
i cam of my self: but he seint me:
whi knowe ze not my speche:
for ze moun not heere my word:
ze ben of ye fadir ye denel: & ze
wolen do ye deliris of zour fadir:

he was a malleer: fro re biggynge
and he stood not in treupe: for treupe
is not in hy: whiche he speketh
a lesyng: he speketh of his owne
for he is a lye: & fadir of it: but
for he seide treupe: ze bileue not
to me: who of you shal repreue
me of syne: if he seide treupe: &
whi bileuen ze not to me: & he is
is of god: heer yf re wordis of
god: perfore ze heeren not: for
ze ben not of god: pfore ze ieris
answeride & seiden: wher we seie
not wel: yf you art a samaritā: &
hast a deucl: the answeride & sei-
de: yf hane not a deucl: but yf ho
noure my fadir: & ze han viho
nourid me: for yf seke not my
glorie: yf he pat seketh & demer-
treuli treuli: seie to you: if ony
man kepe my word: he shal not
take deap wipoute ende: perfore
ye ieris seiden: now we han kno-
wū: yat you hast a deucl: abra-
ham is deed: & ye pferis: & you
seist if ony man kepe my word:
he shal not take deap wipoute
ende: wher you art gretter pā
our fadir abrahā: yat is deed:
& ye pferis beu doed: whom ma-
fist you p silf: the answeride
if yf glorie my silf: my glorie
is nouit: my fadir is yat glori-
fiep me: who ze seyen yf he is you
re god: & ze han not knouū hy:
but yf haue knouū hy: & if yf seie
yf yf knoue hi not: yf shal be a ly-
ere lichy to you: but yf knoue hi:
& yf kepe his word: abrahā your
fadir gladide to se my day: & he
syf & ioped: pāne ye ieris seide
to hi: you hast uot yet fyttyr: &
hast you seyn abrahā: perfore

the seide to he: treuli treuli: I
seie to you: bifore yf abrahā sh-
ulde be: yf am: perfore ye token
proues to cast to hi: but the had
de hy: & wente out of re temple
Id the passige
A sū amā blind fro re bur-
ye: and hile dūplis arde
hi: maistur what synede: yf mā
oz his eldis: yf he shulde be born
blind: the answeride: ney yf mā
synede ney his eldis: but yf ye
wertis of god be stherid in hy: it
byhony me to worche ye wer-
tis of hi: yat seide me: as longe
as ye day is: ye myt shal come:
whiche no mā may worche: as loge
I am i pe world: I am pelyt of re world:
whiche he hadde seid res pūis: he seide
to ye erpe: & made deap of re spo-
tile: & anoyntide ye deap on his
pzen: & seide to hi: go & be pou
thū in re watir of siloe: yat is
to seie seint: pāne he wente & was
stherid: & cam seynge: and so ney
choris & yei pat hadde seyn hy
bifore: for he was a begger: seide
wher yf is not he: yat sat & beg-
gide: ower me seiden yf yf is ower
me seide nay: but he is hē hy: but
he seide: yf yf am: yf fore ye sei-
den to hi: how ben yf pzen ope-
nyd: the answeride: pulke mā yat
is seid the: made deap & anoyntide
my pzen: & seide to me: go you to
ye watir of siloe: & wanthe: &
yf wente & wanthe: & syf: and
yei seide to hy: wher is he: he sei-
de: yf woot not: yei leden hi: yat
was blind to ye farisees: and it
was sabat: whiche the made deap:
& openyde hile pzen: est ye farise-
es arden hy: how he hadde seyn

and he seide to he: he seide to me
deap on ye pzen: & yf wanthe: &
yf se: yf fore sūme of ye farisees
seiden: yf mā is not of god: yat
kepy not ye sabat: ower men
septen: how may a syful man
do pes signes: & ar yf was amog
hem: pfore yei seyen estloone to
ye blind man: what seint you of
hy: yat openyde yf pzen: & he
seide yf he is a pfer: perfore ye
was bileueten not of hy: yf he
was blind & hadde seyn: tul yei
depiden his fadir: & modur: yf had
de seyn: & yei arde he: & seide: is
yf zome lone: which ze seyen we
born blind: how pāne seep he nouit:
his fadir: & modur answeride to
hem: & seide: we wite yf yf is
our lone: & yf he was born blind:
but how he seep nouit we witen
neit: oz who opynede his yf we
witen nere: are ze hi: he har age:
speke he hi silf: his fadir & mo-
dur seiden res pūis: for yei dreed
den ye ieris: for pāne ye ieris
hadten colprid: yf ony mā kno-
wlechte hy: est: he shulde be
don out of re synagoge: yf fore his
fadir & modur seiden: yf he har a
ge: are ze hy: yf fore estloone yei
depiden ye mā yat was blind:
& seiden to hi: zyne ponglorie
to god: we witen yf yf mā is a
synere: pāne he seide: if he is a
syner: yf woot neit: o pūis: yf woot
yf whiche yf was blind: now yf se-
perfore yei seiden to hi: what dide
he to pee: how openyde he yf
pzen: the answeride to he: yf sei-
de to you nouit: & ze herde: what
wolen ze estloone heer: wher
ze wolen be maid hile dūplis:

yf fore yei curide hi & seide: be yf
his dūplis: we ben dūplis of
moyses: we wite yf god spak to
moyses: but we knouen not yf
of whems he is: pulke mā answe-
ride & seide to hem: for in yf is a
woundur ful pūis: & ze witen not
of whems he is: & he har openyde
myne pzen: and we wite yf god
heer yf not syful me: but if ony
mā is worthiper of god: & don
his wille: he heer yf hi: fro re
world it is not herd: yf ony mā
openyde ye pzen of a blind born
mā: but yf weir of god: he myt
te not do ony pūis: yei answeride:
& seiden to hi: you art al born in
synes: & techit you us: & yei
putten hi out: the herde yf yei had
den put hi out: & whane he hadde
foude hi: he seide to hi: bileuest yf
in ye lone of god: the answeride
& seide: lord who is he: yf yf bileue
in hy: & the seide to hi: and you
hast seyn hi: & he it is yat speketh
my pee: & he seide: lord yf bileue:
& he sel don & worshipide hy: yf
pfore the seide to hi: yf cam ito yf
world into dom: yf yei pat seen
not: se: and yei pat seen be maid
blind: & sūme of ye farisees her-
den yat werē wy hy: & yei seide
to hy: wher we ben blynde: the
seide to he: if ze werē blynde: ze
shulde not haue syne: but nouit
ze seye yf we seen: zome syne
dūbelhy stille
T renli treuli: seie to yf:
he pat comen not i bipe-
dore into ye foold of sheep: but
shep by amoy weye: is a nyxt re-
ef & a day peef: but he pat en-
try bi pe doze: is re sheparde

of ye sheep to vis ye porter openy:
 & ye sheep heere his vois: & he
 clepþ his owne sheep by name:
 & ledy hem out: & whie he hay
 don out his owne sheep. he goy
 bifore hem & ye sheep suen hym.
 for ye knowen his vois. but ye
 suen not an alien. but fleen fro
 hi: for ye han not knowe ye vois
 of aliens: the seide to hem vis pro
 uerbe. but ye knowen not: wher
 he spak to hem: & fore the seide to
 he eftsoone: treuh treuh: I seye
 to you: y am ye doze of ye shee
 p: as manye as han come: we
 ren myt peenes & day peenes. but
 ye sheep herden not he: I am
 ye doze of ony ma shal entre by
 me: he shal be saued: & he shal
 go yn & shal go out: & he shal fyn
 de leseyng: amyt reef comey not:
 but y he stele. sle. & lese: & I cam
 y yei hane lyf: & hane more ple
 ceunully. **I** am a good shepar
 de: a good sheparde: syner his
 lyf for his sheep: but an hyrd
 hyne & pat is not ye sheparde.
 whos ben not ye sheep his ony
 ne: seep a wolf comyge. & he
 leuey ye sheep & fleep: for he
 is an hyrd hyne: & it per teyner
 not to hi of ye sheep: I am a go
 od sheparde: & I knowe my shee
 p: & my sheep knowen me: & as
 ye fadir hay knowu me: I kno
 we ye fadir. & I putte my lyf
 for my sheep: I hane over sh
 eep pat ben not of vis folde: &
 it bihoney me to byrge hem to
 gader. & yei shulen heer my
 vois: & it shal be maad o foold:
 & o sheparde: ye fore ye fadir
 louey me: for I putte my lyf.

Ye wolf rany
 shyp. & dyspar
 pley ye sheep
 & ye hyrd hyne
 fleep

pat eftsoone I take it: no ma
 taky it fro me: but I putte it
 of my self: I hane power to put
 te it: & I hane power to take
 it azen: vis maide met I hane
 taku of my fadir. **I** fte dillen
 adu was maad a mong ye
 wis: for pes wordis: & manye of
 he seiden: he hay a deuyl & mad
 dip: what heeren ze hy: oren me
 seiden: pes wordis ben not of a
 man pat hay a frend: wher ye
 deuyl may opene ye vien of hy
 de me. **I** fte fte fte of ye
 halewyng of ye temple were
 maad in ierlm: & it was ierlm:
 & the wallide in ye temple: ye
 porche of salomo: & fore ye ierlm
 camen aboute hym: & seiden to
 hy: how longe takist pon a wep
 oure soule: & if pon art crist:
 seie pon to us openly: the an
 sweride to hem: I speke to you
 & ze bilenen not: ye weris pat
 I do in ye name of my fadir: be
 ren witness of me: but ze bi
 leue not: for ze ben not of my
 sheep: my sheep heere my vois:
 & I knowe hem: & yei shulen
 me: and I yme to he enlastige
 lyf: & yei shulen not perlythe
 wyponen ende: & noon shal ra
 nylythe he fro my hond: pat pig
 pat my fadir zaf to me: is more
 pa alle pigis: & no ma may ra
 nylythe fro my fadris hond: I
 & ye fadir ben con: ye ierlm
 taken up stouns: to stoune hi:
 the answeride to he: I hane the
 wid to you many goode weris
 of my fadir: for which weris
 of hem stoune ze me: ye ierlm
 answeride to hi: we stoune ye

not of good werk: but blasse
 mye: and for you synen y art
 aman: makist y self god: the
 answeride to he: wher it is not
 writu in zoure lawe: y seide
 ze ben goddis: if he seide y yei
 were goddis: to which ye wo
 rd of god was maad: & apture
 may not be vndon: ylle y ye
 fadir hay halewyd & hay let to ye
 world: ze seyen y you blasse me
 for I seide y am godis sone:
 if I do not ye weris of my fadir:
 nyle ze bilene to me: but if I do
 you ze wolen not bilene to me:
 bilene ze to ye weris: ye knowe
 & bilene: y ye fadir is i me & I
 in ye fadir: & fore yei loue to
 take hi: & he wente out of her ho
 dis: and he wente eftsoone ouer
 iordan. into pat place wher iohu
 was first baptisge: & he dwelle
 re: & manye camen to hi & sei
 den: for iohu dide no myracle:
 & alle pigis what eue iohu seide
 of vis: were soye: & manye bi
 leueden in hy. **I** fte fte
 ad per was a sye ma
 lalarus of betanye of ye
 castel of marye & martha hile
 sistris: & it was marie which
 auoyntide ye lord wy opneuet.
 & wypte his feet wy hir heeris:
 whos broy lalarus was sye: y
 fore hile sistris senten to hi: &
 seiden: lord lo he who you louest:
 is hie: & the herde & seide to hem:
 vis hie nelle is not to ye deyr:
 but for ye glorie of god: y man
 my lone be glorified by hi: & the
 louede martha: & hir sister ma
 rye & lalarus: & fore whie the
 herde y he was sile: pane he

dwellede in ye same place twey
 dayes: & after pes pigis: he sei
 de to hie disciplys: go we eft in
 to iudee: ye disciplys seyen to hi:
 maistur now ye ierlm stouren
 for to stoune ye: & eft goist y
 yidur: the answeride: wher y
 ben not elueie omis of ye day:
 if ony ma wandre in ye day: he
 hyt y not: for he seep ye list of
 vis world: but if he wandre i ye
 myt: he stoumly: for list is not
 in hi: & he sey pes pigis: and af
 tur pes pigis he sey to hem: la
 larius oure frend sleep: but
 I go to reule hy fro sleep: & fore
 hie disciplys seide: lord if he sle
 p: he shal be sauf: but the had
 de seid of his deyr: but yei gelli
 den y he seide of slepig of sleep
 rane y fore the seide to hem opp
 ly: lalarus is deed: & I hane ioye
 for you: pat ze bilene: for I was
 not yer: but go we to hi: per for
 thoms pat is seid didur: seide
 to euene disciplys: go we also:
 y we drey wy hi: & go the cam:
 & fond hi hange rane foure
 dayes in ye graue: & berthanye
 was blydis ierlm as it were
 fittene furlongis: & manye of
 ye ierlm camen to marye &
 martha: to confort hem of
 her broyr: y fore as martha her
 de pat ihu cam: she ran to hy
 but marie sat at home: y fore
 martha seide to ihu: lord if you
 haddist be here: my broyr had
 de not be deed: but now I moot:
 pat what eue pigis you shal
 are of god: god shal yme to y
 the seip to hy: y broy shal ryle
 azen: martha seip to hi: I moot

rified. **T**reuli. I seie to you. but
 a corn of wheate falle into ye
 erve & be deed. it dwelleth alone.
 but if it be deed. it bringer mo
 che frucht. he pat louey his lyf
 shal lese it. & he pat haty his
 lyf in vis world. kep it unto
 euilathge lyf. **I**f ony man serue
 me. sue he me. & wher I am.
 pere my mynstrer shal be. if
 ony man serue me. my fadir shal
 alworshipe hi. now my soule
 is troublid. & what shal I seie.
 fadir saue me fro vis our. but
 verfore I cam into vis our. fadir
 clarifie y name. and a vois
 cam fro heuene & seide. & I ha
 ue clarified. & eft I shal clarifie.
 yf ore ye peple pat stood & herde.
 seide yf ydur was maad. ower
 me seiden an engel spak to hi.
 shif answerite & seide. vis vois
 cam not for me. but for you.

f.

Now is ye dom of ye world. now
 ye pnce of vis world. shal be ca
 st out. and if I shal be euhan
 tid fro ye erve. I shal drawe
 alle pigis to my self. & he seide yf
 pig. signyfyge by what depe he
 was to dye. & ye peple answeri
 de to hi. we han herd of ye lawe.
 yf crist dwelleth wyouten ende.
 & hou seist you. it bihouey man
 soue to be a reid. who is vis
 manns lone. & pane the seip to
 hem. zit alitil lizt is in you. wal
 ke ze ye while ze han lizt. yf derk
 nellis caache you not. he pat wan
 dny in derk nellis. woot net. whi
 dur he gory. while ze han lizt. bi
 leue ze in lizt. yf ze be ye childre
 of lizt. shif spak res pigis. & we
 te & indde hi fro hem. & whane he

hadde don so many myrachs bifo
 ze he. rei bileneed not in hi. pat
 ye word of slape ye pfete schi
 de be fulfillid. which he seide. lord
 who bileneed to omre heerig. &
 to who is ye arm of ye lord the
 wid. yf ore rei mynstrer not bilene
 foret slape seide. he hay blyndid
 her yren. & he hay maad hard ye
 herte of hem. yf rei se not wy
 pte. & vnderstonde wy herte. &
 yf rei be comitid. & heele hem. I
 seide res pigis. whine he sy
 ye gloze of hi. & spak of hi. nepe
 les of ye pnces manys bileneed
 in hi. but for ye farules rei. ho
 wlechten not. yf rei shulde not
 be put out of ye synagoge. for
 rei loueten ye gloze of me. more
 pan ye gloze of god. & the cryete
 & seide. he pat bileneey i me. bile
 ney not i me. but in hy. pat sen
 te me. he pat seep me. seep hym
 pat sente me. I hit cam into ye
 world. yf ech pat bileneey i me.
 dwelle not i derk nellis. and if
 ony man heeruy my wordis. & he
 prp hem. I deme hi not. for I cam
 not yf I deme ye world. but pat
 I make ye world luf. he pat dis
 pish me. & taky not my wordis.
 hay hi pat shal iuge hi. vilke
 word pat I haue spokn. shal
 deme hi in ye laste day. for I
 haue not spokn of my self. but
 vilke fadir pat sente me. zaf to
 me amandemet. what I shal se.
 & what I shal speke. & I woot
 yf his mandemet is euilathge lyf.
 yf ore ye pigis. I speke. as ye fa
 dour seide to me. so I speke.

Bif ore ye feeste. **I**f ye
 day of pass. the writte

yf his our is comi. yf he passe fro
 vis world to ye fadir. whine he had
 de loued hile pat were in ye wo
 rld. into ye ende he louede hem.
 & whine ye sofer was maad. wha
 ne ye denel hadde putt pane ito
 ye herte. yf judas of symonit stari
 oth shulde bitraye hi. he writte yf
 ye fadir. zaf alle pigis to hi. into hi
 hondis. & pat he wente out fro
 god. & gory to god. he risy fro ye
 souper. & doy of his doyis. and
 whane he hadde takn a linen dlop.
 he gride hi. & affward he putte
 wat ito a basin. & bigan to wailhe
 ye disciplis feet. & to wype wy
 ye linen dlop. wy which he was
 gurd. & lo he cam to symonit petre.
 & petre seip to hi. lord wailthe
 my feet. the answerite. & seide
 to hi. what I do you wost not now.
 but you shalt wite affward.
 petre seip to hi. you shalt neuie
 wailthe my feet. the answerite
 to hi. if I shal not wailthe pee.
 you shalt not haue part wy me.
 symonit petre seip to hi. lord not
 oonly my feet. but bope ye hon
 dis & ye heed. the seide to hi. he
 pat is wailthe hay no nede. but
 pat he wailthe ye feet. but he is
 al cleue. & ze ben cleue. but not
 alle. for he wite who was he pat
 shulde bitraye hi. yf ore he seide
 ze ben not alle cleue. & so affur yf
 he hadde wailthe ye feet of hem.
 he took his dlopis. and whine he
 was set to mete aren. eft he seide
 to hem. ze witen what I haue
 do to you. ze clepen me man. &
 lord. & ze seyen wel. for I am yf
 ze if I lord. & mastr haue wailthe
 your feet. & ze shulen wailthe

don anoveris feet. for I haue zom efan
 ple to you. yf as I haue do to. & so do ze. treu
 ly treu. I seie to you. ye seruant
 is not gretter. pan his lord. neyr
 an apostle is gretter. pan he pat se
 te hi. if ze wite res pigis. ze shi
 len be blelid. if ze doe hem. I seie
 not of alle you. I woot whiche I ha
 ue choli. but yf ye scriptur be ful
 fillid. he pat ety wy breed. shal
 reyse his heele aren me. treuly
 I seie to you. bifoze it be don. yf wha
 ne it is don. ze bileneey yf I am. treu
 ly treu. I seie to you. he pat taky
 who eue I shal seide. resseuey
 me. & he pat resseuey me. resseuey
 ney hi pat sente me. whine the
 hadde seid res pigis. he was trou
 blid i spirit. & wituelide & seide. treu
 ly treu. I seie to you. yoon of you
 shal bitraye me. yf ore ye disciplis
 lokiten to gidre. dounige of whom
 he seide. and so oon of hile disciplis
 was reitige in ye bosom of ihu. who
 ihu louede. yf ore symonit petre
 bekeney to hy. & seip to hi. who
 is it of whom he seip. and so wha
 ne he hadde reitid aren on ye brest
 of ihu. he seip to hy. lord who is it.
 the answerite. he it is to who I shal
 alareche a sop of breed. & whane
 he hadde wett breed. he zaf to ju
 das of symonit stari. & affur
 ye mollel. pane sachanas entri
 de into hi. and the seip to hi. pat
 pig pat you doubt. to you lizt. yf
 noon of he pat sat at ye mete
 wite wher to he seide to hi. for hi
 me geilliden for judas hadde pur
 his. pat the hadde seid to hi. bie yf
 ye pigis pat ben nede ful to us.
 to ye feeste day. or yf he shulde yf
 ne eu pig to uedy men. yf ore

whine he hadde takē ye moſſel: he
 wente out a noon: & it was nyȝt:
 and whine he was gon out: the
 ſeide: now māns ſone is clari-
 ſed: & god is clariſied in hi: if god
 is clariſied in hi: god ſhal clariſie
 hi in hi ſelf: & anon he ſhal da-
 riſie hi. **I**ſte ſones zit a litel: I
 am wyȝ you: ze ſhulen ſeke me
 & as I ſeide to ye ierwis: whidur
 I go ze moū not come: & you I ſeie
 now: I ſpue to you ane we man-
 demet: yat ze loue to gidre: as I
 louede you: & I ze loue to gidre
 in viſ piȝ alle men ſhule knowe:
 I ze ben my diſcipulis: if ze han lo-
 ue to gidre: ſymōud petre ſey
 to hi: lord whidur goſt you: the
 anſweride: whidur: I go: you
 maſt not ſube me now: but I
 ſhalt ſube aſur ward: petre ſey
 to hi: whi may I not ſube y' now:
 I ſhal putte my lyf for yee: the
 anſweride: I ſhalt putte y' lyf
 for me: treuh treuh: I ſeie to yee:
 ye coſ ſhal not croue: til you
 ſhalt demye me pries: and he ſey
 to hile diſcipulis. **I**ſte xiii.
B not zoure herte aſtra-
 yed: ne drede it: ze bileue
 in god: & bileue ze in me: I ye
 hons of my fadir: ben manye
 dwelligis: if ony piȝ laſt: I had
 de ſeid to you: for I go to make
 redy to you a place: and if I go
 & make redy to you a place: eft
 ſome I come: & I ſhal take you
 to my ſelf: y' wher I am: ze be:
 & whidur I go ze witen: & ze wi-
 ten ye weye: Thomas ſey to hi:
 lord: we wite not whidur y' goſt:
 & how moun we wite ye weye:
 the ſey to hi: I am weye treu-

& lyf: no mā comeȝ to ye fadir:
 but by me: if ze hadden knowe
 me: ſoyeli ze hadden knowe al
 ſo my fadir: and aſur ward ze
 ſhulen knowe hi: & ze han ſeyn
 hi: filp ſey to hi: lord thewe to
 us ye fadir: & it ſuffily to us
 the ſey to hi: ſo longe tyme I am
 wyȝ you: & han ze not knowē me:
 filp: he pat ſey me: ſey alſo ye
 fadir: how ſeyt you: thewe to us
 ye fadir: bilcheſt pon not: y' I
 am in ye fadir: & ye fadir is in
 me: ye wordis y' aſpeke to you:
 I ſpeke not of my ſelf: but ye ſad
 hi ſelf dwellige in me: dory ye wer-
 kis: bileue ze not y' am in ye fa-
 dir: & ye fadir is in me: ellis: bi-
 leue ze for yille werkis: treuh:
 treuh: I ſeie to you: if amā bile-
 ueȝ in me: alſo he ſhal do ye wer-
 kis y' I do: and he ſhal do grette
 werkis y' a peſe: for I go to ye fa-
 dir: & what en piȝ ze aſen ye fa-
 dir in my name: I ſhal do viſ piȝ:
 y' ye fadir be glorified: I ye lone:
 if ze aſen ony piȝ in my name: I
 ſhal do it: if ze louen me: kepe
 ze my comandementis: & I ſhal
 pzeie ye fadir: & he ſhal ſpue to
 you anoy confortour ye ſpirit
 of treuȝe: to dwelle wyȝ you wyȝ
 outen ende: which ſpirit: ye wold
 may not take: for it ſeyt hi not:
 neper knowy hi: but ze ſhule
 knowe him: for he ſhal dwelle
 wyȝ you: & he ſhal be in you: I
 ſhal not leue you fadir-leſ: I
 ſhal come to you: zit a litel: & ye
 wold ſey not now me: but ze
 ſhulen ſe me: for I lyne: & ze ſh-
 ule lyne in yat day ze ſhule knowe
 me y' I am in my fadir: & ze in

me: & I in you: he pat hay my com-
 andementis: & kepy he: he it is
 yat louey me: & he yat louey me:
 ſhal be lōed of my fadir: & I ſhal
 loue hy: & I ſhal thewe to hi my
 ſelf: Judas ſey to hi: not he of
 ſtarioth: lord what is don: y' you
 ſhalt thewe y' ſelf to us: & not
 to ye world: the anſweride: I ſeide
 to hi: if ony mā louey me: he ſh-
 al kepe my word: & my fadir ſh-
 al loue hi: & we ſhulen come to
 him: & we ſhulen dwelle wyȝ hi:
 he yat louey me not: kepy not
 my wordis: & ye word which ze
 han herd is not myn: but ye fa-
 dris yat ſeute me: res piȝis: I ha-
 ue ſpoke to you dwellige anoyȝ
 you: but yille hooly goſt ye confort-
 our: whom ye fadir ſhal ſede
 in my name: he ſhal teche you
 alle piȝis: what en piȝis: I ſhal
 ſeye to you: pees: I leue to you:
 my pees: I ſpue to you: not as ye
 world ſpueȝ: I ſpue to you: be not
 zom: herte aſtrayed: ne drede it: ze
 ha herd y' ſeid to: I go: & come to: y' of
 ze louede me: for I ze ſhule
 hane ioye: for I go to ye fadir: for
 ye fadir is gretteȝ yān: I & now
 I hane ſeid to you biſore y' it be don:
 & whine it is don: ze bileuen: now
 I ſhal not ſpeke many piȝis w
 you: for ye putte of yis word comeȝ:
 & har not in me ony piȝ: but y'
 ye wold knowe y' I loue ye fadir:
 & as ye fadir yat a comandemēt
 to me: ſo I do: yſe ze go we heu-
 ne: & my fadir is an erpe-
 riker: ech brauce in me yat
 berry not fruyt: he ſhal take a
 wey it: & ech yat berry fruyt: he

ſhal purȝe it yat it bere ye mo-
 re fruyt: now ze ben clene for ye
 word yat I hane ſpokē to you: dw-
 elle ze in me: & I in you: as a brau-
 che may not make fruyt of it ſelf:
 but it dwelle in ye vyne: ſo neȝ
 ze: but ze dwelle in me: I am a
 vyne ze ye brauchis: who yat dwel-
 ly in me: & I in hy: viſ berry mo-
 che fruyt: for wyȝoute me ze
 moū ne piȝ do: if ony mā dwel-
 ly not in me: he ſhal be caſt out
 as a brauche: & ſhal were drey: & rei-
 ſhule gadre hi: & rei ſhule caſte hi to ye fier:
 & he berry: if ze dwelle in me: & my
 wordis dwellen in you: what en
 piȝis ze wolen: ze ſhulen aſe: &
 it ſhal be don to you: in yis piȝ
 my fadir is clariſied: y' ze byȝe
 for y' ful moche fruyt: & y' ze be ma-
 ad my diſcipulis: as my fadir loue
 de me: I hane loued you: dwelle ze
 in my lone: if ze kepen my coman-
 demētis: ze ſhulen dwelle in my
 lone: as I hane kept ye comande-
 mētis of my fadir: & I dwelle in
 his lone: yele piȝis: I ſpak to
 you: y' my ioye be in you: & your
 ioye be fulfilled: viſ is my coman-
 demēt: y' ze loue to gidre: as I loue
 de you: no mā hay moze loue yān
 viſ: y' aman putte hiſ lyf for hile
 frendis: ze ben my frendis: if ze
 doen yo piȝis yat I comande to
 you: now I ſhal not clepe you ſer-
 uantis: for ye ſeruaūt woot not
 what hiſ lord ſhal do: but I hane
 clepid you frendis: for alle piȝis whē
 I ſeie: I herde of my fadir: I hane
 maad knowē to you: ze han not
 choſū me: but I chees you: & I ha-
 ue put you: y' ze go & byȝe
 for fruyt: & your fruyt dwelle

11 e. **W**hat eu pig ze areu pe fadir
 in my name: he zyne to zoi/ pes
 pigis / comande to zoi: p ze loue
 to gidre / if pe wold haty zoi.
 Wite ze p it hadde me in hate ra
 yur pan zoi / if ze hadden be of
 pe world: pe world shulde loue
 pat pig pat was his / but for
 ze ben uot of pe world. but /
 chees zoi fro pe world: p fore pe
 world haty zoi / hane zyned of
 my word which / sende to zoi.
 pe seruans is not gretter pan
 his lord / if pei han purfined me:
 pei shulen pursulke zoi also / if
 pei han kept my word: pei shu
 len kepe zoi: also / but pei shu
 len do to zoi alle pes pigis for
 my name: for pei knowe not hi
 pat sende me / if / hadde not co
 mu / hadde not spokn to he:
 pei shulden not hane syne / but
 now pei han noon excusaciou of
 her syne: he pat haty me: haty
 also my fadir / if / hadde not don
 werkis in hem which he uod oyr
 man dide: pei shulden not ha
 ue syne / but now hope pei han
 seyn / han hatid: me / my fa
 dir / but p re word be fulfild.
 pat is writu in her lawe: for pei
 hadden me in hate wipoute cau
 se / but whie pe confortour shal
 come: which / shal sende to zoi.
 fro pe fadir: a spirit of treuue
 which comey of pe fadir: he shal
 bere witneslig of me / ze shule
 bere witneslig: for ze bey wip me
 fro pe bigynnyng. **11. c. 26. 11.**
Thes pigis / hane spokn
 to zoi: p ze be not shail
 drid / pei shulden make
 zoi wipouten pe synagogis /
 but pe our comey: p ech man pat

sleep zoi: come p he dony seru
 se to god / and pei shulen do to zoi
 pes pigis: for pei han not known pe
 fadir ney me / but pes pigis / spak to zoi:
 whane pe hour of hem shal come.
 ze hane myde p / sende to zoi. **11.**
 sende not to zoi pes pigis fro pe
 bigynnyng: for / was wip zoi /
 now / go to hi pat sende me: / no
 ma of zoi ary me / shidur von
 goist / but for / hane spokn to /
 pes pigis: hemynelle hay fulfild
 lid zoi: her te / but / sende to zoi
 treuue: it spedy to zoi / go / for
 if / go not forp: pe confortour shal
 al not come to zoi / but if / go fo
 rp: / shal sende hi to zoi / whie
 he comey he shal repreue pe
 world of syne: for of mynne
 se / of dom / of syne: for pei han
 not bileued in me / of mynne
 nelle: for / go to pe fadir / now
 ze shulen not se me / but of dom:
 for pe pnce of pis world is now de
 med / ze / hane many pigis for
 to seie to zoi: but ze monn not be
 re hem now / but whane pille spi
 rit of treuue comey: he shal te
 che zoi al treuue / for he shal not
 speke of hi self: but what euer
 pigis he shal heer: he shal speke
 / he shal telle to zoi / so pigis pat
 ben to come / he shal clarifie me:
 for of myne he shal take: / shal
 telle to zoi / alle pigis which en
 pe fadir hay: ben myne / p fore
 / sende to zoi: for of myn he shal
 take: / shal telle to zoi. **11. c. 26. 11.**
 tel: / pane ze shulen not se me /
 / est done alitel: ze shulen se
 me: for / go to pe fadir / p fore
 me of hile distyplis senden to gidre:
 what is pis pig pat he leip to us:
 alitel / ze shule not se me: / est

done alitel: ze shule se me: for
 / go to pe fadir: / p fore pei sende /
 what is pis pat he leip to us alitel:
 we witen not what he spek y /
 he knew p pei wolden aye hy: /
 he sende to hem / of pis pig ze seke
 among zoi: for / sende / alitel: / ze
 shulen not se me: / est done alitel:
 / ze shulen se me: / treuue
 treuue / seie to zoi: pat ze shule
 mozne / wepe: but pe world shal
 al hane ioye / ze shule be ioyis
 ful: but zoi re forwe shal turne
 into ioye / / shoman whie she
 berry child: hay hemynelle for hy
 tyne is comu / but whie she
 hay born a lone: now she venty
 not on pe peyne for ioye for ama
 is born fro pe world: / p fore ze ha
 uoye / forwe / but est done / shal
 se zoi: / zoi: her te shal hane
 ioye: / no ma shal take fro /
 zoi: ioye / in pat day ze shule
 not are me ony pig. **11. c. 26. 11.**
 treuue / seie to zoi: / if ze aren
 pe fadir ony pig in my name:
 he shal zyne to zoi / til now ze
 ariden no pig in my name:
 are ze / ze shule take p zoi:
 ioye be ful / hane spokn to zoi
 pes pigis in proubis: pe our co
 mey whane now / shal not spe
 ke to zoi / puerbis: but openly
 of my fadir: / shal telle to zoi /
 in pat day ze shule are i my
 name / / seie not to zoi: p /
 shal preie pe fadir of zoi: for pe
 fadir hi self louey zoi: for ze ha
 loued me: / han bileued p / we
 te out fro god / / wente out fro
 pe fadir: / / cam into pe world
 est done / leue pe world: / / go
 to pe fadir: hile distyplis senden

to hi / lo now p / p etist openly: /
 von seist no puerbe / now we w
 ten pat von woot alle pigis /
 / it is not nede to pee: / ony ma
 are pee / in pis pig we bileuen:
 p von wentest out fro god: /
 answerde to he / now ze bileue /
 lo pe our comey / now it comey:
 / ze be dysparplid: ed into his ou
 ne pigis: / p ze leue me alloone /
 / am not alloone: for pe fadir
 is wip me / pes pigis / hane spo
 ke to zoi: / ze hane pees i me /
 pe world ze shule hane dilese:
 but truste ze / hane oucome pe world. **11.**
Thes pigis / hane spokn
 / whie he hadde
 cast / up his yzen into hene
 ne: he sende / fadir pe our co
 mey: clarifie y lone: / p / lo
 ne clarifie pee: as pou hast zoi
 to hi / pouwer of ech fleidh / al
 pig pat pou hast zoi to hi: he zyn
 ue to hem euiladige lyf: / p /
 is euiladige lyf: / p / pei knowe
 pee very god alloone: / whi pou
 hast sent ihu est / / hane clarified
 pee on pe erpe: / hane endid pe
 werk pat pou hast zoi to me to
 do: / now fadir clarifie pou me
 at yself: wip pe clerenele pat
 / hadde at pee: bifore pe world
 was mand / / hane thewid y na
 me to po me / which pou hast po
 mi to me of pe world: / pei weren
 yme: / pou hast zoi hem to me:
 / pei han kept y word: / now
 pei han knowu: / alle pigis pat
 pou hast zoi to me ben of pee:
 for pe wordis pat / hast zoi
 to me: / / af to hem / / pei han
 taku / han knowu: verily: /
 wente out fro pee: / / pei bileue

liberide | von leide: \forall I am a k^{ing}
 to vis pig: I am born. & to vis I
 am com^{ing} into re world: to bere
 withethig to treipe | ech rat is
 of treipe heerip my vois | pilat
 sey to hi | what is treipe: & whā
 he hadde seid vis pig: est he we
 re out to re ierwis. & seide to hem
 I fynde no cause in hi | but it is a
 custon to zon: \forall I deliue oon to
 zon i pass. \forall soze wole ze \forall I deli
 ue to zon re k^{ing} of ierwis. alle
 cryeden est soone & seide | not vis:
 but baraban & barabaa was a grece

Therfore pilat **C. xij.**
took vane ihu: & about
gate And knyghtis wrypē
A crowne of pornes: & setten on
his heed: & dūen aboute hi a clop
of purpur: & came to hi & leide
hail fig of ierwis: & rei zaiuen
to hi boffatis / eftsoone pilat wē
te out: & leide to hem / lo / bygge
hi out to zoi. p ze knowe p / i / f
de no cause i hi: & so ihc wente
out berige a crowne of pornes:
& a clop of ppur: & he seip to hem
lo ye mā but whāne ye biſtho
pis & mynyſtris hadden seyn hi:
rei ceden & leiden / crucifie cru
cifie hi / pilat seip to hem / take
ze hym: & crucifie ze / for i / f
de no cause in hi / ye ierwis and
iherude to hi / we han a lawe: &
bi ye lawe he owip to dīe: for he
made hi godis lone / p fore whic
pilat hadde herd ys word: he
dredde more: & he wente into ye
moot halle eft soone: & leide to
ihu of whē art p: / but ihc zaf
noon answer to hi / pilat seip to
hi / spekeſt thou not to me / woost
you not p / i / haue poiber to cru

cliche yee: & i haue power to de-
 lyue yee: ihc answeride & shal-
 lest not haue ony power agens
 me: but it wer zom to yee fro
 a boue: perfore he pat bitook me
 to yee: har ye more lyne / fro pat
 tyme pilat souzte to deliuer hi
 but ye iewis cryede & seide: if y
 deliuest yis: pou art not ye em-
 perours friend: for ech ma pat
 maky hi self kyng: azenleip ye
 empour: & pilat wshane he had
 de herd yes wordis: lade ihc for-
 & sat for domeshin i a place pat
 is seid hcofratras: but in ebrew
 golgatha: & it was pass empy-
 as it wer ye swete our: & he seip
 to ye iewis: lo zom kyng: but
 pei criade & seiden: take away:
 take away: cruche hi: pilat
 seip to he: shal i crucifie zom
 kyng: ye bulhopis answeriden
 we ha no eig: but ye empour: &
 pane pilat brook hi to hem: y
 he shulde be crucified: and poi to
 ben ihc & lode hi out: & he bar
 to hi self a cross: & wente out to
 pat place pat is seid calluare:
 in ebrew golgatha: wher pei cru-
 cified hi: & ope: twerne wip si-
 don ou yis syde: & oon on pat side:
 & ihc in pe myddel: & pilat wzo
 ot a tytle: & sette on ye cros: & it
 was writen: ihc of nazareth kyg
 of iewis: pfore manye of ye ie-
 wis radden yis tytle: for ye pla-
 ce wher ihc was crucified: was
 myz ye cite: & it was writen: in
 ebrew: grek: & latyn: pfore ye
 bulhopis of ye iewis seiden to pi-
 lat: myle pou writte eig of iewis:
 but for he seide: i am eig of iewis:
 pilat answeride: pat pat i haue

writu: / þane writu / þfore re
 knytis whāne þei hadden cruci
 fied hi: tooken hile clopis. & ma
 den four partis: to ech knyzt a
 part: & a coote / & re coote was
 outh seim. & woum al aboute þ
 fore þei leiden to gide / litte we
 not it: but caste welott whos it
 is / þ re leptire be fulfuld seinge
 þei partiden to hem my clopis: &
 on my clop þei casten lot: & re
 knytis duren þes pigris: but biþ
 dis þe croll of ihu stode his modir.
 & re suster of his modir. mar þe
 cleofe: & marie maudeleyn: þe
 fore whāne ihu hadde seyn his mo
 dir: & þe disciple stondege whom
 he louete: he leip to his modir / wo
 man: to þi lone afterwar: he leip
 to þe disciple / to þi modir: & fro
 þi: þe disciple took hi: into his
 modir. **A**fterward ihc writte
 þis alle pigris ben endid: þ re
 leptir: wer fulfuld he leip / þ
 te: & a vessel was sett ful of vyn
 egre. & þei leide þylope aboute þe
 þowunge ful of vynegre: & put
 ten to his woin / þfore whāne ihc
 hadde takū þe vynegre: he leide
 it is endid / & whāne his heed was
 bowid down: he zaf up þe gozt / þ
 fore for it was þe past eyn. þ
 þe bodies shulden not abyde on
 þe croll in þe sabot. for þat was
 a greet labat day: þe ierwis þie
 pilat: þ þe hipis of þe shulde be
 bokū: & þei takū anep: þfore þu
 yztis came: & þei braken þe pries
 of þe kirte & of petof þat was
 cished wyþ hi: but whāne þei we
 ren come to ihu as þei lyze hyn
 dred þane: þei braken not hile
 pries: but oon of þe knytis: ope

nyde his lide wip alper. ⁊ anon
 blood ⁊ watir wente out. ⁊ he
 spat sy; bar witneslis. ⁊ his wit
 nellig ⁊ trewe. ⁊ he woot ⁊ he
 sey trewe pigis. ⁊ ⁊e bileue. ⁊
 yes pigis weren dou. ⁊ ⁊e arup
 ture shulde be fillid. ⁊e shulen
 not breke aboon of hi. ⁊ etidone
 anoy apur sey. ⁊ei shulen se
 into who ⁊ei pisten yur; but af
 tur yes pigis wolep of armach.
 pꝛiete pilat. ⁊ he shulen take a
 wey ye body of ihu. for pat he was
 a duple of ihu. but þuy for dre
 de of ye ierwis. and pilat suffer
 de. ⁊ so he cam. ⁊ took awei ye
 body of ihu. ⁊ nicodeme cam also
 ⁊ hadde come to hi first by nyt.
 ⁊ brougte amedding of myrrre.
 ⁊ aloes. as it were an hondred
 pound. and ⁊ei token ye body of
 ihu. ⁊ bounden it in linen cloris.
 wip swete knelligge of mentis.
 as it is custom to jewis for to bi
 rie. ⁊ in ye place wher he was
 crucified. was azerd. ⁊ i ye zerd
 a newe graue in which. it no mā
 was leyd. ⁊ fore ⁊ei ⁊ei putten
 ihu for ye rigle of jewis seeite.
 for ye sepulcre was ny; **C. x.**

And in oday of þe wof-
 mary mardelen cam eer
 to þe graue wher it
 was yt clerk & she spy þe stoon
 moued awei fro þe graue. & for
 she ran & cam to symon petre
 & to anopur discipule. whom ihc
 louete. & sew to he. þei han ta
 ken þe lord fro þe graue. & we wi
 ten not wher þei han leyd hym
 þfore petre wente out & vylle
 opur discipule. & þei camen to þe
 graue. & þei tibeue rünen to

gidre. & pilke omyr duple ran bi
fore petr. & cam first to ye graue
and whine he stoupe. he syz pe
theetis lyggige: ne peles he en
tride not. & fore symonid petre cam
hiltige hi. & he entride into ye g
ne. & he syz pe theetis leid. & pe su
darie pat was on his heed not
leid wip ye theetis: but bi it silt
blappid into o place. & fore yane
pilke duple pat cam first to ye
grauie entride. & syz & bilerede
for pei kneien not zit pe strip
tur. & it bihoofe hi to ryle azen
fro deop. & fore pe duple weten
etfloone to he silt. but marie sto
od at pe gnie wipontefor wepi
ge. & pe while she wepte. she bo
wide hir & biheeld forp into ye g
ne. and she syz. tweyne angelis
sittige in whyt. oon at pe heed.
& oon at pe feet. wher pe body of
ihū was leyd. & pei seien to hir.
woman what weepst þu. she
seide to he. for pei han take away
my lord. & i woot not wher pei
han leyd hi. whine she hadde seid
res pigis. she tuede backward.
& syz ihū stoung. & wiste not þu
it was ihū. ihc seip to hir. woman
what wepst þu. who seist þu.
she gellige þu he was agardener.
seip to hi. su. if þou hast takū hi
up. seie to me wher þou hast leid
hi. & i shal take hi away. ihc seip
to hir. marie. she turnde. & seip
to hi. rabon. þu is to seie maister.
ihc seip to hir. wile þou touche me.
for i haue not zit stried to my fa
dir. but go to my briden. & sepe
to hem. i stye to my fadir. & to
zour. fadir. to my god. & to zour
god. marie maideleyn cam tel

lige to pe duple. & syz pe
lord. & res pigis he seide to me.
& fore whine it was enyn. & yor day.
oon of ye sabotis. & pe zatis were
sthat wher pe duple were
gadrid for drete of ye ienis. ihc
cam & stood in pe myddel of ye d
ciphis. & he seip to hem. pees to i.
and whine he hadde seid. he the
wide to he hondis. & seide. & fore pe
duple ioped. for pe lord was
seyn. and he seip to hem. pees
to zou. as pe fadir seute me. i sen
de zou. whine he hadde seid. he
bleis on he & seide. take ye hook
goft. whos spues ze forp. ro
ben forzou. to he. & whos ze wip
holden. ro ben wipholdū. but iho
nis oon of ye twelue. pat is seid
didm. was not wip hem. whine
ihc cam. & fore pe ope duple se
den. we han seyn pe lord. & he seide
to hem. but i ge m his hondis pe
fathyr. of hapys. & putte my
fyringir into ye places of ye naye
les. & putte myn hond into his
spide. & shal not bilerede. & after
eizte dages. etfloone hile duple
were wip me. & thomas wip
ihc cam. while pe zatis were sthat.
& stood in pe myddel. & seide. pees
to zou. after ward. he seip to the
mis. putte yn her. yn fyringir. &
se myn hondis. & putte hidir.
ryn hond. & putte ito my spide. &
wile þou be vnbeleifful. but seyn
ful. thomas answere. & seide
to hi. my lord. & god. ihc seip to hi.
thomas for þou hast seyn me. þou
bileredist. bleid be þu. pat lize
not. & han bilered. & ihc dide ma
nye ope. signes in ye silt of hi
se duple. whiche ben not wip

ti in vis book. but rise ben wip
pe bilered. & ihc is crist. pe lone
of god. & pe bilered. haue luf
in his name. **A**nd ihc etfloone thew
de hi to hile duple. at
pe see of tiberias. & he
thewde hi. pns. & were to gidre
symonid petr. & thomis. pat is
seid didm. & nathanael. pat is
seid. of ye came of galilee. & pe lones
of sebedee. & tweyne ope of hi
se duple. symonid petr. seip
to hem. i go to fyllhe. pei seipen
to hi. & we come wip pec. & pei
wenten out. & wenten into a bo
ot. & in pat myt. pei tooken no
pyng. but whine pe moze was
comū. ihc stood in pe bynke. ne
peles pe duple kneie not. &
it was ihc. perfoze ihc seip to
hem. children wher ze han ony
loupyng. pig. pei answere. to
hi. nay. he seide to he. putte ze pe
nett into ye rixhalf of ye row
pyng. & ze shule fynde. & pei put
tiden pe nett. & yane pei myt
not drawe it. for mltitide of f
sh. perfoze pilke duple whom
ihū louede. seide to petr. it is pe
lord. symonid petr. whine he had
de herd. & it is pe lord. gurte hi
wip a coote. for he was nakid.
& wente into ye see. but pe ope
duple came bi boot. for pei we
re not fer fro ye lond. but as a
two hundrid cubytis. drawyge
pe net of fyllhis. & as pei came
don into ye lond. pei syzen cois
higgige. & a fyllsh leid on. & breed
ihc seip to he. bynunge ze of ye f
shis. whiche ze han takū now.
symonid petr. wente up. & drew

pe nett into ye lond. ful of grette
fyllhis. an hundrid fifty. & pre. &
whine pei weren so manye. pe nett
was not brokū. ihc seip to hem. co
me ze ete ze. & no mā of he pat
saten at ye mete durste aze hi.
who art þou. witege. & it is pe lord.
& ihc cam. & took breed. & zaf to he.
& fyllhe also. now vis yadde ty
me. ihc was thewid to hile duple.
whine he hadde ryllū azen fro
deop. & whine pei hadden etū. ihc
seip to symonid petr. symonid of
john louest þou me more. yane
pele. he seip to hi. he lord. & woot
þu. i loue pec. ihc seip to hi. fede
þou my lambzen. & he seip to hi.
symonid of john louest þou me.
he seip to him. he lord. þou woot
þu. i loue pec. he seip to hi. fede þou
my lambzen. he seip to hi. pe prid
de tyme. symonid of john louest
þou me. petre was heip. for he
seip to hi. pe yadde tyme louest þu
me. & he seip to hi. lord. þou knowst
alle pigis. þou woot þu. i loue pec.
ihc seip to hi. fede my sheep. &
treuli treuli. i seie to pec. whine
þou wer. zonger. þou gurdest pec.
& wandredist. where þou woldist.
but whine þou shalt. were elder.
þou shalt holde forp. yn hondis.
& anof. shal gurte pec. & shal lede
pec. whidur þu wolt. not. he seide. vis
pig. signyfyge by what deop. he
shulde glorie god. & whine he
he hadde seid. res pigis. he seip to
hi. swiwe þou me. petre turnde.
& syz pilke duple hiltige. who
ihc louede. which also restide in ye
louper. on his best. & he seide to
hi. lord. who is it. pat shal brye
pec. perfoze whine petre hadde

seyn pis: he seyn to ihu lord but
what pis: ihu seyn to hi so i wo
le pat he dwelle til i come / whi
to yee: sunbe pou me / y fore pis
word wente out among yee bu
pen: y pilke disciple diep not: /
ihu seide not to hi: y he drey not:
but so i wole y he dwelle til i
come: what to yee / pis is pilke
discipl: y at ber y witneslig of res
pitis: / y woot he and we wite
y his witneslig is trewe: / y ver
ben also manpe ope pigis pat
ihu dide / whiche if rei ben witi
bi ech bi hi self: / i deine y y wold
hi self shal not take y bokis:
pat ben to be witi.

**Here en
dip ye gospel of iohu: / i bigyn
ney ye plog on ye pistle of po
ul to romayns.**
Quayns ben in ye currey
of itale: y woren dilleynge first
of falle profetis: y is falle terehe:
/ y vndir ye name of our lord ihu
ch: y woren brownt into ye la
we / y pletis y is into cerymony
es eyn fleschly kepyng of moy
ses laue / of pletis acordige w
y cerymonyes: whiche vlig is
contrie now to ye treupe / y fre
dom of ciths gospel. Poul azen
clep y res romayns to vry seyn
/ y treupe of ye gospel: / y wryt
to hem pis pistle fro corinthe.
pis seyn ierom in his plog on
ye pistle to romayns: / y here
bigynner ye pistle w.

Poul ye seruait of
ihu crist: clepid an
apostle / departid
into ye gospel of god:
whiche he hadde by
hote to fore bi hi pletis: in hooch

apturis of his sone / whiche is mand
to hi of ye seed of dauid: bi ye fle
sch: / y he was bifore ordeyned ye
sone of god in vru: bi ye spirit of
halewying: of ye azenyng of seed
me of ihu crist our lord: / y wrou
we han resleynd grace / y e offi
ce of apostil: to obeie to ye seyn
in alle folkis for his name / amig
whiche ze ben also clepid of ihu
ch: / y so alle pat ben at rome: dar
ligis of god / y clepid hooch: grace
to you / y pees of god our fadir: / y
of ye lord ihu crist. / y i do y
figis to my god: bi ihu crist for alle
you: for your seyn is ihu crist in
ye wold: for god is a witnesse to
me: to who i serue in my spirit: / y
ye gospel of his sone: y wrytne
celesig: / i make wite of you eue in
my prieris: / y blesche if in my
maner: su tyme i haue a spech
wepe i ye wille of god to come to
you: for i desyre to se you: to par
ten shilhat of spiritual grace: y
ze be cetermyd: / y is: to be coufor
tid to god in you: bi seyn pat is
bore you: / y myn to guidre: / y bu
pen i nyle y ze vndknowe: y of
te i pynposide to come to you
and i am lett to pis tyme: / y i
haue su fruyt in you: as moyn
folkis: to greke / y to barberis
to wyle me / y to vnbile me: i am
dettour: so pat y is i me is redy
to preche ye gospel also / y to you
pat ben at rome: for i shame not
ye gospel: for it is ye vertu of god
into heelp to ech ma pat bileuey:
to ye ieu first: / y to ye greke: for
ye rist wyllesse of god is shewid
in it: of seyn into seyn: as it is wri
till for a wite man lyuer of seyn:

for ye wryppe of god is shewid fro
heueue on al vnyte: / y wickidnes
se of yome: pat wryholde ye tren
ye of god in vnyte wyllesse: for
pat rig of god pat is knowen: is
shewid to he: for god har shewid
to he: for ye vnyssible pigis of hi:
pat ben vndir stonid in holdu
of ye creatur of ye wold bi po
pitis pat ben maid: he y euer
lastige vru of hi y ye godhed: so
y rei moln not be excusid: for ihu
ne ye hadden knowe god: ye glori
fiden hi not as god: neyn dide
ranfigis: but ye vnyssible herte
of hem was derfid: for ye seynge
y hem self were wyle: ye were
maid foolis and ye chaungen ye
glorie of god vnyssible: into
ye lykenesse of an ymage of a deed
ly ma: / y of briddis: / y of foue: / y
tid beestis: / y of serpentis: for whiche
pig: god bitook hem into ye desy
ris of her herte: ito vdenesse: y
ye pouythe wry wryngis her
bodies in hem self: ye whiche chail
giden ye treupe of god into leelg:
/ y herieden / y serueden a creatur:
rase ran to ye creatur: pat is
blesid into woldis of woldis a
me. / y per fore god bitook he into pas
hous of shenlyth: for ye wrymen
of hem chaungen ye kyndely vll: i
to pat vll pat is azen kynde: allo pe
men forloken ye kyndely vll of wo
man: / y beneden in her desiris to
gidre: / y men into men wryngten
filyhed: / y resleynden into he hile
ye meede pat bihofte of her erro
and as ye puede pat ye hadden
not god in knowig: god bitook he
ito a repuable wite y rei do po pig:

pat ben not conuenable: y rei be ful
fild w al wickidnesse: malice:
forpynacion: couetise: weynward
nesse: ful of of enye: malleyugis:
aryf: gile: yuel wille: pyn bacate
ris: detractouris: hateful to god:
debaieris: proude: / y hz on melure:
fyndens of yuele pigis: not obei
shige to fadir / y modur: vnyssile:
/ y manly wryoute loue: wryoute
boond of pees: wryoute mercy: ye
whiche whie ye hadden knowe
ye rist wyllesse of god: vndir stode
not: y rei pat doen suche pigis: be
wrypi ye deyn: not oonly ye rei pat do
en po pigis: but also ye rei pat con
sent to ye doeris: / y
Wher fore y art vnyssula
ble: ech ma pat demest: for
in what pig you demest anoy man:
you condempn y self: for you doist
ye same pigis: whiche you demest:
/ y we wite y ye dom of god is asen
treupe azen he: pat doen suche
pitis: but ge lilt you ma: pat de
meit hem pat doen suche pigis: y
doist po pigis: y you shal allape
ye dom of god: wher y dispilest ye
richellis of his goodnesse: / y ye paci
ence / y ye long abyding: / y knowist y
not y ye benygnyte of god: leedir
ye to forpynig: / y but as ym hard
nesse / y vnyssitait herte: y tre
lourest to pee: wryppe in ye day
of wryppe / y of shewig of ye rist
ful dom of god: pat shal zelde to ech
ma asen his werkis soyn to he
pat ben bi patience of good werk:
glorie / y honouir: / y vnyssitait:
to hem pat seken euilastige lyf: but
to he: pat ben of aryf / y pat alen
ten not to treupe: but bileue to
wickidnesse: wryppe / y indigna

cion. tribulacion. & angustie. ito ech
soulle of mā pat worchp ynel to
ye jews first & to ye grek. but glo
rie & honour. & pees to ech mā pat
worchp good pig. to ye jews first
& to ye grek. for acceptioun of p.
soones. is not auentis god. for who
eue han syned wyoute ye laue.
thule perithe wyoute ye laue.
and who eue han syned in ye laue.
pei thulen be demed by ye laue.
for ye heereis of laue. ben not
nist auentis god. but ye doeris of
ye laue thule be maad nist. for wha
ne hevene me pat han not laue.
doen kyndely so pigis pat ben of
ye laue. pei not hamge such ma
ner laue. ben laue to hem self. pat
theiwen ye werk of ye laue. witi
in her hertis. for ye consience of
hem zeldy to hem a witnellig by
tribte hem self of yowtis. pat be
accusinge or defendyng. in ye day
whine god thal deme ye pur pigis
of me afur my gospel by ihu crist.
but if pou art named a ier. & re
tit in ye laue. & hast glorie in god.
& hast knowe his wille. & pou lernd
by ye laue. prenest ye more pfi
table pigis. & trustit yiself to be
a leder of blynde me. ye lzt of he
pat ben iderknessis. to a teacher
of vnyse me. a maistr of zonge
children. pat hast ye fourme of kn
yng. & of treupe in ye laue. what
vane techist pou anoy. & techist
not yiself. pou pat pchist y me
thal not aeie. theit. pou pat te
chist y me thal do no lecherie.
doit lecherie. y pat wlatit maly
metis. doit saclegie. y pat hast
glorie i ye laue. vnyborchpest
god by heetig of ye laue. for ye

name of god. is blasfempd bi you
a mong hepen me. as it is writen
for circucision. ptey if pou kepe
ye laue. but if pou be a trespas
azeyn ye laue. y circucision is
maad prepucie. yerfore if pou
kepe ye rztwysnes of ye laue.
wher his prepucie thal not be a
rettid into circucision. & ye p
cie of kynde pat fulfille ye laue.
thal deme yer. pat bi lette. & cir
cucision art trespaslow. azeyn
ye laue. for he pat is in opyne is
not a ier. ney it is circucision
pat is openly in ye flesch. but
he pat is a ier in hnd. and ye cir
cucision of herte. i spirit. not bi
ye lette. whos pressyng is not of
me but of god. **W**hat vane is more to a ier.
or what profit of circuci
sion moche. by al wyle. first for ye
spetis of god. were bitak. to he
& what if sume of hem bileuede
not. wher ye vubileue of hem hay
avoidid ye fey of god. god forbe
de. for god is sofast. but ech ma
a ier. as it is writen. y pou be iust
fied in y wordis. & on come wha
ne pou art dempd. but if our. wh
kduelle comende ye rztwysnes
se of god. what thulen we leie.
wher god is wickid. pat byyngy
in wraype. afur mā y leye. god
forbede. ellis how thal god deme
yis world. for if ye treupe of god
hay aboundid i my lechng. into ye
glorie of hi. what yt am i demed
as a syner. & not as we ben blas
fempd. & as sū me leyen y we leie.
do we yuele pigis. y gode pigis
come. whos dāpnacion is nist
what vane. & pallen we he. nay

for we han theiwd bi stile. y alle
bope ieris & grekis ben vnder hy
ne. as it is writen. for y is no mā iust.
y is no mā vnderstonde ney
dekige god. alle bowedu away.
to gide ye ben maad vnyprofitable.
y is noon pat dony good pig. y is no
on til to oon ye pte of hem is an
opyn sepulcre. wy her tūgis pei
diden gilefuly. ye venym of ena
kis is vnder her lypis. ye moun
of whiche is ful of curtyg. & bit
turnelle. ye feet of hem ben sibte
to thede blood. soure & curldness
ben i ye weies of he. & ye kne we
not ye weye of pees. ye dæde of
god is not bifoze her yen. & we
witen. y what eue pigis ye laue
spetir. it hekyr to hem pat ben
i ye laue. y ed moun be stappid.
Ech word be maad suget to god.
for of ye werkis of ye laue ech
flesch thal not be iustified
bifoze hi. for bi ye laue per is kno
wng of syne. but now wyoute
ye laue. ye rztwysnes of god
is theiwd. pat is witneid of ye
laue. & ye pteis. & ye rztwysnes
of god is by ye fey of ihu crist. ito all
me & on alle me pat bileue in hi. for y is
no departyng. for alle me synede.
& han nede to ye glorie of god. & ben
iustified frely by his grace. by ye
azenyng. pat is in eit ihu. whom
god ordeynede forzimer bi fey i his
blood. to ye thewyng of his rztwys
nesse. for re myshon of bifoze go
yng synes. in ye berig. up of
god. to ye thewyng of his rztwys
nesse in yis tyme. y he be nist &
iustefyng hi pat is of ye fey
of ihu crist. wher vane is y glori
yng. it is excludid by what la

we. of dedis doying. nay. but by
ye laue of fey. for we deme amā
to be iustified bi ye fey. wyoute
werkis of ye laue. wher of ier.
is god onely. wher he is not also of
hepen me. this & of hevene me. for
oon god is. pat iustifiey circucisi
on bi fey. & ptey bi fey. distry
en we ptey ye laue bi ye fey. god
forbede. but we stabbith ye laue.
What vane. **W**hat vane. **W**hat vane.
thulen we leie. y abra
him on. fadn. afur ye fle
shy found. for if abrahā be iust
fied of werkis of ye laue. he hay
glorie but not auentis god. for
what fey ye spetir. abrahā bile
uede to god. & it was arettid to hi
to rztwysnesse. & to hi pat worchp.
meede is not arettid bi grace. but
by dette. sopeh to hi pat worchp. not.
but bileuey into hi pat iustifiey a
wickid mā. his fey is arettid to
rztwysnesse afur ye purpos of go
dis grace. as danyr fey ye bleid
nesse of amā. whō god accepty.
he ymer to hi rztwysnesse. wy
oute werkis of ye laue. Glesid
ben pei whos wickidnessis ben for
zom. & whos lynes be hyd. Gles
lid is pat mā. to whō god arettide
not syne. pām wher dwellyp yis
blisfulnesse. oonly in circucision.
or also in ptey. for we leyen y
ye fey was arettid to abrahā
to rztwysnesse. how vane was
it arettid. in circucision. or i ptey.
& he took a signe of circucision. a
tooke of rztwysnesse of ye fey
which is i ptey. y he be fadn. of
alle me bileuyge bi ptey. y it be
arettid also to he to rztwysnesse.

¶ pat he be fadir of circucision / not
only to hem pat ben of circucisi-
on: but also to hem pat sinne pe
arepis. of pe fery / which fery is
in pprcie of our fadir abraham
for not bi pe lawe. is biheeste to
abraham or to his seed. y he shul-
de be eyr of pe world: but bi pe
ristwysnesse of fery / for if pei
pat ben of pe lawe. ben epris.
fery is distriped. biheest is don a
wey / for pe lawe worchp may
pe / for where is no lawe. pei is
no trespas: ney is trespallig.
¶ fore ristwysnesse is of pe fery.
y bi grace. biheeste be able to
ech seed / not to pat seed only pat
is of pe lawe: but to pat pat is
of pe fery of abraham / which is fa-
dir of us alle: as it is writun / for
y haue sett yee fadir of many fol-
kis bfore god: to whom yon haue
biueued / which god qupkeney
deed me. & clepy po yigis pat be
not as po pat ben / which abraham
agens hope. biueued into hope.
¶ he shulde be maid fadir of ma-
ny folkis. as it was leid to hym
yus shal y seed be. as pe steris
of heuene. & as pe granel pat
is in pe brynke of pe see / & he
was not maid vntidefast in pe
bileue. ney he biheeste his body
pang upz deed. whane he was
almost of an hundred yer. ne pe
wombe of sare upz deed / also in
pe biheeste of god. he domide not
wy vntist. but he was confort-
tid in bileue. ynygge glorie to
god / witige moost fully. y whi-
en yigis god hay biht: he is my-
ti also to do / verfore it was aret-
tid to hi to ristwysnesse / & it is

not writun only for hi. y it was
arettid to hi to ristwysnesse: but
also for us to whiche it shal be
arettid. pat bileue in hi pat re-
side our lord ihu crist. fro deap / whi-
ch was bitakun for our synes: &
wol men for our vntistung.
¶ fore we writun. **V**
fied of fery. haue we pees
at god bi our lord ihu crist. bi
whom we han my goyng to.
by fery into vis grace. in which
we stonden & han glorie in pe hope
of reglorie of godis children. &
not vis only: but also we glori-
en in tribulacioun / whiche y
tribulacioun worchp patience
& patience purg. & purg hope.
& hope cofoundy not / for pe chari-
te of god is lized abood i our her-
tis by pe hooly gost pat is zoni
to us / and whyle y we were lyke
after pe tyme. whiche dyde et for
wickid me / for synis drey ony ma
for ye nist man. & it for a good ma.
patience si ma dar dpe. & but god
comedy his charite in vs / for if whi-
ne we were it synis: after pe
tyme et was deed for vs. pane
moche more now we mistified i his
blood shulen be saaf fro wyapre
by hi / for if whane whane we
weren eneymes: we ben recon-
celid to god bi pe deap of his son.
nyche more we reconcelid: shu-
len be saaf in pe luf of hi / & not
only vis: but also we glori-
en in god. by our lord ihu crist: by
whi we han relleyued now re-
concelis / y fore as by o ma. hne en-
tride into vis world. & by hne deap
& so deap passid for us alle me.
in which ma alle me synen for

to pe lawe: syne was in pe world
but syne was not rettid: whiche
lawe was not. ¶ but deap reguete
from adam til to moyses. Also i
to hem pat synen not. i hne
se of pe trespallig of ada: pe whi-
ch is liknesse of et to comyge / but
not as gilt: so ye yste / for if pyn-
pe gilt of oon. manye ben deed.
moche more pe grace of god / &
ye yste in pe grace of o ma ihu
crist. hay abondid into many me
& not as bi o syne: so bi ye yste
for pe dom of oon into condepnaci-
oun: but grace of many giltis
into iustificacioun / for if in ye gilt
of oon. deap reguete pynz con: mo-
che more me yste. plente of
grace & of purg. & of ristwys-
nesse shule regne in luf by oon
ihu crist. y fore as bi pe gilt of oon
into alle me into condepnacioun.
so by pe ristwysnesse of oon. ito
alle me into iustifying of luf / for
as by mobedience of oon ma. ma-
nye ben maid synis: so bi pe
obedience of oon. manye shule
be iust / and ye lawe entride. y
gilt shule be plenteuous / but
wher gilt was plenteuous: gra-
ce was more plenteuo. y as sy-
ne reguete into deap. so grace
regne by ristwysnesse into ener-
lastige luf by ihu crist our lord.
¶ fore what. **V**
shule we seie. shulen
we dyelle in syne: y gre-
be plenteuo. god forbete / for h-
on shulen we pat ben deed to sy-
ne: syne yst yne. wher bypen
ze kuowe not. y whiche en we be
baptisid in et ihu. we ben bap-
tisid in his deap / for we ben to

gider buried in hi by baptym i
to deap / y as et ardoos fro deap bi
pe glorie of pe fadir: so walke we
i a newnesse of luf / for if we plan-
tid to gyde. ben maid to pe licnes-
se of his deap: also we shule be of
pe licnesse of his ristwysnesse / whi-
tise vis yst yne. olde man is
crucified to gyde / y re body of sy-
ne be distriped: y we serue no mo-
re to syne / for he pat is deed: is ius-
tified fro syne / & if we ben deed
in et: we bileue y also we shu-
len luf to gyde by hi witige.
for et ristwysnesse fro deap: now
dey not: deap shal no more haue
lordship on hi / for y he was deed
to syne: he was deed onys / but y
he luf: he luf to god / so ze de-
me zoni silt to be deed to syne: but
luf to god i ihu crist our lord.
¶ fore regne not syne i zoni
deap body: y ze oberithe to his co-
uetynis / ney syne ze zoni mebris.
arrunris of wickidnesse to syne.
but syne ze zoni silt to god. as pei
pat synen of deed me. & zoni me
bris arrunris of ristwysnesse to
god / for syne shal not haue lord-
ship on zoni / for ze ben not vndir
pe lawe: but vndir grace. what
yer fore. shulen we do syne. for we
ben not vndir pe lawe: but vndir
grace / god forbete. wite ze not y
to whom ze synen zoni seruaitis
to obeie to: ze ben seruaitis of pat
yig to which ze han oberithid. ep
of syne to deap: ep of obedience
to ristwysnesse / but y panke god
y ze weren seruaitis of syne: but
ze han oberithid of herte. into pat
fourme of techig. in which ze be
bitakun. & ze deluierid fro syne.

be maid seruantes of rystfulnesse.
 I seie pat rig pat is of ma. for pe
 vntableness of zoni fleish but
 as ze han zoni zoni mebris to ser-
 ue to vntableness & to wickidnesse
 to wickidnesse. so now zyne ze zo-
 nre mebris to serue to rystfulnesse
 se into hoolynesse for whanne ze we-
 ren seruantes of syne ze were
 fre of rystfulnesse. yfore what
 fruyt hadden ze pane in po pigis.
 in whiche ze shanne now. for pe
 ende of hem is deap but now ze de-
 lyued fro syne. & maid seruantes
 to god. han zoni fruyt unto hooly-
 nesse. & pe ende chelastige lyf
 for ze wasis of syne. is deap. pe
 grace of god. is chelastige lyf i
 crist ihu oure lord. **C. viij.**
Bryen wher ze knowe not.
 for I speke to me pat kno-
 wen pe lawe. for pe lawe
 hay lordship in ama. as long ty-
 me as it lyuey. for pat woman pat
 is vnder an haleboude. is bound
 to pe lawe while pe haleboude ly-
 uey. but if hir haleboude is deed.
 she is deliued fro pe lawe of pe ho-
 lebonde. for she shal be clepid
 auowtrese. if she be wy anoyr
 ma while pe haleboude lyuey. but
 if hir haleboude is deed. she is
 deliued fro lawe of pe haleboude.
 y she be not auowtrese. if she be
 wy anoyr man. and so my bryen
 ze be maid deed to pe lawe in pe
 body of crist. y ze be of anoyr. pat
 roos azen fro deap. y ze bere fruyt
 to god. for whanne we weren in
 fleish. passions of synes pat we
 re by pe lawe. wrouzte in oure
 mebris. to bere fruyt to deap.
 but now we be bound fro pe la-

we of deap. i whiche we were hol-
 dii. so y we serue in newnesse
 of spirit. & not i eldnesse of lette.
 what yfore shule we leue. pe la-
 we is syne. god forbete. but y knewe
 not syne. but by lawe. for y knewe
 not y conetige was syne. but for
 pe lawe seide. you shalt not coney-
 te. and ym occasion takii. syne
 bi pe mauidemet hay wrouzte i me
 al conetite. for wyponen pe lawe.
 syne was deed. & y lyuede wypon-
 te pe lawe in tyne. but whanne
 pe comandemet was comii. syne
 lyuede azen. but I was deed. & yis
 comandemet pat was to lyf. is
 foundii to me to be deap. for syne
 purz occasion takii bi pe comande-
 ment dilleyuede me. & by pat it
 slow me. yfore pe lawe is hooly.
 & pe comandemet is hooly. & iust
 & good. is pane pat pig pat is god.
 maid deap to me. god forbete. but
 syne y it leue syne. ym good
 ying wrouzte deap to me. y me sy-
 ne ou maner purz pe comandemet.
 and we waten y pe lawe is spry-
 tual. but I am fleishly. seid vnd
 syne. for y vnderstonde not pat
 pat I worche. for I do not pe good
 pig pat I wole. but I do pe ilke
 yuel pig pat I hate. and if I do
 pat pig pat I wole not. I conse-
 te to pe lawe. y it is good. but
 now I worche not it now. but pe
 syne pat dwelly i me. but I
 woot. y in me. y is i my fleish
 dwelly no good. for will hy to
 me. but I shude not to partone
 good pig. for I do not pe ilke go-
 od pig. pat I wole. but I do pe il-
 ke yuel pig. pat I wole not. and
 if I do pat yuel ying pat I wole

not. I worche not it. but pe syne
 pat dwelly in me. yfore I shude
 pe lawe to me willige to do go-
 od pig. for yuel pig. hy to me
 for I de to gudere to pe lawe
 of god astur pe fuer man. but y
 be anoyr lawe i my mebris. azen
 fytige pe lawe of my soule. & ma-
 kige me captif in pe lawe of syne
 pat is i my mebris. I am an vnta-
 bi ma. who shal deliue me. fro
 pe body of yis syne. pe grace of god.
 by ihu crist oure lord. yefore I my
 self bi pe soule serue to pe lawe of
 god. but in fleish to pe lawe of syne.
C. viij.
Vring of dapnacion. is to he
 pat ben i crist ihu. whiche wa-
 dren not astur pe fleish. for pe
 lawe of pe spirit of lyf in crist ihu.
 hay dwynered me fro pe lawe of
 syne & of deap. for pat pat was
 ympossible to pe lawe. i what
 ying it was hyl by fleish. god se-
 te his lone into pe lyfnesse of fle-
 sh of syne & of syne dapnyde
 syne in fleish. y pe mystyng of
 pe lawe wef fulfilled in us pat
 goen not astur pe fleish. but as-
 tur pe spirit. for pei pat ben af-
 tur pe fleish. saugen po pigis
 pat ben of pe fleish. but pei pat
 ben astur pe spirit. feelen po pi-
 gis pat ben of pe spirit. for pe
 prudence of fleish. is deap. but
 pe prudence of spirit. is lyf & pe-
 es. for pe wisdom of pe fleish.
 is enemy to god. for it is not su-
 get to pe lawe of god. for ney-
 it may. & pei pat ben in fleish.
 moun not plesse to god. but ze
 ben not in fleish. but in spirit.
 if nepeles pe spirit of god dwel-

ley in zoni. but if ony hay not pe spi-
 ryt of crist. yis is not his. for if crist
 is in zoni. pe body is deed for syne.
 but pe spirit lyuey for iustifying.
 and if pe spirit of hi pat reside ihu
 crist fro deap dwelly i zoni. he pat
 reside ihu crist fro deap shal quy-
 bene allo zoni. deaply bodies. for
 pe spirit of hym pat dwelly i zoni.
 yfore ze bryen we ben dettours.
 not to pe fleish. y we lyue astur
 pe fleish. for if ze lyue astur pe fle-
 ish. ze shule dye. but if ze bi pe
 spirit sleen pe dedis of pe fleish.
 ze shule lyue. for who enie ben lad
 bi pe spirit of god. pes ben pe sones
 of god. for ze han not take est loo-
 ne pe spirit of seruage in deap.
 but ze han take pe spirit of adop-
 tion of sones. in whiche we cryen.
 abba. fader. & pe ilke spirit. zeldy
 iustellig to oure spirit. y we be
 pe sones of god. if sones. & cryis
 and cryis of god. & cryis to gudre
 wy crist. if nepeles we suet to
 gudre. y also we benglozished to
 gudre. And I deme. y pe passious
 of yis tyne ben not worpi. to pe
 glorie to conyunge pat shal be like
 wid in us. for pe abidig of creatu-
 re. abydy pe sthewig of pe lone
 of god. but pe creatur is suget to
 vanyte. not willige. but for hi
 pat made it suget in hope. for
 pe ilke create shal be deliued fro
 seruage of corrupcion. into liber-
 te of pe glorie of pe sones of god.
 & we witen. y ech creatur. for wy
 & tranelly wy peyne til it. and
 not oonly it. but allo we vs sile
 pat han pe fust fruytis of pe
 spirit. & we us sile sorven wy me
 us for pe adoption of godis sones.

abidinge ye asenblyng of our bo
dy but bi hope we ben maid laf
for hope pat is seyn is not hope
for who hoppe pat pig pat he seep
and if we hope pat pig pat we
seen not we abide bi pacience
and also ye spirit helpy out in
firmyte for what we shulen
preye as it bihonye we wate not
but ye like spirit aris for us w
forwynngis pat moū not be teld
out for he pat sekis ye hertis
wot what ye spirit desyry for
by god he aris for hooly me
we waten y to me pat lone god
alle pigis wozchen to gidre into
good to hem pat after purpos
ben depid seyntis for pilke pat
he knew bifore he bifore ordeyne
de by grace to be maid lyk to ye
ymage of his lone y he be ye fir
ste bigetū among many byren
and pilke y he bifore ordeyne to
blis hem he depid y whiche he
depid hem he iustified y whi
che he iustified y hem he he glo
rified what pane shule we seie
to pes pigis if god for us who
is azens us y which also pari
de not his owne lone but for us
alle brook hy lyon also zat he not
to us alle pigis wry hy who
shal acule azen ye choline me
of god it is god pat iustified
who is it pat cōdepney it is the
cā pat was deed the ye which
roos azen ye which is on ye ryz
half of god y ye which preier
for us who pane shal departe
us fro ye charite of cā tribula
cion oz angwylth oz hūgnyr oz
nakidnesse oz psecucion oz pel
oz liverd as it is writū for we

ben slayn al day for pee we be
gellid as sheep of slaynt but
in alle pes pigis we overcome
for hy pat louede us but i am
certeyn y ney depe ney hy ney
angels ney pncipalis ney
tues ney prelet pigis ney
pigis to comyge ney streng
ye ney hyre ney depnesse ney
noon opy creatur may departe
us fro ye charite of god y is
in cā ihu oure lord ¶ **I**te trewe i crist ihu
he not for my colde
ce beris witness to
me in ye hooly gost for greet
heynesse is to me y contyn
el soure to my herte for i my
salf desyre to be departid fro
cā for my byren pat be my
colins after ye flesch y be me
of ihu whos is adopcion of lones
y glorie y testamēt y ymyng of
ye laue y seruyse of biheeste
whos ben ye fadris y of whiche
is cā after ye flesch y is god a
bone alle pigis blestid to wor
dis amē but not y ye word of
god hap falle doū for not alle pat
ben of ihu yes israelitis ney
yei pat ben seed of abrahā alle
ben lones but in i sac ye seed
shal be depid to pee pat is to
seie not yei pat ben lones of ye
flesch ben lones of god but yei
pat ben lones of biheeste ben
armed in ye seed for whi yis is ye
word of biheeste after yis tyme
shal come a lone shal be to
sare y not couly she but also
rebea hadde tsey lones of o
luggyns by of i sac our fadyr
y whane yei were not zit bozi

don
we hadde on pig of good cry
of yuel y ye purpos of god shul
de dwelle by election not of wer
ke but of god clepige it was
leid to hy pat ye more shulde
serue ye lasse as it is writū
louede iacob but i hardie eam
what ye fore shulen we seie
wher witidnele be auctis
god god forbed for he seip to
moyses y shal haue mercy on
whom i haue mercy y shal y
ue mercy on whom i shal haue
mercy yefore it is not ney of
man willige ney renge but
of god haunge mercy y ye lryp
ture seip to farao for to pis pig
i haue sturd yee y shewe m
pee my stur y my name be
teild in al erpe yfore of whom
god wole he hap mercy y who
he wole he endury pane seist
yon to me what is souz zt for
who wipstondy his wille y mā
what art y pat answere to god
wher a maid ping seip to hy pat
made it what hast yon maid me
so wher a potter of dep hap not
poiker to make of ye same gobet
o vessel into hond anoy into dis
pyt y if god willige to shewe
his wryppe y to make his poiker
knowū hap suffrid in greet
pacience vessels of wryppe able
into depe to shewe ye richelth
of his glorie into vessels of mer
cy whiche he made redy to glo
rie whiche also he depid not con
ly of jewis but also of heye me
as he seip in olee i shal clepe
not my peple my peple y not
my lonyd my lonyd y not geti
ge mercy getige mercy y it

shal be in ye place wher it is leid
to he not ze my peple yei
shule be depid ye lones of god
lymyge but i shye crye for ihu
if ye noubre of ihu shal be as
granel of ye see ye relis ihu
len be maid laf for sope a word
makige an ente y abreggig in
equite for ye lord shal make
a word breggid on al ye erpe y
as i shaye bifore seide but god of
auctis hadde left to us seed we
hadden be maid as sodom y we
hadden be lyk a gomoz yfore whi
shule we seie y heyeue me pat
shulde not ryz wrynele han ge
te ryz wrynele she ye ryz wry
nelle pat is of seip but ihu in
wrynge ye laue of ryz wrynele
se cam not ppytly into ye la
ue of ryz wrynele whi for
not of seip but as of werkis y
yei spurneten azen ye stoon of
offencion as it is writū lo i put
te a stoon of offencion in yon
y a stoon of a landre y ech pat
shal bileue it shal not be cō
foundid ¶ **B**eperen ye wille of my
herte y my bisechng is
maid to god for hem ito heche
but i bere witness to hem y
yei han lone of god but not af
tir kimpus for yei vnkowysge
goddis ryz wrynele y sekige to
make ite fast her owne ryz
fulnesse be not luyet to ye
ryz wrynele of god for ye ende
of ye laue is cā to ryz wrynele
se to ech mā pat bileue for mo
yles wroot for ye mā pat shal
to ryz wrynele y is of ye la
ue shal lyne in it but ye ryz

byfynelle pat is of bileue ley
seve you not in yi her te. who
shal aye into heuene. y is to
seie. to lete don et or who shal
go don into helle. pat is to azen
depe et fro depe. but what ley
ye stpnt. ye word is my. i pi
mony. i m yi her te. pis is ye
word of bileue. which we preche
pat if you knowlecht i pi mo
ny. ye lord ihu et. i bileuett i
ym her te. y god rethid hi fro
depe. you shalt be saaf. for by
her te me bileuey to iustisfies
se. but by mony knowlecht is
maad to heeche. for by stpnt
ley. ech pat bileuey in hi. sh
al not be confoundid. i y is no
distinction of ieu i of greek
for ye same lord of alle. is ryche
in alle pat mykardly clepen hi.
for ech ma who eide shal iward
ly clepe ye name of ye lord. shal
be saaf. how rane shule pei m
wardly clepe hi. into who pei
han not bileued. or how shule
pei bileue to hi. who pei han not
herd. how shule pei heer. wy
oute a prechour. i how shule
pei preche. but pei be sent.
as it is writu. how fan. ben
ye feet of hem pat pchen
pees. of he y prechen good.
pigs. but not alle me oberent
to ye gospel for i laye ley. lord
who bileuede to om heer yng.
y fore ley is of heer yng. but hee
rig. bi ye word of et. but i seie
wher pei herde not. i his loye
ly ye word of hem wente out
into al er ye. i her word is to
ye end of ye world. but i seie sh
rael knew not. first moyses

ley. i shal lete you to erpe. y ze
be no folk. y ze be an vnyte
folk. i shal sende you into wyap
ye. and i laye is boold i ley. i
am foundu of me pat seken me
not. openly i apperite to hem. y
ariden not me. but to israel he ley
al day. i areyte out my hondis to
a peple pat bileuede not. but azen
seyde me. **E**t fore i seye. wher god
hay put away his peple.
god forbed. for i am an isra
elite. of ye seed of abrahm. of
ye lynage of be amny. god hay
not put away his peple. which
he bfore knew. wher ze wite not.
what ye stpnt. ley in elye. how
he precep god azen yrael. lord yei
han slayn pi pferis. yei han vn
dirdoluen ym auteris. i am
left aloone. i pei seken my lyf.
but what ley godis answere to
hi. i haue lete to me senene po
sendis of me. y han not boid
her knees bfore baal. so y fore al
so in pis tyme. ye relyts be maad
saaf. by ye chelyng of ye grace
of god. i if it be bi ye gre of god.
it is not now of werkis. ellis gre.
is not now gre. what rane. i
rael hay not getu pis pat he son
te. but election hay getu. i
ye oye ben blyndid. as it is writu.
god gaf to hem a spirit of compic
tion. hen y pei se not. i eerris y
pei heer. not. into pis day. i da
my ley. be ye boord of he maad
into a gyn bfore hem. i into car
chig. i into shaudir. i into zeldyng
to he. be ye yzen of he maad derf
y pei se not. i boke you don al
gatis ye bak of hem. y fore i seie

wher pei offende so. y pei shulden
falle don. god forbed. but by pe
gilt of hem. heeche is maad to he
rene me. y pei liue he. y if ye
gilt of he ben richellis of ye wo
ld. i ye makig lesse of he be ry
cheellis of heven me. how moche
more ye plente of. but i seie
to you hevene men. for as lon
ge as i am apostle. of heven
me. i shal honou. my mym
terie. i m ony maner. i an my
fleish for to folowe. i y make
sume of he saaf. for if ye lost of
he is ye retoniclyng of ye world.
what is ye takyng vp. but lyf
of dead me. for if a litil part of
pat pat is taffid be hooly. ye hool
gobet is hooly. i if ye roote is hooly.
allo ye branchis. what if ony of ye
branchis ben brok. whne y wer
a wylde olyue tree. art graffid a
mong hem. i art maad felowe of
ye roote. i of ye fatnesse of ye oly
ue tree. nyle you hane gloze aze
mus ye branchis. for if you glori
est. you berit not ye roote. but
ye roote yee. y fore you sent. ye bran
chis ben brok. y i be graffid yn.
wel for vnbilene ye branchis be
brok. but you stondist bi ley.
nyle you lauore hy pig. but dre
de you. for if god sparde not ye
kyndly branchis. lest panetun
he spare not yee. y fore se ye good
nesse. i ye feruente of god. zhe ye
feruente. into he pat felle down.
but ye goodnesse of god into yee.
if you dwelst in goodnesse. ellis
allo you shalt be kutt don. zhe
pei shule be lett yn. if pei dwelle
not i vnbilene. for god is nygty.
to lette he yn etidone. for if y art

kyndly
kutt don of ye wylde olyue tree. i a
zen kynde art lett ito a good olyue
tree. how moche more. yei pat ben
by kynde. shule be lett in her oly
ue tree. but by yere i wole not
pat ze vnknoke pis mystie. pat
ze be not wyle to you silt. for blyd
nesse hay fild a party in israel.
til pat ye plente of heven men
entride. i so al israel shule be
maad saaf. as it is writu. he sh
al come of syon pat shal deliue.
i turne away ye wickidnesse of
jacob. i pis testamēt to he of me.
whne i shal do a wylde her synes.
after ye gospel yei ben euempes for
you. but yei ben moost dere boye
bi ye election for ye fadris. i ye zif
tis i ye clepyng of god. ben wy
oute foryngyng. and as hi tyme
allo ze bileneden not to god. but
now ze han gete mercy for ye vn
bilene of hem. So i rese noy bileue
den not. into you. mercy. y also
pei gete mercy for god dolide
to gidre alle pigs in vnbilene.
y he hane mercy on alle a ye hy
nesse of ye richellis of ye wylde
of ye kynyng of god. how icomp
hensible ben hile domes. i hile wyl
es ben vnschable. for whi who
kneib ye witt of of ye lord. or who
was his coucelour. or who for
me gaf to hy. i it shal be quyt
to hym. for of hym i by hy. i m
hy be alle pigs. to hi be glorie
into iworldis anie. **E**t fore bryen i biletche
you by ye my of god. y
ze yue you bodies. a lynge sa
crifice. hooly plesyge to god. i you
re seruise resonable. and nyle ze
be cofourmed to pis world. but be
ze refourmed i newnesse of you

mei is dāpned. if he etip: for it
is not of fep: & al pig: p: is not
of fep: is hne. **C. 26. 11.**
Bet we sadde me oiben to
sufferie ye febleuelles of
syke me: & not plese to
us self: ech of us plese to his ney
ehore in good: to edificatiō: for
et plehte not to h: self. as it is
w: nū: ye repones of me dūp
lige pee: felden on me for what
emer pigis ben w: nū: po ben w:
tū to oin: techig: p: by pe patie
ce & confort of spturis we han
hope: but god of patience & of
solace zyne to zoi to vnderston
de ye same pig: ech into oyr at
tir ihū crist: pat ze of o wille
w: o moir wozsthye god &
pe sadir of oin: lord ihū est: for
which pig: take ze to gidre: as
allo est took zoi into ye honour
of god: for i sepe p: ihū est was
a mynstre of cruciatō: for ye treu
pe of god: to conferme ye bilhectis
of sadis: & hepe me oiben to ho
noure god for mercy: as it is w:
tū: perfore lord i shal knowleche
to pee amog hepe me: & i shal
syng to yi name: & est he seip:
ze hepe me be ze glad w: his
peple: and est alle hepe me men
herie ze ye lord: and alle pepis
magnifie ze hū: and est i laye
sen: p: shal be a roote of ielle:
pat shal ryle up to goime hepe
me: & hepe me men shulen hope in
hū: & god of hope fulfille zoi in al
iope & pees in bilenpge: p: ze entre
ce in hope & verti of ye hooly gost:
And bryere: i my self am cer
teyn of zoi: pat also ze ben ful of
loue: and ze ben fillid w: al kū

nyg: so p: ze moir moneste ech o:
and bryere more boldely: i woot
to zoi a party as brynggige zoi
to myde: for ye grace pat is zoi
to me of god: p: i be ye mynst
tre of est ihū a mong hepe me
& i halowe ye gospel of god: pat
ye offyng of hepe me be accep
tid: & halew in ye hooly gost: p:
fore i haue glorie in est ihū to god
for i dar not speke oyr pig: of
yo pigis: whiche est don not by
me in to obedience of hepe me
men: in wozd & dedis in verti
of tokenes & grete wondris: i
vtn of ye hooly gost: so p: fro
ierlm bi cūpas to ye illrik see:
i haue fillid ye gospel of est: & lo
i haue prechid ye gospel: not
where crist was named: lest
i bylde vpon anoyers grond:
but as it is w: nū: for to w:
it is not teeld of hū: yei whille
se: and yei pat herden not: sh
ulen vnderstonde: for whiche pig:
i was lettid ful myche: to come
to zoi: & i am lettid to vis tyme
and now i haue not ferpere
place in pes citreis: but i ha
ue desyr to come to zoi: of ma
ny zeeris pat ben passid: whā
ne i bygine to passe into spay
ne: i hope p: in my goyng: i
shal se zoi: & of zoi: i shal be
led ydin: if i vse zoi first in
party p: fore nois: i shal passe
foyr to ierlm: to mynstre to
seyntis: for macedoye & acme
han asayed to make sū zite:
to poze me of seyntis pat ben
i ierlm: for it pleide to he: &
yei ben detours of hem for he
pepe me ben maad p: teneis

of her gostly pig: yei oiben
allo in fleschly pigis to my
nystre to hem p: fore whāne i
haue endid pis pig: i haue af
signed to hem vis fruyt: i shal
passe by zoi to spayne: and i
woot p: i comyge to zoi: shal
come into ye abūdaunce of ye
blessig: of est p: fore bryen: i
byleche zoi bi oin: lord ihū est:
& bi charite of ye hooly gost: p:
ze helpe me in zoi: p: teneis
to ye lord: p: i be deliuerid fro
ye vnseynful men pat ben i hi
tee: and p: ye offyng of my
seruyce: be acceptid in ierlm to
seyntis: p: i come to zoi i ioye
by ye wille of god: & p: i be re
freshid w: zoi: & god of pees
be w: zoi alle amē. **C. 26. 11.**
And i comende to zoi fe
ben oin: sūtir: whiche
is in ye seruyce of ye
churche: p: is at teneis: p: ze rel
sepue hū into ye lord wozpily
to seyntis: & p: ze helpe hū: in
what eue cause she shal neede
of zoi: for she helpide many
men: & my self: greete ze p:
ta & aquyla myn helperis in
est ihū: whiche vnderputide
her neckis for my hū: to whiche
not i aloone do pankyis: but
allo alle ye churchis of hepe me
me: & greete ze wel her meyn
neal churche: greete wel efene
te loued to me: pat is ye firs
te of alie i est ihū: greete wel
marie: ye whiche hay tranelid
moche in vs: greete wel andro
nyk & iuhan my cosyns & my
euene prisōis: whiche ben no
ble among ye aposths: & whi

che were bfore me in est: greete
te wel amphate moost derebor
ye to me in ye lord: greete wel
urban oin: helper: in est ihū: &
staachen my derlyng: greete wel
appellem ye noble in crist: greete
te wel hem pat ben of aristobolis
hous: greete wel erodion my
cosyn: greete wel hem p: ben of
narciscies hous: pat ben in ye
lord: greete wel tryfenam & tri
folam whiche w: men tranelen
in ye lord: greete wel per sida
moost derebor ye w: man: pat
hay tranelid moche in ye lord:
greete wel rufus: & cholone
in ye lord: & his modir & myn gr
eete wel anicrete: hegoucia: her
me: patroban: herma: & bryen
pat ben w: hū: greete wel filo
logus & niham & nereu & his
sister & olympades: & alle ye sey
tis pat ben w: hem: greete
ze wel to gidre in hooly toff: alle
ye churchis of est: greete zoi wel:
But bryen i p: ze zoi: p: ze
aspie hem p: maken dissencōis
& hurtigis blydis ye doctm: p:
ze han lerned: & boike ze avey fro
hem: for suche me serue not to
ye lord est: but to her woube:
& by sikete wozdis & blesigis
disseyuen ye hertis of innocent
me: but zoi: obedience is p:
plushid into euy place: p: fore i
haue ioye in zoi: but i wole p:
ze be wyle in good pig: & syple
in yuel: and god of pees trede
sathanas vnder zoi: feet firs
tely: ye grace of oin: lord ihū
est: be w: zoi: **G**ymothe my
helper: greete zoi wel: & allo
lucius & iason & iolipat: my co

lyns / I tereyns greete zoi wel:
pat wroot yis epistle in ye lord /
sayns my oost gretip zoi wel: &
al ye churche erastus tresorer of
ye citee greetip zoi wel: & quar-
tus broper / ye grace of oure lord
ihū cīt: wip zoi alle amen / & ho-
nour & glorie be to hy pat is my-
ty. to cōferme zoi by my gospel
& prethig of ihū cīt: by ye re-
uelacion of mysterie holdū stille
in tymes eilastige / which my-
sterie is now maid oppn. by ihū
tynis of pētis. bi ye comāde
mēt of god wip oure bigynnyng
& endig: to ye obediēce of fey talle
hevene mē / ye mystye knowū
bi ihū cīt to god alone wip: to
whom be honour & glorie into
wordis of wordis amē.

*Her endip ye pistle to romayns:
& bigynnyng ye prolog on ye firste
pistle to corinthis / yis lew jero.*

Am lyk man herde of ye post-
le ye word of troupe: & weren
peritid i many maneris of fal-
se apollis / sume were peritid
of eloquēce of filosofie ful of wo-
dis: ower men were led into ye
lect of lare of jehis / yis. to hol-
de it nede ful wip ye gospel / ye
posse clepyn azen yis corinthis
to verry fey & wysdom of ye
gospel: & wrytyp to hem fro ef-
frie by tymothe his discipule.

*Her endip ye plog: & bigynnyng
ye firste pistle / c. p.*

Oul depid apottle
of ihū cīt: bi ye will
of god: & lostenes
brov: to ye churche of god pat is
at corinthe / to he pat ben halowid

in cīt ihū: & depid leyntis. wip
alle pat myhardly depen ye na-
me of oure lord ihū cīt. in ech pla-
ce of he & of oure. Grace to zoi
& pees of god oure fadir: & of ye
lord ihū cīt: I do pankyis to my
god eimmore for zoi i ye grace
of god: yis zoi to zoi i cīt ihū
for in alle rygis ze ben maid ry-
che i hy. in ech word. & in ech k-
nyg: as ye wrytellig of cīt is cō-
fermyd i zoi: so yis no ryg faple
to zoi i omg grace: pat albyen
ye stherbig of oure lord ihū cīt /
which also shal cōferme zoi to
ye ente wrytellig of oure lord ihū
cīt: I trelis god: by whō ze ben
clepid into ye felowshipe of his
sone ihū cīt oure lord: but bypen
I biseche zoi by ye name of ou-
re lord ihū cīt: yis ze alle seye ye
lame ryg: & pat dilleuonū be not
amog zoi / but be ze parfyt in ye
same witt: & in ye lame kunnig
for my bypen it is teld to me of
he pat ben at does: yis tryues be
amog zoi: and I seye pat. yech
of zoi ley / for I am of pouil: & I
am of apollo: & I am of cesas:
but I am of cīt: wher cīt is depar-
tid: wher pouil was crucified for
zoi: epyr ze ben baptid in ye na-
me of pouil: I do pankyis to my
god: yis I baptide noon of zoi:
but crispus & gajus: lest omg mā
seye yis ze ben baptid i my name:
and I baptide also ye hous of
stephan: but I woot not yis I bap-
tide omg ope for cīt sente me not
to baptide: but to preche ye gos-
pel: not in wisdom of word: yis
ye croll of cīt be not voidid alwey

for ye word of ye croll: is foli to
hem pat perillhen / but to he pat
be maid laif yis is to seye to us:
it is wryt of god for it is wrytū
I shal distraye ye wysdom of
wyle mē: & I shal reproue ye
prudence of prudent mē: wher
is ye wyle mā: wher is ye wyle
lawyere: wher is ye purchalo
of ye world: wher god hay not
maid ye wysdom of ye world: so
nyd: for ye world in wysdom of
god: kneis not god by wysdom:
it pleside to god by foli of schyge
to maken hem laif pat biledet
for jehis seken signes: & gree-
kis seken wysdom: but we pche
cīt crucified: to jehis handre:
& to heven mē foli: but to ye jehis
& greekis pat ben depid we pche
crist ye vertu of god: & ye wys-
dom of god: for pat yis foli ryg
of god: is wrytū pan mē: & pat
pat is feble ryg of god: is stre-
get yā mē: but bypen se ze zoi
re deppig: for not many wyle
mē asar ye fleilth: not manye
wryti: not many noble: but god
chees yo rygis pat ben fōned
of ye world: to confōnde wyle
mē: and god chees ye feble ym-
gis of ye world: to confōnde ye
stronge rygis: & god chees ye
vōnoble rygis: & dispulable ryg-
is of ye world: & yo rygis pat be
not: to distraye yo rygis pat be
yech mā haue not glorie i his
syt: but of hy ze be in cīt ihū:
which is maid of god to us wyl
do & ryz i wyllesse: & hoolynesle:
& menbyng: yis as it is wrytū
he pat glorie: haue glorie in
ye lord.

And I bypen whāne I cam
to zoi: cam not in ye hyr-
nelle of word ey of wyl
dom: tollige to zoi ye wrytellig
of crist for I demede not me to
kūne omg ying among zoi: but
cīt ihū & hy crucified: & I in spt
nelle & drede & moche tremblig
was among zoi: & my word &
my prechig was not in sūtel
sturyge wordis of mānys wyl
dom: but in stherbyng of spūrit
& of vertu / yis zoi fey be not
in ye wysdom of mē: but in ye
vertu of god: for we speke wyl-
dom among parfyt mē: but not
wysdom of yis world: ney of pu-
ces of yis world pat ben distried
but we speken ye wysdom of
god i mysterie: which wysdom
is hid: which wysdom god bfore
ordēyede bfore wordis to om-
re glorie: which noon of ye prin-
ces of yis world kneis: for if
ye hadden knowū: ye shulden
neuer haue crucified ye lord
of glorie: but as it is wrytū: yis
ze sayz not: ne eere herde: ney
it stzede into herte of us: wher
rygis god arayed: to he pat lonen
nen hy: but god shē wīde to us: bi hy
spūrit: for whi ye spūrit serchy all ryg-
is: zhe ye depe yingis of god: and
who of mē woot: what ryg-
is ben of mā: but ye spūrit of mā
pat is in hy: so what ryg-
is be of god: no mā knowy: but ye
spūrit of god: and we han not
releyued ye spūrit of yis world:
but ye spūrit pat is of god: yis
we wite what ryg-
is ben zoi to
us of god: whiche ryg-
is we
speken also not in wyle wordis

of manys wisdom: but in ye
doctrin of ye spirit. & maken
a liknesse of spiritual yngis
to goffly me: for a beestly man
perleuey not yo yngis: wat be
of ye spirit of god: for it is foly to
hi: & he may not yndur stonde
for it is examyned goffly: but
a spiritual ma demey alle ym
gis: & he is demed of no man
as it is writun: & who knew ye
witt of ye lord: or who taughte
hi: & we han ye witt of est. **C. m.**
And I bryen myzte not
speke to you: as to sp
ritual men: but as to
fleishly men: as to lytle childe
in est: I zaf to you mylk dymke
not mete: for ze myzten not
yet ney ze moyn now: for ze
ze ben fleishly: for while steyf
is amog you: wher ze ben not
fleishly: & ze goven afir ma
for whane sume ley: I am of
poul: anoy but I am of apollo:
wher ze ben not me: what yfor
is apollo: & what poul: yei be
mystryis of hy: to whom ze ha
bileyde: & to ech ma as god hay
youm: I plantide: apollo moyl
tude: but god zaf encreessing
perfore ney he pat planty is
ony pig: ney he pat moystry:
but god pat yner encreessing
& he pat planty: & he y moystry:
ben con: & ech shal take his oib
ne meede: afir his trauel: for
we ben ye helperis of god: ze
ben ye erpe tihing of god: ze
ben ye byldyng of god: afir ye
grace of god pat is youm to
me: as a wyl maystir carpent
I lettide ye foudemēt: & anoy

byldyng aboue: but ech ma se hois
he byldyng aboue: for no ma may
lette anoy foudamēt: ontakun
pat pat is lett: which is est ihu
for if ony byldyng ouer: ris fou
demēt: gold: siluer: piousle stoo
nes: sticis: hey or tribil: eny
manys werk shal be apyn: for
ye day of ye lord shal declare:
for it shal be thewid in fper:
ye fier shal pene ye werk of
ech man: what maner werk it
is: if ye werk of ony ma dwelle
stille: which he byldide aboue: he
shal resseyne mete: if ony ma
nys werk byne: he shal suffer
harm: but he shal be laft: so ne
veles as by fper. **Wite** ze not
pat ze ben ye temple of god: &
ye spirit of god dwellyn in you:
& if ony defoulyt ye temple of god:
god shal leese hy: for ye temple
of god is hooly: which ze ben: no
ma dwelleue hy self. **Wite** ony ma
amog: you is leyn to be wys in
ris word: be he maid a fool: yhe
be wys: for ye wysdom of ris
word: is foly auentis god: for it
is writun: I shal caache wysle me
in her fel wysdom: & est: ye lord
knowy ye pointis of wysle me:
for po ben seyn: perfore no ma
hane gloze in me: for alle yngis
ben youm: ep poul: ep apollo: ep
celas: ep ye word: ep hy: ep
deep: ep yngis plent: ep yngis
to comye: for alle yngis be youm:
& ze ben of est: & est is of god.
Dama gelle. C. m.
Sus: as mynys of est:
& dispenderis of ye mynys
teries of god: now it is souit her
amog ye dispenderis: & a man

be foudu trewe: & to me it is for ye
leeste pig: y I be demyd of you: or
of manny day: but ney I deme my
self: for I am no pig onertro
Wige to my self: but not i ris
yngis: I am iustified: for he pat
demey me: is ye lord: yfor nyle
ze deme bifore ye tyme: til ye
ye lord come: which shal lizue
ye hyd yngis of derknessis: & it
shal thewe ye coucelis of her tis
and yane preiying shal be to e
che ma of god. **And** bryen I
hane tiffingun yres yngis to
me: & into apollo for you: y m
vs ze lerne lest on y it is writun:
oon azen anoy: be bloun wy
pyde: for anoy: who demey y:
what hast you: pat y hast not
resseyued: what gloze y as y
haddit not resseyued: now ze
ben fillid: now ze ben maid ry
che ze regnen wy outen us: &
I wolde pat ze regne: y also we
regne wy you: & I gelle: y god
thevide us ye laste aposthis:
as pilke pat bey sent to ye deep:
for we ben maid a spectacle to
ye word: & to angels: & to men:
we tooks for est: but ze pridet
in est: we syke: but ze stronge
ze noble: but we vnable: til ito
ris hour: we higen & yrtiden
& ben nakid: & ben lymen wy
buffatis: & we ben yustable: &
we trauelen boychige wy our
hondis: we ben cursid: & we bles
sen: we sufferen persecucion:
& we abiden longe: we be blaske
myd: & we blesche as defingis
of ris word: we ben maid ye out
castig of alle yngis til it: I wri
te not yres yngis: y I confoude
you: but I warne as my moost

deueboye sonos: forwhif if ze
han ten pouland of vnder maistis
in est: but not not many sadis
for in est ihu: I hane sendid you
by ye gospel: perfore bryen I ppe
you: be ze folowberis of me: as I of
crist: perfore I sente to you tymothe:
which is my moost deueboye lo
ne: & feryful: ye lord: which shal
teche you my weyes: pat be in est
ihu: as I teche enery wyher: i ech
dynche: as you: I shulde not co
me to you: so sume be bloun wy
pyde: but I shal come to you: if god
wile: & I shal knowe not ye word
of he pat ben bloun wy pyde: but
ye vertu: for ye reuine of god is
not in word: but in vertu: what
wile ze: shal I come to you wa
zerde: or in charite: & in spirit of
mylenesse. **C. m.**
In al maner fornicaciounis
herd amog you: & such for
nicacioun: which is not a mog he
pen me: so pat su man hane ye
wyf of his fadur: ze ben bolun
wy pyde: & not more haddē wey
linge: y he pat dide ris werk be
taku away fro ye myddel of you:
& I absent in body: but present in
spirit: now hane demyd as plet
hym pat hay pus wrouzt: whine
ze bengalerid to gidre in ye name
of onre lord ihu crist: & my spirit
wy ye vertu of ye lord ihu: to
take such ama to sathanas: ito
ye perilling of fleish: y ye sp
rit be laft in ye day of our lord
ihu crist: youm glorying: is not
good: witey ze not y altyl sou
donz aperyng al ye gobet: cle
se ze ont ye olte lourdonz: y ze be
neise spyrngynge to gidre: as
ze ben yert: for crist offrid: is oe

be foud

past: þfor ete we not i old lodow: neþ
i lodow of malice & of weywardnesse
but in perf pigis of clerenesse
& of treweþe: Wroot to you i apist
le: þ ze be not wedlid wip leathos
not wip leathos of pe world: ne
conetonsle me ne raneþnos ne
wip men seruyge to manymett:
ellis ze shulde hane gon out of pis
world: but now i wroot to you: þ
ze be not meyned but if he pat is
named a broþer amog you: & is
a leathow: or conetons: or seruyge
to ydols: or a curlet: or ful of dñ
kenesse: or a raneþnow: to take
no mete wip such: for what is
it to me: to deme of hem pat be
wipoute for: wþeþ ze deme not
of pigis þ ben not wip yne for:
for god shal deme hem pat ben
wipoute for: do ze alkei mel fro
you self: **C. viii.**
For ony of you pat hay a
cause agens anop: be de
myd at wickid men & not at spo
ly me: wþer ze witen not: þ sei
tis shule deme of pis world: &
if pe world shal be demyþ by you:
be ze unborpi to deme of pe leet
te pigis: witen ze not þ we shu
len deme angels: how moche mo
re worldly pigis: verfore if ze
han worldly domes: ordeþne ze
yo cotemptible me pat ben i pe
churche to deme: i sepe to make
you a shamed: so per is not ony
wple ma: þ may deme bi tibe
a broþer & his broþer: but a bro
þer wip broþer stryner in dom: & þ
amog vnseful me: & now trel
pas is algatis in you: for ze han
domes amog you: wþy raper
take ze no wrong: wþy raper

suþre ze not dislett: but also ze
doen wrong: & doe fraude: & pat
to byþen wþer ze wite not þ
wite me shulen not weelde
pe kyngdom of god: nyle ze er
re: neþ leathows: neþ me pat
seruen maymetis: neþ anoy
teris: neþ leathos agens tynde:
neþ pei pat doe leathow wip
me: neþ pei: neþ anaron
se me: neþ fil of drakenesse: ne
þ curletis: neþ raneþnows:
shule welde pe kyngdom of god: &
ze weren bi tyme yele pigis:
but ze ben wailþy: but ze ben ha
lelid: but ze ben nistified in pe na
me of our lord ihu crist: & in pe spirit
of our god: **Alle pigis ben leet
ful to me: but not alle pigis ben
spedeþul: alle pigis ben leetful to
me: but i shal not be brougt don
vndir ony manys powe: mete
to pe wombe: & pe wombe to me
tis: & god shal distre þe hope þis
pat: & pe body not to fornyacion:
but to re lord: & pe lord to pe body
for god reþide pe lord: & shal reþ
leus by his werty: **Witen ze not
þ you bodies be meþris of crist:
shal i pane take pe meþris of crist:
& shal i make hem pe meþris of
an hoze: god forbede: wþeþ ze
witen not: þ he pat cleueþ to an
hoze: is maid o body: for he ser
per shulen be tibeþne i oþ flesh:
& he pat cleueþ to pe lord: is o
spirit: fle ze fornyacion: al tyme
wþt ener tyme a ma don: is wip
oute pe body: but he pat don for
nyacion: syner agens his body:
wþeþ ze wite not: þ you me
þris ben pe temple of pe holy gost:
pat is in you: whom ze han of****

god: & ze ben not zowd on ne: for
ze be bount wip greet þrys glori
he ze & ber ze god in zoure body
et of ylle: **C. viii.**
B pigis pat ze han wite
to me: it is good to ama
to touche not a woman: but for
fornyacion ech ma hane his oib
ne wif: & ech woman hane hir
oibne holeboud: pe holeboud
zeite dette to pe wif: & also pe
wif to pe holeboud: pe woman
hay not powe of hir body: but
pe holeboud: And pe holeboud
hay not powe of his body: but
pe woman: nyle ze defraude ech
to oþr: but þancture of colent
to a tyme: þ ze yne tent to a
preþer: & eft turne ze agen to
pe same pig: lest sathanas tep
te you for zowd vncontynete:
but i sepe þis pig as þynge
leene: not by comandemet: for
i wole: þ alle me ben as my fle:
but ech ma hay his pre zitte
of god: oon þis: & anop þis:
but i sepe to hem pat ben not
wedid: & to ydowis: it is good
to hem: if pei dwelle so as i: & if pei
coteynen not hem self: ben pei wed
id: for it is bett: to be wedid:
þa to be bzent: but to hem pat be
iorned i mactymony: i coman
de: not i: but pe lord: þ pe wif de
parte not fro pe holeboud: & þ
if she deþer: pat she dwelle on
wedid: or be reconcelid to hir
holeboud: & pe holeboud forlake
not pe wif: but to oþe i leþe:
not pe lord: if ony broþ hay an
ofseful wif: & she consenty
to dwelle wip þ: leene he hir
not: and if ony woman hay an

vnseful holeboud: & þis cōfen
try to dwelle wip þ: leene she
not pe holeboud: for pe vnseful
ful holeboud is halelid: by pe seþ
ful woman: & pe vnseful wom
ma is halelid by pe seþful hole
boud: ellis zowd childe weren
vncleue: but now pei ben hooky:
þ if pe vnseful departy: depart
te he: for wþy pe broþ or siter is
not suget to seruage in such:
for god hay clepid us i pees: &
wþer of woot: you woman: if
you shalt make pe ma sark: or wþer
of woot þ man: if you shalt make
pe woman sark: but as pe lord hay
departid to ech: & as god hay clepid
ech ma: so go he: as i teche i alle
churche: a ma circūcid is clepid:
þynge he not to: pe ppuce: a ma
is clepid in ppuce: be he not circū
cidid: circūcion is nougt: & ppu
ce is nougt: but pe keepyng of pe
comandemētis of god: ech ma in
what deþyng he is clepid: i pat
dwelle he: you seruait art clepid:
be it no charge to pee: but if you
mayst be fre: pe rafe vse you:
he pat is a seruait: & is clepid in
pe lord: is a fre ma of pe lord: al
so he pat is a fre ma: & is clepid:
is pe seruait of crist: wip þrys:
ze ben bount: nyle ze be maid ser
uaitis of me: þfore ech ma in
what pig he is clepid a broþ: dwel
le he in þis anentis god: but of
vrgyng i hane no comandemet
of god: but i zyne coucil: as he
pat hay mercy of pe lord: þ i be
trewe: þfore i selle þ þis þyng
is good: for pe present neþe for
it is good to a ma to be so: þ art
boudid to a wif: nyle you seke

unbyndyng/ you art unbound fro
a wyf: nyle you seke a wyf/ but
if you haat takē awyff: you haat
not syned/ & if amayden is wed
did: she synede not/ nepeles
liche thulen hane tribulaciō
of fleulch/ but i spare you/ per
fore byperē i sepe pis ryg: pe
tyme is sthort/ anoyer is ris.
p̄ pei pat han wyues: be as pouz
pei hadde noone/ & pei pat wepe:
as pei wepten not/ and pei pat ioy
en: as pei ioyeden not/ & pei pat
byen: as pei hadde not/ & pei pat
vlen pis word: as pei pat vlen
not/ forwhi ye figur of pis wor
ld passy/ but i wole pat ze be
wyoute bysness/ for he pat is
wyoute wyf: is bih what rygis
ben of pe lord. how he thal plese
god/ but he pat is wy a wyf:
is bih what rygis ben of pe wor
ld how he thal plese pe wyf. & he
is departyd/ and a wōman vn
weddid & mayden peny what
rygis ben of pe lord/ & she be hoo
ly in body & spyt/ but she pat
is weddid peny what rygis be
of pe word: how she thal plese
pe holebonde/ And i sepe pes ry
gis to zōm p̄fyt not p̄ i caste
to zōm a snar/ but to pat pat is
honest & p̄ zōm eynesle wy
outen lettyn to make preieris
to pe lord/ & if ony mā gelly hy
silk to be seyn foul on his vngy.
pat she is ful wōm: & so it biho
uey to be don: do she pat p̄ she
wole/ she syney not: if she be
weddid/ for he pat ordeuete aa
bly in his herte: not hanyge ne
de: but hanyge poiber of his
wille & har tēmed in his herte

pis ryg to kepe his vngyn: do
ny wel/ p̄fore he pat ioyney his
vngyn in matuonye: dony wel
and he pat ioyney not: dony bet
ter/ pe wōman is bound to pe
lanke: as long tyme as h̄r hole
bonde linye/ & if h̄r holebonde is
deed: she is deliuerid fro pe la
nke of pe holebonde/ he she weddid
to whom she wole. only in pe
lord/ but she thal be more blestid:
if she dikelly rygis after my con
cil & i weene/ p̄ i hane pe sp̄
ryt of god. **C. viii.**
But of pes rygis pat ben
lacrified to ydols: we
witen: for alle we han k̄m̄g
but k̄m̄g: blawp charite edy
fiep/ but if ony mā gelly p̄ he
fan ony ryg: he har not z̄t k̄ao
we how it bihouey hy to k̄i
ne/ and if ony man louey god:
pis is knoubi of hy/ but of met
pat ben offrid to ydols: we wite
p̄ an ydol is no ryg in pe word
& p̄ per is no god: but oon for pouz
p̄ ben sūme pat ben seid goddis:
epir in heuene epir in erpe: as
per ben many goddis & many
lordis: nepeles to us is o god/ pe
fadir of whom ben alle rygis: &
we in hym/ & o lord ihu c̄t. by
whō ben alle rygis: & we by hy
but not in alle mē is k̄m̄g: for
sū me wy coltence of ydol/ til
nois eten as ryg offrid to ydols
& her coltence is defoulid: for it
is lyk mete comedy us not to
god/ for ney we thulen faye: if
we eten not/ ney if we eten: we
thulen hane plente/ but se ze
lest peramentu: pis zōm leue:
be mand h̄r tyn to s̄k mē for

if ony man thal se hy pat har
k̄m̄g: etyge in a place wher
idols ben worlthipid: wher his co
stience syen it is lyk thal not
be edfyed to ete rygis offrid to
idols: & ye syke brof for whom
ēt die: thal perithe in p̄ h̄
nyg/ for ryg ze k̄m̄ge azens by
pen: & smytige her syke coltē
ce: synen azens c̄t/ wherfore
if mete standy my broyr: i
thal neie ete fleulch lest i alai
die my broyer. **C. ix.**
Why i am not fre. am
i not apostle/ wher i
say not ihu c̄t our lord:
wher ze ben not my werk in pe
lord/ & pouz to ope i am not apost
le: but nepeles to zōm i am/ for ze
ben pe lyde signe of myn apost
lehed in pe lord/ my defenle to he
pat aren me: pat is wher we
han not poiber to ete & drynke:
wher we han not poiber to lede
aboute a wōman a silk: as allo
ope apostlis & byrpen of pe lord
& cefas/ & i aloune & barnabas:
han not poiber to worche pes
rygis: who tranchy ony tyme
wy hile oune wagis: who plan
ty a vynezerd: & ety not of his
fryt: who kep a floc: & ety
not of pe mylk of pe floc/ wher
after mā i sepe pes rygis: wher
allo pe lanke seyr not pes rygis:
for it is w̄rtū in pe lanke of moy
ses/ p̄ thalt not bynde pe mony
of ye ope pat preulthip/ wher
of ope is charge to god/ wher
for us he seyr pes rygis: for p̄ c̄t
why po ben w̄rtū for us: heed
for he pat erp: oky to ere
in hope/ & he pat preulthip: in

hope to take frytis/ if we so
iben spiritual rygis to zōm: is it
greet if we repen zōm fleulch
ly rygis: if ope ben parteneris
of zōm poiber: why not rafe
we: but we vlen not pis poiber:
but we suffren alle rygis: p̄ we
synen nolettis to pe euangelhe
of c̄t/ w̄te ze not p̄ pei pat wor
chen i pe temple: eten po rygis
pat ben of pe temple: & pei pat
serue to pe auter: ben partene
ris of pe auter/ so pe lord ordey
nete to hem pat tellen ye gospel:
to h̄ne of ye gospel/ but i w̄te
noone of pes rygis/ & i w̄t not
pes rygis: p̄ po be don so in me/
for it is good to me rafe to dye:
yan p̄ ony mā anoye my gloze/
for if i preche ye gospel: glorie
is not to me/ for nete lyth i moot
don it/ for wo to me: if i preche
not ye gospel/ but if i do pis ryg
w̄lfully: i hane meede/ but if
azens my wille: dyspendig is
brtakē to me/ what p̄ane is my
meede: p̄ i prechige ye gospel:
putte ye gospel wyoute operis
cost: p̄ i v̄le not my poiber in
ye gospel/ forwhi i hane i was
fre of alle mē: i made me ser
uant of alle mē: to wyne ye mo
nē/ & to ieris i am mard as a
news: to wyne ye ieris to hem
pat ben vndir pe lanke: as i we
re vndir pe lanke: wh̄ne i was
not vndir pe lanke: to wyne he
pat weren vndir pe lanke/ to
hem pat weren wyoute lanke:
as i wet wyoute ye lanke: wh̄a
i leue ne i was not wyoute
p̄ pei pat ye lanke of god: but i
knoubi i was in pe lanke of

5.

cris: to wyne heu pat weven
wyonthe ye laise / I am maid
spe to epe me: to wyne epe
me / So alle me / I am maid alle
pigs: to make alle me saif / but
I do alle pigs for ye gospel: I
be maid par tener of it. **I**ten
ze not pat pei p' renen in
a fur long: alle renen: but oon
talir ye p'p'is: so rene ze: p' ze
caale: ech ma pat ar p'uey i fyt:
abte p'ner hym fro alle pigs
I pei p' rei take a corruptible cro
wne: but we an vncorrupt p'
foze I rene so: not as into an
vncerteyn pig: p'us I fiste not
as betyge ye epr: but I chastise
my body & brynge it into serua
ge: lest pauet in: whne I p'che
to ope: I my self be maid rep
nable. **I**ten p' ze on
knocke: p' alle oon fa
dus weven vnder cloude: & alle
passiden ye see: & alle weve hap
tild in moyses: in ye cloude &
in ye see: & alle eeten ye same
spiritual mete: & alle driken ye
same spiritual drynke: yei dri
ken of ye spiritual stoon: sole
wyge hem: & ye stoon was ca
but not in ful manye of hem:
it was wel pleisat to god: for
whi pei were caid don in desert
but pes pigs ben don i figure
of us: p' we be not conueteris
of yuel pigs: as pei couetide
nep be ze maid idolatreris: as
sime of hem: as it is writun
ye peple sat to ete & drynke:
& pei rylen up to plepe: & sta
nep do we fornicaciounyge ne
as hime of hem diden er of his
as herte

fornicacioun: & we & tventy
poulandis weren dede in o day
nepir tempte we ca: as hime
of hem tēpide: & perillhede of
serpentis: nep grūche ze as si
me of hem grūchiden: & pei p'
illhede of adiltre: & alle pes
pigs feliden to hem i figur: but
pei ben bēn to oure amēding:
into whiche pe endis of ye word
bey conu: p'fore he pat gēlly
hi pat he dondey: se he p' he fal
le not tēptacioun take not you:
but māys tēptacioun for god
is treike whiche shal not suffi
ze you to be tēptid: adoue pat
ze moi: but he shal make wy
tēptacioun also pur p'auce: p' ze
moi sūtre. **I**shere ze most
dereborpe to me: fleze fro wor
ship of manymetis: as to
p'udent me I speke: deme ze you
silt pat pig: pat I sepe: wher
ye cuppe of bleisng whiche we
blesen: is not ye conyng of es
tis blood: & wher ye breed whiche
we bicken: is not ye takig of
ye body of ye lord: for we manye
ben o breed & o body: alle we
taken part of obreed & of o cuppe
se ze mael afur ye fleuth wher
pei pat eeten sacrifices be not
parteneris of ye auter: what
p'fore sepe I p' a pig: pat is of
frid to idols is oon pig: or pat
ye ydol is oon pig: but yo p'm
gis pat hevene mē offren: pei
offren to deuels & not to god:
but I nyle p' ze be maid seloibis
of fendis: for ze moi not
we a drynke ye cuppe of ye lord:
alhi & ye cuppe of fendis: ze moi
not be parteneris of ye bood

of ye lord: & of ye bood of fendis: wher
p' we han eue to ye lord: wher
we ben strengel: pan he: alle pi
gis ben leessful to me: but not
alle pigs ben spede ful: alle pi
gis be leessful to me: but not
alle pigs edispen: no mā seke
pat pig: p' is his owne: but pat
pig p' is of anoye al pig: pat is
seeld in ye bocherie etc ze: ari
ge no pig for cōstience: ye erpe
& ye plente of it: is ye lordis: if
oon of hevene mē clepy you to
saper: & ze wolengo: al pig: pat
is lett to you etc ze: ari ge no pig
for cōstience: but if oon mā lepy
pis pig: is ofrid to ydols: nyle
ze etc for hym pat shewide &
for cōstience: & I sepe not pi
cōstience: but of anoye: but
wherto is my freedom demp
of anoy māys cōstience: p'fore
if I take part wy grace: what
am I blaspemyd: for pat p' I do
pantigis: p'fore wher ze eten
or drynken: or doen oon oon pig:
do ze alle pigs into ye glorie of
god: be ze wy onte stande to
nebis & to hevene mē & to ye
chirche of god: as I by alle pi
gis plese to alle mē: not sekyn
ge pat p' is p'fitable to me: but
pat p' is p'fitable to many mē.
p' rei be maid saif. **I**ten p' ze
my folowris: as I
am of crist: and bryen I
p'prie you: p' by alle pigs
ze be myde ful of me: & as I bitok
to you my comandemētis: ze hol
den: but I wole p' ze wite: p' ca
is heed of ech man: but ye heed
of ye wōman: is ye mā & ye
heed of ca: is god: ech mā p'ei

unge or p'feciunge: whne his heed
is hild: & fouly his heed but ech
wōman p'prieunge or p'feciunge
whne his heed is not hild: & fou
ly his heed: for it is oon: as if
she were polid: & if a wōman
be not kenerid: be she polid: &
if it is foul pig: to a wōman to
be polid: or to be maid ballid:
hile she his heed: but amā shal
not hile his heed: for he is ye
ymage & ye glorie of god: but
a wōman is ye glorie of mā: for
amā is not of ye wōman: but
ye wōman of ye mā: & ye man
is not maid for ye wōmā: but
ye wōman for ye mā: p'fore ye
wōman shal haue an helyng
on his heed also for angels: ne
peles nep ye mā is wyonte wō
mā: nep ye wōman is wyon
te mā in ye lord: for whi as ye wō
mā is of mā: so ye mā is by ye
wōman: but alle pigs ben of
god: deme ze you silt: blesmey it
a wōman not hild on ye heed do
p'ieris to god: nep ye kynde it silt
techy us: for if amā norlthe
long heer: it is shendhip to hym:
but if a wōmā norlthe long heer:
it is glorie to him: for heuris ben
you to him for keneris: but if oon
mā is lepy to be ful of ar p'f: we
han non such custom nepir ye
chirche of god: but pis pig: I co
maide: not p'prieunge: p' ze come
to gidre not into ye bette: but
into ye worle: first for whne ze
come to gidre into ye chirche: I
heet p' distenacioun ben & i party
I leue: for it bihouey ereties to be:
p' rei pat ben p'prieunge ben openis
knowil in you: p'fore whne ze

come to gidre into con: now it is
not to ete ye lordis soper / forwhi
ech mā bifor taky his soper to
ete / & con is hūgry: & anoy is
drūki / wher ze han not housis
to ete & drynke: or ze dispisen ye
churche of god. & confoudeu hem pat
han none: / what shal ye sepe to
zon: / I preise zon: but here yue
I preise zon not. For I haue
takn of ye lord. pat pig which
I haue bitakn to zon / for ye lord
shū. in what nyzt he was burm
ed: took breed & dide pankegis
& brak & leide / take ze & ete ze.
pis is my body which shal be
bitrayed for zon / do ze pis ring
into my mynde / also ye cuppe.
astir pat he hadde sopid: & lei
de / pis cuppe is ye newe testa
ment i my blood / do ze pis ring.
as ofte as ze shulen drynke into
my mynde / for as ofte as ze shule
ete pis bread. & shule drynke ye
cuppe: ze shule telle ye deap of
ye lord. til pat he come / & fore
who eue ety ye bread. or dryn
ke ye cuppe of ye lord / onlōz
vly: he shal be gily of ye body
& of blood of ye lord / but preue
a mā hi sile. & so ete he of ye il
ke bread. & drynke of ye cuppe / for
he pat ety & drynky onlōz vly:
ety & drynky don to hi. not wyl
sely demyge ye body of ye lord / &
fore among zon manye bē epe
& feble: & manye slepen / & if we
demeu wylsly us sile. we shulde
not be demyd / but while we ben
demed of ye lord. we ben chasti
sid: & we be not dāpned wyl pi
world / & fore my brayen whine
ze comen to gidre to ete: abyde

ze to gidre / if ony mā hūgry:
ete he at home. & ze come not
to gidre into don: & I shal dis
pole ope yigis: whane I come.
Bet of spū. / **C. 111.**
tial yigis. brayen I my
le & ze onlōz vly: for ze
wten & whane ze were hevene
mē: how ze were led goynge to
donbe manmetis / verfore I
make known to zon / pat no mā
spetige in ye spū of god: sen
departyng fro ihū / & no mā may
seie ye lord ihū: but i ye holy goost
gtes pē. but it is al o spū / & dūle
it is al oon lord / & dūle worchis
per ben: but al is oon god & wor
chy alle yigis in alle yigis / & ind
to ech mān ye shewyng of spū
is zon to pht / ye word of wyl
don is zon: to oon hi spū
to anoyr: ye word of kūng: by
ye same spū / fey to anoyr: in
ye same spū / to anoyr: grace
of heelis in o spū / to anoyr:
ye worchyng of stues to anoyr:
pfectie to anoyr: verry knowig
of spū to anoyr: kyndis of
langagis to anoyr: expoyng
of wordis / and oon & ye same
spū / worchy alle yes yigis.
departige to ech by hē sile as
he wole / for as yer is o body. &
hap many mebris / & alle ye me
bris of ye body. whane yo ben
manye: ben o body: so also crist
for in o spū. alle we ben bap
tyd into o body. ep ieris ep
hevene: ep seruāntis. ep free.
& alle we ben filld wyl drynke
in o spū / for ye body is not o
mebre: but manye / if ye foot
sepy. for I am not ye hond / I am

not of ye body. not & fore it is not
of ye body: & if ye eer sepy. for I a
not ye ye. I am not of ye body.
not & fore it is not of ye body: if
al ye body is ye ye: wher is hee
rig: / and if al ye body is hee rig:
wher is linellyg: / but now god
hap sett mebris: & ech of hem in
ye body as he wole / & if alle we
re o mebre: wher wer ye body:
but now I ben many mebris: but
o body: & ye ye may not sepe to
ye hond: I haue no nede to pi wer
tis / or eft ye heed to ye feet: ze be
not necessarie to me / but moche
more yo pat ben seyn to be ye lo
wer mebris of ye body: ben mo
ze nede ful / & pulke pat we gelle
to be ye onlōz vly: mebris of
ye body: we zyne moze honou
to hem / and yo mebris p ben vn
honest: han moze honeste / for on
re honeste mebris: han nede of
noon / but god tēpide ye body. zy
nyge moze worchy to it to wyl
it faphte: & debate be not i ye bo
dy / but p ye mebris be bly into
ye same yig ech for op: & if o me
bre sustey ony ring: alle me
bris sustren pwy: epyr if o me
bre ioyey: alle mebris ioyen to
gidre: & ze ben ye body of cā:
& mebris of mebre: but god set
te sū mē in ye churche / first a
postis ye secūde tyme pferis.
ye vnde techerys. astir ward
vertues / astir ward graces of
heelis: helpigis. goimaphis.
kyndis of langagis. intpretaci
onis of wordis / wher alle apost
lis: wher alle pferis: wher
alle techerys: wher alle stues.
wher alle me han grace of hee

kyngis. wher alle speken wyl
langagis / wher alle expoyne
but suwe ze ye bettere goostly zif
tis: & zyt I shewe to zon anoyr
excellent wepe. **C. 111.**
If I speke wyl tūgis of
men & of augehs: & I
haue not charite: I am mand
as bras sūmge. or a symbal
tynkyng / and if I haue pfe
cie: & knowe alle mysteries: &
al kūngge: & if I haue al fep.
so pat I mene hillis fro her
place: & I haue not charite: I
am nouzt / and if I departe alle
my goodis to yemetis of poze
men: & if I bitake my body. so
pē brene: & if I haue not charite:
it profity to me no yig / charite
is patient / it is benygue: chari
te euyey not. it dony not wickid
ly. it is not blowū. it is not coney
tous: it sekty not po yigis pat be
hile owne / it is not stūid to wryp
re: it peny not yuel. it ioyey
not on wickidneile. but it ioyey
to gidre to treyue. it sustey alle
yigis: it bileuey alle yigis: it ho
pey alle yigis: it susteyey alle
yigis / charite fally neie down
wher profecies shulen be woydd.
epn langagis shule ceelle: epyr
science shal be dystroyed / for a
party we knowe: & a party we
pfectien / but whine pat shal co
me pat is partyt: pat yig pat
is of party shal be anoydd / whā
I was a ltil chld: I spak as a ltil
chld: I vnderstood as a ltil
chld: I yoynte as a ltil chld /
but whine I was mand a mā:
I anoydde yo yigis pat were
of a ltil chld: & we seen now by

a myroure in der kennele: but þane
face to face / now I knowe of par
ty: but þane I shal knowe. as
I am knowyn / and now dwelken
sey hope & charite: yes ye: but
ye mooste of res is charite.

So þe charite. **C. xij.**
te. loue ze spiritual vi
gis: but more ye pfe
cien: & he pat spek in tuge:
spek not to me but to god: for
no man heerys / but ye spirit spe
ky mysteries: for he pat pfecter:
spek to me to edificacioun. &
monestynge & confortynge: he p
spek in tuge: edifye hy self:
but he pat pfecter: edifye ye
churche of god: & I wole y alle
ze speke in tugs: but more ye
ze pfecte: for he y pfecter: is
more þa he pat spek in langa
gis: but perauentur he expou
ne: y ye churche take edificaci
on: but now bysen but if I co
me to you: & speke in langagis:
what shal I profite to you: but
if I speke to you: eyn in reuelaci
on. eyn in science. eyn in pro
fete. eyn i teching: for yo vgis y
ben wyoute soule. & zynen voy
ces. ey pipe. eyn harpe: but yo
zynen distynction of soundys:
how shal it be knowyn y is li
gny. ey pat pat is triupid: for if
a triupe zyne an ouer teryn sou
ne: who shal make hy self redy
to batel: so but ze zyne an apyn
word bi tuge: how shal pat y
is leid be knowyn: for ze shule
be spekyge in veyn: y be ma
ny kyndis of langagis in vis wor
ld: & no vgis is wyoute voyz:
but if I knowe not ye vtn of

a voyz: I shal be to hy to who I shal
speke a barbarys: & he pat spe
ky to me: shal be a barbarys:
so ze for ze ben loners of spri
tis seke ze y ze be plenteuous:
to edificacioun of ye churche: and
yfore he pat spek in langage:
preye pat he expoune: for if I
preye in tuge: my spirit prei
ey / my vnderstondig: is wyoute
te fruyt: what þane: I shal prei
in spirit: I shal prei in myte:
I shal seie salm in spirit: I shal
seie salm also in myte: for if y
blest in spirit: who fill ye pla
ce of an ydot: **How** shal he seie
amē on y blestynge: for he wot
not what you seist: for you don
wel panthys: but anoy mā is not
edifyed. **I** thank my god: for
I speke in ye langage of alle you:
but in ye churche I wole speke sy
ne wordis in my vnt: pat also y
teche ope me: pan ten thousandis
of wordis in tuge. **I** zynen nyle
ze be maid childe in wittis: but
I malice be ze childe: but I vnt
tis: be ze parfyt: for in ye lawe
it is writū: y moye tugs: & ope
lypis: I shal speke to vis peple:
& ney so ver shule heer me: seir
ye lord: yfore langagis ben into
tokene not to seirful me: but
to me out of ye seir: but pfectes
ben not to me out of ye seir:
but to seirful me: yfore if al ye
churche come to gidre into oon:
& alle me spoken i tugs: if ydo
tis ey me out of ye seir entren:
wherey ver shulen not seie: what
ben ze woode: but if alle men
pfecten: if ony vnseirful mā oz
ydot entre: he is conyt of alle.

he is wyte demyd of alle: for ye
hid vgis of his herce ben kno
wn: & so he shal falle dou on ye
face: & shal worlthye god: &
shewe verly: y god is in you:
what þane byere: whine ze
comen to gidre: ech of you hay
a salm. he hay teching: he hay a
pocalys he hay tuge he hay ex
poung: alle vgis be yedon
to edificacioun: wher amā speky
in tuge: by tuge me ey pre at
ye mooste: & by parties. y oon
interprete: but if ye be not an
interpretour: be he stille in ye chr
che: & speke he to hy self: & to god:
pfectis tugeye oz ye seie: & ope
wyte deme: but if ony vgis be
shewid to a sitte: ye formere
be stille: for ze mon profete al
le: ech by hy self: y alle me lerne.
& alle moneste: & ye spiritis of
pfectis: be enget to pfectis: for
why god is not of dullenon: but
of pees: as in alle churchis of hoo
ly men: I teche. **I** bymen i chr
chis be stille: for it is not enfrid
to he to speke: but to be enget
as ye laue seir: but if yei wole
ony vgis lerne: athom aye pei
her holebondis: for it is foul vgis
to a woman: to speke in churche:
wherey of you ye word of god
cam fory: oz to you alcone it ca:
if ony mā is seyn to be a profe
te oz spiritual: knowe he yo
vgis pat I wite to you: for yo
ben ye comandemētis of ye lord:
& if ony man vnknowyn: he sh
al be vnknowyn: yfore byperen
loue ze to profete: & nyle ze for
bede to speke in tugs: but be al
le vgis don honestly: & by due

ordre in you. **C. xvi.**
Breuen I make ye gospel
knowyn to you: which I ha
ue prechid to you: ye wh
ich allo ze han takū: in which ze
stonden: also by which ze shulen
be saued: by which re sou: I haue
prechid to you if ze holden: if ze
han not bileyd ydely: for I by
took to you at ye bygynng: pat
vgs which allo I haue resleynd:
y crist was deed for oure synes:
by ye scripturis. & y he was bi
ryed: & pat he roos azen i ye vnd
de day after scripturis. & y he w
seyn to cefas: & after pes vgis
to euleneue: after ward he was
seyn to mo pan fyue hundrid by
pen to gidre: of which manye
lynē it: but sinne ben deed: af
ter ward he was seyn to james:
& after ward to alle ye aposthis:
& last of alle: he was seyn also to
me: as to a deed born childe: for I
am ye leeste of aposthis: y am
not worpi to be clepid apostle:
for I pur suide ye churche of
god: but by ye grace of god I am
pat vgs y am: and his grace
was not voyde in me: for I tra
uelide more plenteuously pan
alle ye: but not I: but ye gra
ce of god wy me: but why
I oz ye: so we han prechid: &
so ze han byleynid: & if it is
prechid: pat he roos azen fro
deey: how seyn sū me a mog
you: y ye azenryng of deed
me is not: & if ye azenryng
of deed me is not: ney crist roos
azen fro deey: & if it roos not:
oun prechig is veyn: oun seir
is veyn: and we ben foundū fals

witnesis of god for we han seid
witnesis azenis god. y^e he reij
side est. whom he reij side not.
if deed me rylen not azen for
why if deed me rylen not azen.
nepr est roos azen. if est roos
not azen. our seip is vein. f
zit ze ben i zom synes. f vane
pei y han dyed in est. han peril
chid. if in vis hif oonly we ben
hoppinge in est. we ben more
wreathis van alle me. but now
crist roos azen fro deap. ye furste
fruyt of deed me. for deap was
by aman. f by amā is azenry
fing. fro deap. f as in adam al
le men dejen. so in est. alle me
thulen be quykend. but ech
mā in his ordze. ye furste fruyt
est. after ward ye i ben of est.
pat bileded in ye conyng of est.
after ward an ende. whanne he
thah bitake ye kyngdom to god
f to ye fadir. whanne he thah a
voide al pulheed. f power f
vertu. but it bihoner hy to reg
ne. til he putte alle his enemy
es vnder his feet. f at ye laste.
deap ye enemy thah be distroyed.
for he hay mand suget alle pig
gis vnder his feet. f whanne
he seip. alle pigis ben suget
to hy. vpon ten dourte out ta
kū hy pat sugetide alle pigis
to hy. f whanne alle pigis ben
suget to hy. vane ye sone hy
oult thah be suget to hy. y^e ma
de suget alle pigis to hy. y^e god
be alle pigis in alle pigis. ellis
what thulen yei do pat ben bap
tild for deed me. if in nowyle.
deede me rylen azen. wherto be
pei baptild for han. f wherto

ben we in perel est. our. f ch
day i dye for zom glorie bryen.
which glorie i hane in est. ihu
our lord. if after mā i hane sou
ten to beestis at efest. what
pfitit it to me. if deed me ryle
not azen. ete we f dourte we.
for we thule dye to morwe. up
le ze be distroyed. for puel spe
chis distroyen god ye wis. a wa
ke ze nist me. f nyle ze sone. for
sū men han ignorace of god.
but to reuerce. f speke to zom.
But sū mā seip how thulen
deed me ryle azen. or in what
man body thulen yei come. v
wyle man. pat pig y^e you soult
is not quykend. but it dye first
f pat pig y^e you soult. y^e soult
not ye body y^e is to come. but a
nakid corn as of whete or of su
oper seedis. f god yney to it
abody as he wole. f to ech of see
dis a ppe body. not ech fleish. S.
is ye same fleish. but oon is of
me. anoy is of beestis. anoy is of
byddis. anoyr of fyllis. f he
nenly bodpes ben. f erpely bo
dpes ben. but oon glorie is of he
nely bodpes. f anoy is of erpe
ly. anoyr. derenele is of ye gū
ne. anoy derenele is of ye moue.
f anoy derenele is of steris.
and a ster. dylyt fro a ster.
in derenele. f so ye azenrylig
of deed men. it is soult in corrup
cion. it thah ryle in corrupci
on. it is soult in nobley. it thah
ryle in glorie. it is soult in
myte. it thah ryle in vertu. it
is soult a beestly body. it thah ryle
a spūal body. if y^e is a beestly body.
y^e is also a spūal body. as it is

Wutu ye furste mā adam was
maad into a spūal kyng. ye laste
adam into a spūal quykeng.
but ye furste is not pat pat is
spūal. but pat y^e is beestly. after
ward. pat y^e is spūal. ye fur
ste mā of erpe. is erpely. ye
seconde mā of heuene. is heuen
lych. such as ye erpely mā is. hi
che ben ye erpely me. f such as
ye heuenly mā is. such ben al
lo ye heuenly me. y^e for as we han
born ye ymage of ye erpely mā.
bere we also ye ymage of ye he
nely bryen. f seip ye vis ryl. pat
fleish f blood mon not welde ye
kyngdom of god. ney corrupcion
thah welde vncorupcion. lo f seie
to zom. pūte of hooly pigis. f al
le we thulen ryle azen. but not
alle we thulen be chaigid. in a
monēt in ye tlypkyng of an
ye in ye laste tlyp. for ye tū
pe thah soune. f deed me thulen
ryle azen vpon corrupcion. f
we thulen be chaigid. for it biho
ner vis y^e corruptible pig to do
ye vncorupcion. f ye deedly pig
to putte ansey vntedynelle. but
whanne ye deedly pig thah clope
vntedynelle. vane thah ye word
be don pat is wutu. deap is sopū
up in victorie. deap wher is y^e vic
torie. deap wher is y^e pūte. but
ye pūte of deap. is syne. f ye dū
of syne. is ye lare. but do we pū
kyng to god. pat zat to us victo
rie. by our lord ihu est. y^e for my
dereworpe bryen. be ze studefast
f vnuonable. beynge plentenou
se in werk of ye lord eimore. vi
tyngge y^e zom. tūmel is not idel
in ye lord. C. 26. 11.

But of ye gadryngis of mo
ney pat ben maad into leyn
tis. as i ordeynede in ye
churchis of galathe. so also do ze
oday of ye wote. ech of zom kepe
at hym sile. kepige pat y^e plest
to hy. y^e whanne i come ye gadry
gis be not mand. and whanne i thah
be plent. whiche me ze preue. f
thah sende hem by epistlis to be
re our grace into ierlm. y^e if it be
worpi. y^e also i go. yei thulen go
wy me. but i thah come to zom.
whanne i thah passe by macedonye.
for whi i thah passe by macedonye.
but pūetū. i thah diuella at zom.
or also diuella ye wynter. y^e ze le
de me whidur eu. i thah go. f i
wote not now se zom in my passig.
for i hope to diuella wy zom. whi
le. if ye lord thah suffre. but i thah
diuella at efest. til to watontū
de. for agreeet doze. f an opyn is
openid to me. f many aduersari
es. f if tymothe come. se ze pat
he be wyponte drede wy zom. for
he worchye ye werk of ye lord. as
i y^e fore no mā dispile hy. but le
de ze hi for in pees. y^e he come
to me. for i abide hy wy bryen.
but bryen. i make knowū to
zom of apollo. y^e ppeyde hy mo
che. y^e he thulde come to zom w
bryen. but it was not his wille.
to come now. but he thah come.
whanne he thah hane leyser. i thah
ke ze f stonde ze in ye seip. do ze
maky. f be ze confortid in ye lord.
f be alle zom. pigis don in chari
te. f bryen. i bileche zom. ze kno
we ye hous of stephan. f of fortū
nati. f acanti. for yei ben ye fur
ste fruytis of acaye f into my

vis stephan
a woman

myfterie of ſeruitis per han ordey
ned hem ſelf. y' alſo ze ben ſugget
tis to ſuche. & to ech worchige to
gidre & traueſige for i haue
ioye in ye preſence of ſtephan
& of fortunate & acaci: for per
fillden pat pig y' failde to zoi
for per han refreſchid hope my
ſpirit & zoi: y' fore knowe ze
hem pat be ſuche man me alle
ye churchis of alie: grette zoi
wel. Alquiſa & prilla wir her ho
mely churchie grette zoi moche
in ye lord: at ye whiche i am her
bond alle brypen greden zoi wel
grette ze wel to gidre in hooly
coll my greetig bi ponlis hond
if ony ma louey not our lord ihu
crist: be he curſid mara natha: pe
grace of our lord ihu crist: be wir
zoi my charite be wir zoi alle i
crist ihu our lord and. **Her en**
dyr ye firſte piſtle to corinthis & bigy
ner ye plog on ye ſecunde piſtle to cor

allo

ye is in ye comp
of ye lord

A try to corinthis a piſtle of con
fort fro troade bi titus & he p
lyp he & exercity to bette pigis &
the wir pat per werẽ mand zoi:
but amedid. **Her ſer pigis i his**
plog on ye ſecunde piſtle to corinthis

C. p.

Oul apoſtle of ihu crist.
bi ye wille of god & ty
mothe broy: to ye church
of god y' is at cori
thi. wir alle ſeruitis pat be mal
acaci grace to zoi & pees of god
oure fadir: & of ye lord ihu crist: bleſ
sid be god & ye fadir of our lord
ihu crist: fadir of mercies & god
of al confort. Which conforty us
in al oure tribulaciou: y' alſo we
mouen confort he pat ben i al diſ

ciſe. bi ye monetiſig bi which alſo
we ben monetiſid of god for as ye
paſſions of crist be plenteuouſe
us: ſo alſo bi crist our confort is
plenteuouſe & wher we ben i
tribulaciou: for zoi re tribulaci
ou & heelp: erir we ben confortid:
for zoi confort: erir we be mo
neſtid: for zoi monetiſig & heelp
ye. Which worchir in zoi ye ſuf
fyring of ye ſame paſſions. Whi
che alſo we ſuffren. y' our hope
be ſad for zoi: writige for as ze be
felowis of paſſions: ſo ze ſhul
be alſo of confort. **For brypen**
we wolen y' ze wite of oure tri
bulaciou pat was in alie: for zoi
maner we weren greuyd ouer
myzt: ſo y' it anoyete us zhe to
lyue: but we in us ſilf hadden
anſwer of deap: y' we triſte not
in us but in god pat reſtyr ded
men: which deliueride us & deli
uery fro ſo grette perels: into
who we hope: alſo ze he ſhal
deliuer: while alſo ze heelp in
preier for us: y' of ye plones of
many faces: of pat zoyng y' is
in us: paſſigis be don for us bi
many me to god: for oure gloze
is piſ: ye witneſſig of our con
ſcience y' in ſyplenelle & clenel
ſe of god: & not in fleiſhly wyſ
dom: but in ye grace of god.
We luyeten in piſ world: but
more plenteuouſly to zoi & we
writen not ope pigis to zoi: pa
po y' ze han red & knowe & i ho
pe: y' into ye ende ze ſhulẽ kno
we: as alſo ze han knowe us a
party for we ben zoi gloze:
as alſo ze ben oure i ye day of ou
re lord ihu crist: and in piſ triſte

ye is
tremp

myg: i wolde firſt come to zoi:
pat ze ſhulden haue ye ſecunde gra
ce: & paſſe bi zoi into macedouye.
& eft fro macedouye come to zoi:
& of zoi be led into iudee: but
whane i wolde viſ pig: wher
i ſhulde viſite faſtneſſe: erir
yo pigis y' y' penke: i penke at
tr ye fleiſh: y' at me be: it is.
& it is not: but god is trewe.
for oure word pat was at zoi:
is & is not: is not y' ſue: but is
is in it: for why ihu crist ye ſone
of god: which is prechid a moſt
zoi bi us: bi me & ſiluan & tymothe.
per was not in hi is & is not:
but is was in hi: for why how
many eie ben bihectis of god:
in piſke is ben fulfilled y' fore bi
hi we ſeuen ame to god: to ou
re gloze: ſorely it is god y' offer
mey us wir zoi crist: & ye which
anoyntide us: & which marke
us: & at ernes of ye ſpirit i ou
re hertis: for i deſpide god to
witneſſe azens my ſoule: y' i
ſparige zoi cam not ouer to co
rithi: not y' we ben lordis of zoi
ſer: but we ben helperis of zoi
re ioye for piſz bileue ze adde.

And i ordeynede. **C. p.**
pis pig at me: y' i ſh
ulde not come eftſoone
in heymneſſe to zoi: for if i ma
ke zoi loy: who is he pat gla
dy me: but he y' is ſoreful of
me & piſ ſame pig: i woot to
zoi: y' whine i come: i haue not
ſorbe on ſorbe: of ye which it
bihoſte me to haue ioye: and
i triſte in zoi alle: y' my ioye
is of alle zoi: for of myche tri
bulaciou & angliſh of herte:

i woot to zoi bi many teeris:
not y' ze be loy: but pat ze wite
what charite i haue more ple
tenouſly i zoi: for if ony ma har
mand me ſorwful: he har not
mand me ſorwful: but a parti
y' i charge not zoi alle: viſ bla
myg y' is mand of manye: ſuf
ficiy to hi y' is ſuch oon: ſo y' ze
ward: ze raper for y' uẽ & confort
te leſt paſſenture he y' is ſuch
anayner ma: be ſopu up bi mo
ze greet heymneſſe: for why pig
i biſeche zoi: y' ze cofeime charite
into hi: for why y' fore i woot
piſ: y' i knowe zoi: preef. the
piri alle pigis ze ben obedient:
for to who ze han for y' in ony
ymg: alſo i haue for zoi: for i
pat y' i for zoi: if i for zoi ony
pig: haue zoi for zoi i ye per
ſoone of crist: y' we be not diſtei
ned of ſathanas: for we knowe
hile pouztis: but whine i was co
mū to troade for ye goſpel of crist.
& a doze was openy to me in ye
lord: i hadde not reſte to my ſpi
rit: for i ſound not my broy tite:
but i leide to hem fare wel: & i
paſſide into macedouye: & i do
paſſigis to god y' eumore maky
us to haue vitorie in crist ihu: &
the wir bi us ye odour of his kno
wig in ech place: for we ben ye
good odour of crist to god: among
yeſe y' ben mand ſat: & among
yeſe y' perillhen: to ope ſoreh
odour of deap into deap: but to
ye ope: we ben odour of lyf in
to lyf: & to yeſe pigis: who is ſo
able: for we be not as manye
pat doen auonte bi ye word of
god: but we ſpeken of clenelle.

as of god before god in cit. ¶ **B**rothermen we fore eftbo
ne to preise us selfe. or
wher we ueden as su
men pitlis of preising. to you
or of you. ze ben oure pitte. w
tu in oure hertis. which is kno
wū & red of alle me. & mand appu
for ze ben pe pitte of cit. myn
trid of us and wtu not w
enke. but bi pe spirit of pe luy
ge god. not in stouen tablis. but
in fleishly tablis of herte. for
we han such cit by crist to god.
not y. we ben sufficient to pe
ke ouy pig of us as of us. but ou
re sufficiēte is of god. which al
so made us able mynistris of pe
newe testamēt. not by lettre
but by spirit. for pe lettr slep.
but pe spirit quytēy. & if pe
mynistraciō of deap wtu bi
lettis in stouen. was in gloze.
so pat pe children of isrl nuyten
not biholde unto pe face of moyses.
for pe gloze of his cheer which is
anoydid. how shal not pe mynit
tiō of pe spirit be more i gloze.
for if pe unmittiō of dāpnaciō
was in gloze. moche more pe
mynisterie of ryt wille is ple
teuous in gloze. for ney pat pat
was cleer. was glorified in pis
part for pe excellēt gloze. & if pat
y is anoydid was bi gloze. moche
more pat y dwellyt alle. is i glo
ze. y fore we y han such hope.
olen moche trist. and not as moy
les leide a vepl on his face. y pe
children of isrl shuld not bihol
de unto his face. which veil is a
voydid. but pe wittis of hem be
a ston. & for into pis day. pe sa

me vepl in redige of pe olde testa
mēt dwellyt. not shewid. for it is
anoydid in cit. But into pis day
whie moyses is rad. pe veil is
put on her hertis. but whie if
rael shal be cōttid to god. pe veil
shal be don away. & pe spirit is
pe lord. & wher pe spirit of pe
lord is. pere is freedom. & alle we
y wip opyn face seen pe gloze
of pe lord. ben trāsfourmed into
pe same ymage. fro derenele
into clerenesse as of pe spirit
of pe lord. ¶ **C. m. 4.**

¶ **H**erfore we pat han pis
administraciō. after pis
y we han getū merch. fawle we
not. but do we away pe prin y
gis of shame. not walkige in shi
til gyle ney dōunge anoyte by
pe word of god. but in shewige
of pe trewe. comēdige us selfe to
ech consciēce of me. bi fore god.
for if also our gospel is keuerid.
in pese pat perutthen it is keuer
id in whiche god hay blend pe son
lis of onferful me of pis world.
y pe luyng of pe gospel of pe
gloze of cit. which is pe ymage
of god. shyne not. But we pre
chen not us selfe. but our lord ihu
cit. & us zour seruāntis bi ihu. for
god pat seide hit to shyne of der
nellis. he hay zour luyt i our her
tis to pe luyng of pe shence of
pe derenele of god in pe face of
ihu cit. & we han pis tresour i
brutal vessels. y pe woxpelle
be of godis oertu. & not of us.
in alle pigs we sustren tūla
ciō. but we ben not angustid
or anoyed. we ben mand pore.
but we lacky no pig. we suf

fren plectiō. but we ben not
fozshu. we ben mand loue. but
we ben not cōfōidid. we ben
cast down. but we perutthen
not. and enmore we bere abou
te pe slep. of ihu in our body.
y also pe luyt of ihu be shewid i
our bodies. for enmore we pat
hūe. ben takū into deap for ihu
pat pe luyt of ihu. be shewid in
our dwellyt. fleishly. y fore deap woz
chip in us. but luyt in you. & we
han pe same ne spirit of fery.
as it is wtu. / hane bileue.
I hane spōke. & we bileue. wher
fore also we speken wutige pat
he pat reitide ihu. shal reyle
also us wip ihu. & shal ordey
ne wip you. & alle pigs for you.
y aplenteuous grace by many
pauitigis. be plenteuous into
pe gloze of god. for which pig
we fallen not. but youz our. & t
ter mā be corruptid. nepeles
pe yner mā is newid fro day
to day. but y luyt pig of our. &
bulaciō pat lasty nōis. but as
it were bi a moment wozchip
in us ou melin. an enlastige bu
pen into pe hynelle of gloze.
whie y we biholde. not po pin
gis pat ben seyn. but po y ben
not seyn. for po pigs pat be seyn. be
but durige for a short tyme. but
po pigs pat ben not seyn. ben

¶ **E**uerlastyng. ¶ **C. v. 11.**
¶ **A**d we witen. y if oure
erpey hous of pis dwel
lyng be dissolued. y we han a
byldyng of god. an hous not mand
bi hondis enlastige in heuenes.
for whi in pis pig we morne.
conertige to be dōyd aboue us

our dwellyng. which is of heue
ne. if nepeles we ben foundū do
pid. & not nakid. for whi we pat
ben in pis tabernacle. sozben
wip me. & ben heuyed for y we
wōle not be spōlid. but be do
pid aboue. y pe luyt pig y is deap
ly. be luyt up of luyt. but who
is it y maky us into pis same
pig. god. pat zat to us pe er
nes of pe spirit. y fore we ben
hardy algatis. & witen y pe whi
le we ben i pis body. we goen i
pilgrimage fro pe lord. for we
walken by fery. & not by deer sizt.
but we ben hardy. & han good
wille. more to be in pilgrima
ge fro pe body. & to be present
to god. & y fore we stryue. whe
y absent. wher present. to ple
se hy. for it bihouey us alle. to
be shewid bi fore pe trone of cit.
y erpey mā telle pe ppe pigs
of pe body. as he hay don. erp
good erp. yuel. y fore we wutige
pe drede of pe lord. coucelen me.
for to god we ben opyn. & / ho
pe y. we ben opyn also in your
cōsciēcis. we comēte not us
selfe eftloone to you. but we z
uen to you occasiō to haue glo
ze for us. y we haue to hem pat
glorien i pe face. & not in pe her
te. for ouy we by mynde passe.
to god erp. we ben sozre. to you
for pe charite of cit. dāney us.
geilige pis pig. y if con dpede
for alle. y ane alle weren deed.
& cit dpede for alle. y pei y luyt.
luyt not nōis to hem selfe. but
to hi pat diede for hem. & roos
azen. y fore we fro pis tyme
knowe no mā afayr pe fleish.

you: we knowe it after resclen-
but now we knowe not: yf ore
if ony newe creatur is in it: pe
elde pigis ben pallid. & lo alle pi-
gis ben of god: which reconsele
us to hi bi crist: & zat to us re-
servyle of reconsele: and god
was in it: reconsele to hym
pe world: not retige to he her
giltis: & putte in us: pe word
of reconsele: yf ore we vlen
messige for crist: as if god mo-
netty bi us: we bi lochen for it:
be ze reconseled to god: God ve
fadir made hi syne for us: which
knew not syne: yf we shulden
be mand ryt wysne of god i hi:

But we helpege: **C. vii.**
moneste: yf ze resclen
not pe grace of god in
veyn: for he sen in tyme wel
pleynge: I have herd pee: & in
ye day of heelp: I have helpid
pee: lo now a tyme acceptable:
lo now a day of heelp: yf we
to no man ony offencio: yf our
servyle be not reprend: but
malle pigis yf we us sile as
pe mynistis of god: i moche pa-
cience: in tribulacions: i nedis: i
angustis: i betyngis: i plous:
i dissencions: i tynels: i travels:
i watigis: i fatigis: i chattle
i kimping: i long abidig: i fytet
nelle in ye holy gost: i charite
not feryed: i ye word of tye-
pe: i vertu of god: By armis
of ryt wysne on ye ryt hals
& on ye left hals: bi gloze & on
noble: by yuel fame & good fa-
me: as disseynieris & trewe me:
as pei pat ben vnknow: & kn-
ow: as me dyge: & lo we ly-

nen: as chastid: & not mande
ed: as lozenful: eumore wy-
ge: as hange nete: but make
ge many men ryche: as no pig
hange: & weldige alle pigis:
C. viii. ze corithis oure mony is
opyn to you: our herte is alar-
gid: ze be not angustid i us:
but ze ben angustid i zour
wardnesse: & i se as to sones:
ze pat han ye same reward be-
ze alargid nyle ze bere pe zok
vnseful me: for what partig
of ryt wysne we wyckidnes
se: or what felouthe of lye to
derfnessis: and what acordig
of it to belial: or what part of
a feryful: wy pe vnseful: &
what colent to ye temple of god
wy manmetis: & ze ben pe te-
ple of ye kyng: god: as pe lord
seip: for i shal dwelle in hem:
& i shal walke among hem: &
i shal be god of hem: & pei shule
be a peple to me: for which pig
go ze out of ye myddel of hem:
& ze departid seip pe lord: & ton-
che ze not vndene pig: & i shal
resclen you: & i shal be to you ito
afadir: & ze shulen be to me i
to sones & doutris seip pe lord
almighty: **C. viii.**

Therfore moost derer: we
pe brypen: we pat han
pes biheestis: cleuse we us fro
al filpe of ye fleth: & of ye spirit:
doyng hoolynesse i pe drede of
god: take ze us: we han hirt no
ma: we han apenid no ma: we
han bigyld no ma: i seye not
to youre coepryng: for i seide
bifore: yf ze ben i your hertis: to
dye to gidre & to lyue to gidre:

moche trist is to me anentis
you: moche glozyping is to me
for you: i am fillid wy confort:
i am plenteuous i roye i al our
tribulacion: for whane we be
re come to macedonie: our fle-
sh hadde no reide: but we suf-
friden al tribulacion: wy poyte
for fytigis: & dredis wy me:
but god pat confort me
men: confortide us i ye comyng
of tite: & not oonly i ye comyng
of hi: but also i ye confort by
which he was confortid i you:
tellinge to us your desir: your
we pig: your lone for me: so
yf i ovede more: for you: i ma-
de you for in apistle: it rewy-
me not: you it rewyde: seige
yf you vilke pistle made you
son at an our: now i have roye
not for ze were maid sozful:
but for ze were maid sozful
to penance: for ze be maid
soz after god: yf in no pig ze
suffre pe remmet of us: for ye for
we yf after god: worchyp pe
naice into fidefast heelp: but
sozwe of ye world: worchyp deef
for lo pis same pig: yf ze be for
wful after god: how moche bly-
nesse & worchyp in you: but de-
fendig: but indignacion: but
drede: but desyr: but lone: but
verance: in alle pigis ze han zo
nu you sile to be vnde foulid in
ye cause: yf ore you: i woot to
you: i woot not for hym pat
dide pe nurie: uer for hy yf auf-
fride: but to thewe oure bly-
nesse which we han for you by
fore god: yf ore we ben confort-
tid: but in your confort more

plenteuous: we ioyede more
on ye roye of tite: for his spirit
is fulfillid of alle you: & if i glo-
riede ony pig anentis hi of you:
i am not confoundid: but as we
han spoke to you alle pigis: so
also our gloze yf was at tite:
is maid trenpe: i ye mwardnes-
se of hi be more plenteuous in
you: which hay in mynde ye obe-
dience of you alle: how wy drede
& tremblig ze resclen hym: i
have roye: yf in alle pigis i trite
in you: **C. viii.**
But biyeven we make kno-
we to you ye grace of
god: pat is you in ye churchis of
macedonie: yf in moche alayng
of tribulacion: ye plante of ye
roye of he was: and ye herte po-
uert of hem: was plenteuous i
to ye richeliss of ye opplenesse
of hem: for i bere witness to he:
after myt & abone myt pei were
wylful: wy moche monettig bi-
sechge us ye grace & ye comyng
of unmitrige: yf is maid to hooly
me: & not as we hopiden: but pei
zamen hem sile fast to pe lord:
afterward to us: in ye wille of
god: so pat we preide tite: yf as
he bigan: so also he parfourme
in you pis grace: but as ze abou-
den in alle pigis: in seip & word
& kimping: & al blynesse: more on
i in your charite unto us: yf also
in pis grace ze abonde: yf seie not
as comandige: but by ye blynes-
se of ope men: apprense also ye
good writ of your charite: **C. ix.**
ze wite ye grace of our lord ihu
crist: for he was maid neddy for
you whane he was ryche: yf ze shul

den be mand ryche bi his nedmesse
 & 3pue conceit in his pig for pig
 is profitable to you. y not conly
 han bigime to do: but also ze bigi
 ne to haue wille fro re formere
 zeer: but now parfourme ze in
 deede y as pe distrection of wille
 is redy: so be it also of pfourmyn
 of y pat ze han for if ye wille
 be redy: it is acceptid after pat
 y it hap. not after pat y it hap
 not: & not y it be remysshion
 to ope men: & to you tribulaci
 on. But of euenele: i pe plent
 tyme: your aboundance fulfille
 ye mysele of he y also ye abu
 dance of hem: be aduysing of
 your mysele y euenele be ind:
 as it is writu he pat gedre my
 che: was not encresid: & he pat
 gedre lital: hadde not lesse: & y
 do panfigis to god: y zat pe sa
 me bihynesse for you in ye herte of
 tye for he reseruede exortacion
 or mone sig: but whane he was
 biher: bi his wille: he wente forp
 to you: & we sente wy h aboyr.
 whos pishyn is in ye gospel by
 alle churchis: & not conly: but also
 he is ordeyned of churchis: pe felo
 we of our pilgrymage into pis
 grace y is mynistrid of us to ye
 glorie of ye lord: & to our ordey
 ned wille: eschewynge pis pig. y
 no man blame us: in pis plente.
 y is mynistrid of us to ye glorie
 of ye lord: for we purueyen goode
 pigis: not onely before god: but al
 so before alle me: for we senten w
 he also our brop. who we han p
 ind i mam pigis ofte: y he was
 bily but now moche biher: for
 myche et in you: ey for tite y

is my felowe & helper in you: ey
 our bypen apostles of ye churchis
 of ye glorie of et: pfore thewe
 ze into he in ye face of churchis.
 pat thewe y is of your charge
 & of our glorie for you. *C. 11.*
H of ye mynistrerie pat
 is mad to hooly me: it is
 to me of plente to wyte
 to you for y knowe your wille:
 for ye which y haue glorie of
 auentis macedonys: for also a
 caye is redy fro a zeer passid:
 & your loue hap sturid fulwarye
 and we han sent bypen: y pis
 pig: y we glorie of you be not
 auoydid in party: y as y sente ze
 be redy: lest whne macedonys
 come wy me: & fynde you enue
 di: we be shamed. y we lyze you
 not in pis substance: pfore y gelli
 de necessary to preye bypen: y pei
 come before to you: & make redy
 pis bihyn blethig to be redy: so al
 blethig: & not as auarice: for y leie
 pis pig: he pat lowp starly: sh
 al also repe starly: & he pat lowp
 in blethigis: shal repe also of ble
 thigis: ech man as he castide in his
 herte: not of heinnesse or of ne
 de: for god louey a glad yne: &
 god is myzri: to make al grace
 aboude in you y ze malle pigis
 enmore han al sufficiency: & a
 boude into al good werk as it is
 writu he dehte abrood: he zat to
 poze men: his ryz wphynesse dwel
 ly wyponde ende: and he pat in
 mistry seed to ye sowere shal
 yne also breed to ete: & he shal
 multiplie your seed: & make
 moche ye encreschigis of fruy
 tis of your ryz wphynesse y alle

pis ze mad ryche: weren plen
 tenous into al symplenesse: wh
 ich worchp bi vs: doynge of pa
 figis to god: for ye mynistrerie of
 pis office: not conly filly po ym
 gris pat faulen to hooly me: but
 also multiplie many pauligis
 to god: bi ye pynge of pis my
 nistrerie: whiche gloriethen god
 i ye obedience of you: knowle
 chig in ye gospel of et: & in ly
 plenesse of conynpacion into
 hem: & ito alle: & in ye bleschig
 of he for you: y dehyen you for ye
 excellent grace of god in you: y
 do panfigis to god of ye zite of
 hi: y may not be teld. *C. 12.*
And y my self poul blesche
 you bi ye mydenesse: &
 softnesse of et: whiche i
 ye face am meek amog you: & y
 absent trite in you: for y preie you:
 y let y plent be not boold bi ye et
 in which y am gellid to be boold to
 sume: pat demen us: as if we wa
 dien after ye fleth: for we walki
 ge in fleth: fixen not after ye
 fleth: for ye armuris of oure
 knyztod beu not flethly: but
 myzri bigod to ye distruction of
 strengpis: & we distrupen counels
 & al hyuenele pat hye it self ayeus
 ye stence of god: & dyuen into
 captyte al vnderstondig into ye
 seruile of et: & we han redy to
 avenge al yn obedience: whne you
 re obedience shal be fillid: & ze
 ye pigis y ben after ye face: if
 ony man tristy to hi self y he is
 of crist: penke he pis pig: ete ane
 tis hy self: for as he is etis: so
 also we: for if y shal glorie ony
 pig: more of our power: whiche ye

lord zat to us into edifying: & not
 into your distruction: y shal not
 be shamed: but y y be not gel
 sid: as to feet you bi epistlis: for
 pei seyen: y pe epistlis ben gre
 noule & stronge: but ye presence
 of ye body is feble: & ye word wor
 y to be dispaid: he y is such con
 penke pis: for such as we absent
 ben i word bi pithis: such we be
 present in deede: for we do ren not
 pinte us amog: or coparilome
 us to sume: pat couende he self:
 but we uelure us in us self: &
 coparilome us self to us: for we
 shule not haue glorie ouer me
 lure: but ye uelure of ye reule
 whiche god mesuride to us: ye me
 lure: pat stretch to you: for we
 ouer stretchen not for us: as not
 stretchge to you: for to you we ca
 men in ye gospel of et: not glori
 ynge ouer uelure: i ope menys
 uels: for we han hope of your fey
 y wery in you to be magnified
 bi our reule in abundance: also to
 preche into po pigis: pat ben bye
 dis you: not to haue glorie i ope
 manys reule: i yes pigis y ben
 mad redy: he y glorie: haue glo
 rie in ye lord: for not he y comen
 dy hi self is premyd: but whom
 god comendy. *C. 13.*
I wold y wolden suffre
 altil pig of myn vmbil
 dom: but also supporte ze
 me: for y loue you bi ye loue of
 god: for y haue sponlid you to co
 holeboure: to zelde a chaff virgyn
 to et: but y drede lest as ye ser
 pent dylleue eue wy his fital
 fraude: so your wittis ben cor
 rupt: & fallen don fro ye syppe

struyngis. enyngis. stonidynellis.
dissencions & detracions. pny
spethis of distord. bolnyngis bi p
de. debatis ben amog. zoi. & leit et
soone whane i come. god make me
low; anentis zoi. & i baveple ma
nye of hem p bifoze synede. & di
de not penance on pe vndengle
fornycation. & vuchastye p rei
handon. C. xij. H.

Ivis pnde tyme. i come
to zoi. & in pe moyn of t
tweyne of pe witneslis. euy
word ithal stonde. i seide bifoze &
sepe bifoze as pient tlyres & now
ablent. to hem pat bifoze han sy
ned & to alle ope. for if i come est
loque. i thal not spare. wher
ze seken pe preef of pat et pat
spet in me. which is not feble
i zoi. for yoi he was crucified
of i firmyte. but he lyney of pe
vertu of god. for also we ben syt
i hi. but we sthulen lyue wy h
of pe etu of god in us. alane zoi
silt. if ze ben i pe seip. ze zoi silt
pene. wher. ze knowen not.
silt. for et ihu is i zoi. but i hap
ze ben reprouable. but i hope p
ze knowen. y we be not repua
ble. & we puen pe lord. y ze do
no pig of ynel. not y we seme
pnynd. but y ze do pat y is good
y we be as repuable. for we
moit no pig. azens treupe. but
for pe treupe. for we iopen whie
we be syt. but ze ben myti. & we
prien pis pig. zoi. pfection. y
fore. i ablent wyte pes pigis.
y i pient do not hardet. bi pe po
wer. which pe lord gaf to me into
edificacoi. & not into zoi. dist
cui. **E**ripen hemye foryward

iope ze. be ze par fit. erate ze.
vndir stonde ze pe same pig. ha
ne ze pees. & god of pees & of to
ne thal be wy zoi. **E**ete ze
wel to gide i hooli coll. alle hoo
ly me greeten zoi. wel. pe grace
of oure lord ihu et. & pe charite
of god. & pe comynng of pe hoo
ly gost. be wy alle zoi. ame. **I**
endry pe seide pntle to corthys. &
bigney pe plog o pe pntle to galathies.

Gfirst of pe apostle. pe word
of treupe. but after his goyng a
wey. pe were temptid of fals a
posthis. y pe were en tued into pe
lawe & circucision. pe postle aze
depyt he to pe seip of treupe. &
wytyt to hem fro efecies. **I**ero
his plog to galathies seip al pis.

Dul pe apostle not of
me. ne by ma. but bi ihu
et. & god pe fadir. y rei
side hi fro deip. and alle
pe bryen pat ben wy me. to pe
churchis of galathie. grace to zoi.
& pees of god pe fadir. & of pe lord
ihu et. pat gaf hi silt for our sy
nes. to deliue us fro pe pient
wikkid world. bi pe wille of god
& our fadir. to whom is worship
& glorie into worldis of worldis.
Amen. **I** wonder y so soone ze be
yus moued fro hi pat depite zoi
into pe grace of et. into auoyr.
euangeli. which is not anoyr. but
y pe be summe pat troublen zoi.
& wolen mytne pe euangeli of
crist. but yoi we oz an auel of
heueue pchide to zoi. bihydis pat
y we han preehd to zoi. be he acur
sid. as i haue seid bifoze. & now
eteloone i seie. if ony preehe to;

bihydis pat y ze han vndir fongit.
be he acur sid. for now wher cou
cele. i me. oz god. oz wher i seche
to plese me. if i pleside it men.
i wet not etis seruait for bryen
i make knowe to zoi. pe euange
he y was preehd of me. for it is
not by man. ne i took it of man.
ne lerne. but bi reuelacion of
ihu et. for ze han herd my coula
cion su tyme i pe ierrie. & y i
pntlytude palligly pe church
of god. & fangt azen it. & i pntid
i pe ierrie aboute many of myn
euengelid. i my fymed. & was mo
ze abundaunt a folowere of my
fadris tradicions. But whane
it pleside hi pat departe me fro
my modur wombe. & depite bi his
grace. to lere his lone i me. y
i thulde pche hi amog pe heylene.
me. anoon i drou me not to fleitly
& blood. ne i cam to ierlin to pe a
posthis. y weie to fore me. but
i wente into arabie. & eteloones
i turnete azen into damaske. & syt
me zeer. after i cam to ierlin to
se petre. & i dwelide wy hi. & d
dayes. but i saw noon oyr of pe
aposthis. but james our lordis
broi. and pelse pigis. which i
wrote to zoi. loo to fore god. i lie
not. afterward i cam into pe
coostis of syrie & cilice. but i was
vknolbi bi face to pe churchis
of iudee. y weren i et. & pei had
den onky an heerig. y he pat p
silde us su tyme. pchide now
pe seip. azens whiche he fangte
sutyne. & in me rei glorihe god.

Ad syt fourtene. C. ij. H.
zeer after eteloones i wete
yp to ierlin wy barnabas.

& took wy me tite. i wente up
bi reuelacion & spak wy he pe e
uangelie. which i pchide among
pe heylene. & bi hem silt to yele y
semede to be synthar. lest i rine
oz hadde rine in vepn. & ney tite
y hadde be wy me while he was
heylene. was compellid to be circi
ludid. but for fals bryen pat we
ren brynt me. whiche hadden entrid
to alpie our freedom. whiche we ha
in ihu crist. to brynge us into ser
uage. but we yue no place to sub
iection. y pe treupe of pe gospel
thulde dwelle wy zoi. but of pe
se y semyden to be synthar. whi
che pei weren su tyme. it perrey
ney not to me. for god taky not
pe ploone of ma. for rei y semyde
to be synthar. zane me no pig.
but azenward. whie pei hadden
seyn. y pe euangeli of psepucie
was zoi to me. as pe euangeli
of circucision was zoi to petre.
for he pat wrouzte to petre i apostle
heed of circucision. wrouzte also
to me amog pe heylene. & whie pei
hadde knowe pe grace of god pat
was zoi to me. james & petre.
And john whiche were seyn to be
pe pilers. pei zanen rythand of
felonship to me & to barnabas.
y we among pe heylene. & pei i
to pe circucision. onky y we had
den mynde of poze me. pe whiche
pig. i was ful bily to don. but wha
ne petre was comm to antioche.
i azenstod hi in pe face. for he was
woupi to be vndir nomu. for bifo
ze y per came su me fro james.
he eet wy hepen me. but whie
pei weren comm he wy drou. & de
partide hi. dredge hem y weren of

Whiche I am present wip you my
smale childe. Whiche I ber eft
loones til pat it be four med i
you. I Wolde now be at you. I
chaunge my voyce. for I am con
foudid amog you. Seie to me ze
p wolu be vndir ye laue. ze ha
not redd ye laue. for it is wri
tū. I habraham hadde tyo lones
oon of a seruaunt. & oon of a fre
wōman. but he p was of ye ser
uaunt. was born astur ye fleish.
but he p was of ye fre wōma.
bi a biheeste. ye whiche pigis
be seid by anopr. vndir fouding
for yele ben tyo testamētis. oon
in ye hul of synay. geundige ito
seruage. whiche is agar. for sy
na is anhil p is marabie. whiche
hil is wryed to it. p is now ie
rusalem. I seruey wip hir chil
dren. but pat ierhu p is aboue
is fre. whiche is oure modir. for
it is wriū. Be glad pou barey.
pat berit not byk out & crye.
p bringit fory no childe. for
many lones ben of hir. pat is
left of hir holebonde. more pan
of hir pat hap an holebonde. but
bryen we ben lones of biheeste.
astur. Ianc. but now as pis pat
was born astur ye fleish. pur hi
ede hi p was astur ye spirit. so
now. but what seiy ye scriptur.
caste out ye seruaunt. & hir lone
for ye lone of ye seruaunt. Ithal
not be eu. wip ye lone of ye fre
wif. And so bryen we be not
lones of ye seruaunt. but of ye
fre wif. bi whiche freedom it hap
maid us free. **C. V.**
Sonde ze p fore. & nyle
ze est loones be holden i

ye rok of seruage. lo I poul seie
to you. p if ze be circūdid. it
Ithal no pig. profite to you. & I
witnesse est loones. to ech mā p
circūdid hi sif. p he is detton
of al ye laue to be dou. And ze ben
vopdid alkei fro it. & ze p ben
iustified i ye laue. ze han fallū a
wey fro grace. for we pur ye
spirit of bileue. abyden ye hope
of ristfulnesse. for in ihu it ney
circūdid is ony pig. wozp ney
ppucie. but ye bileue p wozdip
bi charite. ze rimen wel. who let
tū you p ze obeyeden not to tren
ye. consente ze to no mā. for pis
coucel is not of hi p hap clepid
you. altil sōndou. apen p al
ye gobet. I trūste on you i oure
lord. p ze ihulde vndir stoude no
opr pig. & who p distirbly you.
Ithal bere doom. who eide he be
& bryen if p preche it circūdi
on. what sustre I it perlecuci
on. pane ye standre of ye cross.
is voidid. I Wolde p rei were cut
akey p distirbly you. for bryen
ze ben clepid into freedom. conly
zyne ze not freedom ito occasion
of fleish. but bi charite of spi
rit. serue ze to gode. for euery
laue is fulfillid in o word. pou
Ihalt lone pi neyboze as pi sif.
& if ze bite & ete ech opr. & ze
left ze be waitid ech fro opr. & I
seie you i it. walke ze i spirit. &
ze ihule not parfourme ye deli
ris of ye fleish. for ye fleish co
uenter a zen ye spirit. & ye spirit
azen ye fleish. for pes ben aduer
saries to gode. p ze doen not alle
pigis p ze wille. p if ze be led by
spirit. ze be not vndir ye laue

ze ye werkis of ye fleish ben opr.
whiche ben fornicaciō. vndēne
se. vndēne. lecherie. seruile
of false goddis. wyahetaciō. s.
ēuites. stryngis. iduaciō. s.
wzappis. chidigis. dullenciō. s.
tis. ēuies. māllangtis. dūkenel
his. vmesurable etyngis. & rīs
isp to yele. whiche I seie to you.
as I hane toold you to fore. for ye
pat doen hiche pigis. ihule not
haue ye kyngdom of god. But ye
fruct of ye spirit. is charite. w
ye. pees. paciēce. long abydyg.
benygnte. goodnesse. mēdne
se. fery. tēpānce. contynēce. chal
tite. azen synche pigis is no laue.
& rei p ben of it. han crucified
her fleish wip vices & conuēti
sis. if we lyng bi spirit. walke
we bi spirit. Se we mand not
conuētous of veyn glorie. stryge
ech opr to wzappe. or hange en
vire ech to opr. **C. vi.**
Bryen if aman be occupied
in ony gilt. ze p ben spi
ritual enfourme ze hiche
i spirit of softnesse. biholdige pi
sif. lest p you be tēptid. ech ber
operis charges. & so ze ihulen
fulfille ye laue of it. for who
p troyt. p he be out. whiche he
is nouyt. he biggly hi sif. but
ech mā prone his owne werk.
& so he Ithal hane glorie in hym
sif. & not in anopr. for ech mā
Ithal ber his owne charge. he p
is taryt by word. conyne he w
hi pat techy hy in alle goodis
nyle ze erre. god is not storned
for ye pigis pat amā lowy. po
pigis he Ithal repe. for he pat lo
wip in his fleish. of ye fleish he

Ithal repe conuēciō. but he pat
lowy i spirit. of ye spirit he Ithal
al repe euilastige lē. & doynge
good. faye we not. for i his ty
me we Ithal repe not fayege.
pfore while we han tyme. we
che we good to alle me. but moost
to hem p ben homelich of ye
fery. & ze what man letteris
I hane wryte to you. wip myn
owne hond. for who eue wole
plese ye fleish. pis cōstreyney
you to be circūdid. oonly. p rei
suffre not ye plectaciō of cris
tis cross. for ney rei p be circū
did. kepen ye laue. but rei wo
len p ze be circūdid. p rei hane
glorie i you. fleish. but fer be
it fro me to hane glorie. but in
ye cross of oure lord ihu it. bi who
ye world is crucified to me. & I
to ye world. for in ihu it. ney
circūdid is ony pig. wozp. ne
ppucie. but aneue creatur. &
who eue suben pis reule. pees
on he & mercy. & on yrael of god.
and herafter no mā be heym to
me. for I bere i my body. ye take
nes of oure lord ihu it. ye gre of de lord ihu
your spirit bryen amē. **Verē it. be w**
endy ye epistul to galathes. & bi
gimcy ye plog on pistle to effecies.
Epheciāns ben of asie. yele
whiche rei hadden resseued
ye word of treyne. abile stedfastli
i ye fery. ye postle prech p. wri
ge to he fro rome. out of ploi. bi ti
tic. ye dekenē. **Iero in his plog on**
pis pistle. seiy pis. C. p.
Dul ye apostle of ihu
it bi ye wille of god.
to alle seyntis p be
at effecy. & to ye fery

fulme in ihu crist. grace be to you
 & pees of god oure fadir. & our
 lord ihu crist. blestid be god & pe
 fadir of our lord ihu crist. & har
 blestid us i al spiritual blessing
 i heuely pigis in crist. as he har
 chosin us in hi self. bifoze we ma
 fig of pe world. & we were ho
 ly & wyroure wem i his snt i cha
 rite. which har bifoze ordey
 ned us ito adopcioi of sones.
 by ihu crist into hy bi pe purpos
 of his wille. into we hering of
 pe gloze of his grace. i which he
 har glorified us in his derewor
 pe lone. i who we han redepci
 on bi his blood. fory fuisse of sy
 nes. after pe richellis of his g
 ce & abonidite greetly i us mal
 wysdom & prudece. to make kno
 we to us pe sacramet of his wil
 le. bi pe good plesance of hy. pe
 which sacramet he purposide
 i hy. i pe dispelacioi of plente
 of tymes. to enstozie alle pigis
 i crist. which be i heuenes
 & which be i erpe in hi. i who
 we be depid bi sozt. bifoze ordey
 ned by pe purpos of hy & wordm
 alle pigis. bi pe conceit of his wil
 le. & we be into pe hering of hy
 gloze. we p han hapid bifoze i
 crist. i whom also ze were de
 pid. whane ze herde pe word of
 treupe pe gospel of zoiu. heetpe.
 i who ze bileyge ben markid
 wy pe hooly gost of biheeste.
 which is pe cerues of om. eri
 tage. into pe redepciou of pur
 challig into hering of his glo
 ze. **A**fter foze i heerige zoiu
 fery pat is i crist ihu. & pe lone in
 to alle seyntis. ceesse not to do pa

trigis for zoiu. makige wyde of
 zoiu i my prieris. & god of om.
 lord ihu crist. pe fadir of gloze.
 zoiu to you pe spirit of wysdo
 & of reuelacioi into pe knowig
 of hym. & pe pzen of zoiu. her te
 lyzned. & ze wite which is pe
 hope of his clepig. & which be
 pe richellis of pe gloze of his e
 ritage in seyntis. & which is pe
 excellent greetnesse of his ver
 tu ito us pat han bileuid bi pe
 working of remyt of his bti.
 which he wyroure i crist. resige
 hi fro deap. & lettage hi on his ryz
 half i heuely pigis. aboue eth
 pncipal & potestat. & bti. & do
 minacioi. & aboue eth name. &
 is named. not only i pis world.
 but also in pe world to comig.
 & made alle pigis liget vnder
 his feet. & zat hi to be heed on
 al pe churche. & is pe body of hy.
 & pe plente of hy which is alle
 pigis i alle pigis. fulfild. **A**
And whne ze were a
 deed i zoiu. gatis & fynes.
 i which ze wandre i su
 tyme. after pe couel of pis world.
 after pe pnce of pe power of pi
 er. of pe spirit. & working noly
 into pe lones of vnbileue in whate
 alle we alle lueden su tyme
 in pe de lins of om. fleuth. do
 yuge pe willis of pe fleuth. & of
 ponzis. & we were by kynde pe so
 nes of wyappe. as ope me. but
 god is ryche in mercy. for his
 ful moche charite in which he lo
 uede us. & he whne we were deed
 in synes. quykende us to gide
 in crist. by whos grace ze ben sand.
 & azenrethid to gide. & made to g

die to lute in heuely pigis. i crist ihu.
 & he sthulde thewe in pe worldis
 aboue comig. & pe plenteuouse
 richellis of his grace in goodnes
 se on us i crist ihu. for bi grace ze
 ben sand by fery. & is not of
 for it is pe zifte of god. not of we
 tis. & no man hane gloze. for
 we ben pe makig of hi. maid of
 nouzt in crist ihu. i goote werkis.
 which he god har ordeyued. & we
 go in pe werkis. for which pig be
 ze wynde ful. & su tyme ze were
 hepen in fleuth. which were
 zed pnce. fro pat p is seid cir
 cunchoi maid bi hond in fleuth.
 & ze were in pat tyme wyroure
 crist. alined fro pe luyng of tra
 el. & gestis of testamets. not ha
 myge hope of biheeste. & wyroure
 god in pis world. but now i crist
 ihu. ze pat were in su tyme ferr.
 be maid in pe blood of crist. for
 he is our pees. & made hope oon.
 & vnyndige pe myddel wal of
 a wal wyroure moztter enemys
 tes in his fleuth. & anoydite pe
 laue of maudemetis by domes.
 & he make tweyne i hi self. ito
 o nete ma makige pees. to re
 coule hope in o body to god by
 pe cross. sleynge pe enemytees
 in hi self. & he comig pzechide
 pees to zoiu pat were ferr. &
 pees to he p were myz. for bi hy
 we hope han myz comig. & in
 o spirit to pe fadir. & fere now ze
 ben not gestis & strangeris. but
 ze ben citeisins of seyntis. & hous
 hold meyne of god. aboue bldid
 on pe hidamet of apostlis. & of
 psetis. upon pat hyste corner
 stoon crist ihu. i whom eth bldig

mand. wery into an hooly tem
 ple i pe lord. in who also be ze bil
 did to gide into pe abytade of
 god in pe hooly gost. **E**ff. m.
After pe grace of pis pig
 i pon pe bound of crist
 ihu for zoiu hepenme. if
 nepeles ze han han herd pe dis
 pensacioi of goddis grace. & is
 zoiu to me in you. for by reuela
 cioi pe sacramet is maid kno
 wu to me. as i aboue wroot in
 short pig. as ze moun rede & on
 distonde my prudence. & pe immi
 terie of crist. which was not kno
 wu to ope genaciois to pe lones
 of me. as it is now thewid to his
 hooly apostlis. & psetis. i pe spirit
 & hepen me ben euene exys. of
 o body. & partenes to gide of
 his biheeste i crist ihu. bi pe emigelle
 whos mynstre i am maid bi pe
 zifte of goddis grace. which is
 zoiu to me bi pe working of his
 vertu to me leest of alle seyntis.
 pis grace is zoiu to pzeche amog
 hepen me. pe vnselchable richel
 lis of crist. & to lizne alle me which
 is pe dispelacioi of sacinent hid
 fro worldis i god. & made alle pigis
 of nouzt. & pe moche fold wysdo
 of god be knowu to pnces & po
 testatis i heuely pigis. by pe chr
 che. by pe bifoze ordmance of worl
 dis. which he made i crist ihu on
 re lord. i who we han trust. & myz
 comig. i trustig by pe fery of
 hi for which pig i afe. & ze faple
 not i my tbulaciois for zoiu. which
 is zoiu. gloze. for grace of pis
 pig i bonse my knees to pe fadir
 of our lord ihu crist. of who eth fa
 dirheed in heuenes & in erpe is

named / he zyne to you after periche
his of his glorie: vertu to be streng
pid bi his spirit bi pe pner ma /
est dwelle by fery: in zour hertis
pze rootid & groundid i charite: mo
wn caprehe de wy alle seyntis. Wh
ich is pe biete & pe lengpe & pe h
nelle & pe depnele also to wite pe cha
rite of est more excellēt pā science.
pze be fillid in al pe plake of god
to hym p is wize to do alle
pze is more pleuteuonchly pā we at
en oz vndirtonde by pe vertu pat
worchip in us: to hym be glorie i
pe churche & in est ihu into alle pe
genaciōis of pe world of worldis
amen. **¶ C. m. ¶**
Verfore i boundid for pe lo
rd biseche you: pze walke
worship i pe depy i which
ze ben clepid wip al mekenes
& myldenesse: wip patience sup
portynge ech oyr i charite byli
to kepe vntie of spirit: in pe bo
ond of pees o body & o spirit: as
ze ben clepid in oon hope of zour
clepyng: o lord o fery: o baptym
o god & fadyr of alle: which is a bo
ne alle me & by alle pigis & in us
alle: but to ech of us grace is zo
m: by pe mesure of pe zynynge
of est: for which pig he seip he
stryngge an hy: ledde caritae an
tyf he zaf zistis to me: but wht
is it p he stryde up: no but p also
he cam don first into pe lowere
partis of pe erpe: he it is p cam
don & p stryde on alle heuenes:
p he shulde fille alle pigis: & he
zaf summe apostles: summe psetis
o ye euangelists: o ye shepardis
& techeris: to pe ful ending of ley
tis: into pe werk of mynsterie:

ito edificaciō of estis body: til
we reuen alle ito vntie of fery
& of knowig of goddis sone: i
to a parfyt man after pe mesu
re of age of pe plente of est: p
we be not now hyle children
moungge as waibis: & be not bo
zi aboute wip ech wynd of re
chig: i re weywardnesse of me
in est i wite to pe dysseynge
of errour: but do we treipe in
charite: & were in hy bi alle pi
gis p is est oyr heed of whom
al pe body lett to gidre & boundid
to gidre by ech wynter of vnder
sernyng: bi worchip into pe me
sur of ech membre: makyn
crefig of pe body into edificaciō
of it self in charite: pfoze p seie
& wituelle pis pig in pe lord: pze wal
ke not now: as hevene me walke
in pe vanyte of her witt: pat han
vndirtondig derked wip derked
lis: & ben alshened fro pe hys of god:
by ignorance p is in hem: for pe
blyndnesse of her herte: which
dispenrige bitookē he self to vn
chastite: into pe worchip of al vn
clenelle i conuertise: but zehan not
so lernd est: if nepeles: ze herden
hy: & ben tanzt in hy: as is treipe
in ihu: do ze avey by pe elde lynyng
pe elde ma p is corrupt by pe desy
ris of errour: & be ze reuelid in
pe spirit of zour soule: & clope ze
pe newe man: which is maid afte
god i reuelyshele & hookynesse of
treipe: for which pig ze putte
avey lesyng: & speke ze treipe
ech mā wip his neyboze: for we
ben mebris ech to oyr: be ze wip
& nyle ze do syne: pe sūne falle
not down on zoure wappe: nyle

ze zyne fadyr to pe denel he p fadyr:
now stele he not: but more trauele
he in worchip: wip his hondis pat
p is good: p he haue wherof he
shal zyne to pe nedre: ech yuel
word go not of zour mouy: but
if oyr is good to pe edificaciō
of fery: p it zyne grace to me
pat heeren: & nyle ze make pe
hooky goot of god loz: in whi
ch ze ben markid in pe day of re
depciō: al bitrynelle & wrape
& indignaciō: & cry: & blassemye
be takē avey fro you: wip al ma
hce & be ze to gidre benygne
mychful: for zynge to gidre: as
also god forzat to you in crist
¶
Therfore be **¶ C. m. ¶**
ze folowaris of god: as
moost dereworpe sones:
& walke ze in loue: as est louede
us: & zaf hi self for us: an offryng
& a sacrifice to god: into pe odour
of swetnesse: & fornycatiō: & al
vnclenesse: oz auarice be not na
med a moz you: as it bicomey
hooky me: eyn: fipe oz foly spe
che oz harlotrye p perteyney not
to profyt: but more doynge of
pangis: for wite ze pis & vnd
tonde p ech lechour: oz vncle
man oz conuitions: p seruey to
many metis: hay not eritage
in pe kygdom of est: & of god: no
ma dysseyn you by veyn wordis:
for whi: for pes pigis: pe wrape
of god cam ou pe sones of vny
leue: pfoze nyle ze be maid par
teneris of hem: for ze weri sni
tyme derkeness: but now hzt
in pe lord: walke ze as pe sones
of lzt: for pe fruyt of lzt is i
al goodnesse & ryt wyshele and

treipe: & preue ze what pig is
wel pleyngge to god: & nyle ze co
myne to vntie to use werkis
of deruelles: but more repro
ue ze: for what pigis ben don of
he in pny: it is foul zhe to spe
ke: & alle pigis p ben reproued of
pe lzt: ben openly shetid: for
al pig p is shetid: is lzt: for
which pig he seip: ryle you p sle
pit & ryle up fro deep: & est sh
al lztne pee **¶** verfore buyen se
ze: hois warly ze shile so: not as
vnyle me: but as wyle me: & ze
bryngge tyme: for pe dayes ben
yuele: pfoze nyle ze be maid vn
wyle: but vndirtondig which
is pe wille of god: & nyle ze be dū
kū of nryn: in which is leatherie:
but be ze fillid wip pe hooky goot:
& speke ze to you self i salmes &
ymynes & spiritual songis: lig
yngge: & senyngge salu i zour her
tis to pe lord: enuore doynge
pangis for alle pigis i pe name
of oure lord ihu est: to god & to
pe fadyr: be ze suget to gidre in
pe drede of est **¶** Wymen be pei
suget to her hosebondis: as to
pe lord: for pe mā is heed of pe
wōman: as est is heed of pe chr
che: he is sayour of his body: but
as pe churche is suget to est: so
wymen to her hosebondis i alle
pangis **¶** Oren loue ze zour wyues:
as est louede pe churche: & zaf hi
self for it: to make it hooky &
clenite it wip pe wasthyng of wa
tir: in pe word of lzt: to zyne
pe churche glorious to hi self: p
it hadde no wem ne rynchng:
oz oyr ench pnyng: but p it be ho
oly & vnde fouled: so & me loue

I heere of you p^r ze stonde in o
spirit. of o wille. trauehge to
sidre to ye fery of ye gospel. &
in no pig. be ze afeerd of aduer
saries. which is to he cause of
perdition. but to you cause of
heelp. & ye pig is of god. for
it is you. for crist. & not oonly
ze bilerie in h^r. but also p^r ze
suffre for h^r. hauege ye sa
me stryff. which ze saye in me.
ze now ze han herd of me. **C. iij.**
Vis in c^t. if ony confort
is in c^t. if ony solace of
charite. if ony felouschip
of spirit. if ony iustardnel
se of mercy doyng. fille ze my
iope. & ze vnder stonde ye same
ring. & haue ye same charite.
of o wille. & feelen ye same pig
no pig bi stryff. neyr by veyn
glorie. but i mekenesse. demyge
ech op^r to be lyer. & hi sike. not
biholdige ech ring. bi h^r sike. whi
pigs ben his owne. but po pigs
p^r ben of oref me. & feeze ze pig
pig in you. which also in c^t ihu.
p^r whie he was in ye fourme of
god. demyde not raneyn. p^r hi
silk were euene to god. but he
lowide hi silk. takege ye fourme
of a seruait. & was mead to ye
liknesse of me. & in abyrt was
foindū as ama. he mekide hi silk.
& was maid obedient to ye deep.
zhe to ye deep of ye croll. for whi
ch pig god enhaulide hi. & zaf to
hi a name p^r is aboue al name. p^r
in ye name of ihu. ech knee be
bowid. of henely pigs of erely
pigs. & of helis. & ech tige kno
wleche. p^r ye lord ihu c^t is i ye
glorie of god ye fadir. **C. iij.**

fore my mooste derer worpe be
pen as enmore ze han oberstid
not i my p^rseuse oonly. but mo
che more now i my absence. for
che ze wy dzed. & tremlyng you
re heelp. for it is god p^r worchir
in you boye to wille. & to p^rfour
me for good wille. & do ze alle rin
gis. wyoute gr^rathigis & dou
tigs. p^r ze be wyoute playnt.
& epple as ye lones of god wy
oute reff. i ye myddil of a shre
wid nacioū & a keyward amog
whiche ze sthyppen as zyners
of lyt. in ye world. & holde ze to
sidre ye word of lyt to my glorie
i ye day of c^t. for i haue not rū
ne in veyn. w^r i haue trauehd
i veyn. but pouz i be offid or elag
on ye sacryfice & supple of you
fery. i haue iope & i p^ranke you
alle & ye same pig haue ze iope.
& p^ranke ze me. & i hope in ye
lord ihu. pat i shal sē de
chynwoche loone to you. pat i
be of good confort. whie po
pungs ben knowū p^r ben abou
te you. for i haue no mā so of
o wille. p^r is blyf for you wy de
ne affection. for alle me seken
po pigs p^r ben her owne. not
po p^r ben of c^t ihu. but knowe
ze ye assay of h^r. for as a lone
to ye fadir. he hay lerned wy
me i ye gospel. perfore i hope
p^r i shal sende hi to you. and as
i se what pigs ben abou me
& i truste in ye lord. p^r also my
silk shal come to you soone. &
i ge shide it nedeful. to sende to
you epastrodre my broy. & eue
ne worcher. & my enene knyt
but your apostle. & ye ministr

of my nede. for he desynde you
alle. & he was lozentul. p^rfore
p^r ze herden p^r he was lyk. for he
was lyk to ye deep. but god had
de mercy on h^r. & not oonly on
h^r. but also on me. lest i hadde
heynesse on heynesse. p^rfore
more hastely i sente h^r. p^r whi
ne ze han seyn h^r ze haue iope
est. & i be wyoute heynesse.
p^rfore resseyne ze hi wy al iope
in ye lord. & haue ze suche wy
al hono. for ye werk of c^t he
wente to deep. younge his lyf.
p^r he shilde fulfille. p^r pat fay
lde of you ameto my seruise.
C. iij.
Hme forwarde. **C. iij.**
my bryfen haue ze iope
i ye lord to wente to you pe
same pigs. to me it is not slow.
& to you it is necessary. se ze hou
dis. se ze vuele werkme. se ze dy
nition. for we ben circūciom.
whiche by spirit serue to god. &
glorien in crist ihu. & han not
trust in ye flesch. pouz i haue
trust zhe in ye flesch. if ony op
mā is seyn to trite in flesch. i
more. p^r was circūcidid in ye
entye day. of ye kyn of israel.
of ye lynage of beniamy. an e
brow of eby. & eby bi ye la
we. a farile bi lone. & hange
ye church of god. by ristwines
se p^r is in ye lawe. wyngge wy
oute playnt. but whiche pigs
weren to me wynggis. i haue
dempd p^rse. apenrigis for c^t.
C. iij.
I sepeles i selle alle pigs to be
peremēt. for ye cleer thence of
ihu c^t my lord. for whom i made
alle pigs peremēt. & i deme as
drit. p^r i wyne c^t. & pat i be fou

dū in h^r. not hauege my rist wyl
nelle p^r is of ye lawe. but pat p^r
is of ye fery of c^t ihu. p^r is of
god ye ristwines. i fery. to kno
we h^r. & ye v^ru of his ryth. & ze
ye felonship of his passion. &
to be maid lyk to his deep. if on
ony mā i come to ye resurrec
cion p^r is fro deep. not p^r now i
haue takū. or now am parfyt.
but i sūbe if in ony mā. i co
prehende. in whiche pig. also i am
comprehendid of c^t ihu. & wyte
i deme me not p^r i haue cōprehe
did. but o pig. i forze ye po pigs
p^r ben bihyndis. & streche forp
my silk to po pigs p^r ben bifore
i p^rinse to ye ordeyned meete
of ye h^r depis of god in c^t ihu.
p^rfore who eue we ben parfyt.
feele we pig. & if ze vnder
stonden in ope mā ony pig. p^r is
pig god shal shewe to you. wepe
les to what pig. we han commū.
pat we vnder stonde ye same pig.
& p^r we parfyth dwelle i ye same
renle. **C. iij.** we be ze my folo
weris. & wyte ze he pat walke
so. as ze han om. fourme. for
manye walke. whiche i haue leu
ofte to you. But now i wepige
seie. ye enemyes of c^tis croll.
whos ende is deep. whos god is
ye wombe. & ye glorie i confuci
on of h^r. p^r sanoren erely pigs
but our lūngg is in heuene. fro
whens also we abyden ye lūngg
our om. lord ihu c^t. whiche shal
reforme ye body of our mekenel
se. p^r is maid lyk to ye body of his
clerenesse. bi ye worchig. bi whi
ch he may also make alle pigs
sugēt to h^r. **C. iij.**

Verfore my briden moost
dereworpe & moost desirid.
my ioye & my croikne: so
stoude ze i pe lord moost der
briden. I preie encodiam. & bi
seche hynacem: to vnderstonde pe
same pig in pe lord. also I preie
& yee germa felowe: helpe p' pe
ilke wyemen y' traueled wy me
in pe golpel wy demet & oye
my helperis: whos names be
i pe booke of lyf. Ioye ze i pe lord
euermore: eke I seie ioye ze be
zoure patience knowu to alle
me: pe lord is my be ze no ping
bly: but i al preier & blechig w
doyng of panyngs be zoure at
pnyngs knowu at god & pe pees
of god y' passy al wytt: kepe
zour hertis & vnderstonde is i
crist ihu. fro heims soxy briden.
whit ene pigis ben soye. what
ene pigis chist. whit ene pigis
mst. whit ene pigis hooky. what
ene pigis able to be loued. whit
ene pigis of good fame. if ony
vtn. if ony preilg of disciplyne.
pe ke ze pes pigis. y' also ze han
lernd & take & herd & seyn i me.
do ze pes pigis: & god of pees sh
al be wy zou. but I ioyete greet
ly i pe lord: y' on tyme after ward
ze flouride azen to feele for me.
as also ze feelid: but ze were ocu
pied: I seie not as for nede: for
I haue lernd to be sufficient: in
whiche pigis I am: & I can also
be lowd: I can also haue plente
euywhere & in alle pigis: I am
taugt to be fillid & to hugre:
& to aboude & to suffre misette
I may alle pigis: in h' y' confor
ty me neyeles ze han doon wel:

comynge to my tribulaciou for
also ze filpensis witte. y' in pe bi
gynng of pe golpel. whie I we
te forp fro macedouye: no chie
che comynete wy me i resoi
of pig zom & taku. but ze al
oone: whiche senten to tellalo
myt: oony & twyes also into
vll to me: not for y' seke nite.
but I requyre fruyt abouidige
i zour resoi: for I haue alle pi
gis: & aboude: I am fillid wy
po pigis taku of epafrodite. whi
che ze senten into pe odour of his
etnelle a couenable sacrifice ple
lige to god: & my god fill all zour
re desir bi hile richellis i glorie
i crist ihu: but to god I am fader.
be glorie no wordis of wordis
ame. Greete ze wel euy hooky
ma in crist ihu: po briden y' be n
me greeten zou wel: alle hooky me
greete zou wel: moost soyei pe
y' ben of pe empouris hous: pe
gite of our lord ihu crist be wy zou
re lpritt ame. **Here endy pe
pistle to philpensis: & bigynne pe
plog on pe pistle to colocensis.**

Colocensis ben also laodice
his: pes ben of alie: & rei had
de be disleyned by falle aposthis
pe pistle h' y' sille cam not
to he: but he byngny he aze
to correioun by epistle: for pei
hadde herd pe word of archypp.
pat hadde vnderfonge pe my
msterie ito he: y' fore pe apostle
now boundu wroot to he & effelie:
bi titic pe deken & onosym y' a

Dul apostle **colic** **Jer** i his plog
on vis pistle seyn vis
of crist ihu. bi pe wille

of god: & tymothe brop. to he
y' ben at colose. hooky & feryful
briden i crist ihu. gte & pees to
zou of god our fader. & of pe lord
ihu crist. We don panyngis to god
& to pe fader of our lord ihu crist.
euimore preyngs for zou: hee
rige zoure fery i crist ihu. & pe lo
ue y' ze han to alle hooky me: for
pe hope y' is kept to zou i heue
nes: whiche ze herde in pe word
of tremp of pe golpel y' cam to
zou: as also it is in al pe world.
& maky fruyt & werry as in
zou fro pat day: i whiche ze her
den & kenne pe gte of god i treu
pe: as ze lerne of epafas our
felawe moost dereworpe: whiche
is a trewe ministe of ihu crist for
zou: whiche also thewde to us: zou
re long in lpritt: y' fore we fro
pe day i whiche we herden: crelle
not to preie for zou & to aye: y'
ze be fillid wy pe knowig of his
wille: in al wysdom & goostly on
durstondig: y' ze walke worpily to
god plesinge by alle pigis: & ma
ke fruyt in al good werk: & were
in pe stience of god: & ben confor
tid in al vertu bi pe myzt of his
derenelle: al patience & long
abidng wy ioye: y' ze don pany
gis to god & to pe fader: whiche
made zou worpi into pe part of
eritage of hooky me in lpritt: whiche
delyuerde us fro pe potter of dert
nellis: & tullatid into pe kigdo
of pe sone of his lonyng. in whom
we han azenbyng & remission
of synes: whiche is pe ymage of
god vnyshble: y' frutte bigetn
of ech creatur: for i hy alle pigis
ben maad: in heuenes & in erpe:

visible & vnyshble. ey trones ey
duacions: ey pncehodis ey pow
eris: alle pigis ben maad of nouyt
by hy & in hy m: & he is bifore al
le: & alle pigis ben in hy: & he is
heed of pe body of pe churche: wh
ich is pe bigynnyng: & pe frutte
bigetn of deed me: y' he holde pe
frutte digryte in alle pigis: for
i hy it pleside al plente to inhabi
te: & bi hy alle pigis to be recon
celid into hy: & maad pees by pe
blood of his cross: po pigis pat
ben i erpis. eyr y' ben in heue
ms: & whie ze were on tyme
ahemyd & enemys bi witt i y
nele werkis: now he hap recon
selid zou i pe body of his fleish
bi deyr: to haue zou hooky & vbe
nyd: & wyoute reprof bifore
hy: if neyeles ze diuelli in pe
fery: fouidid & stable: & vnyuable
fro pe hope of pe golpel y' ze han
herd: whiche is prechid in al crea
tur: y' is vnder heuene. of whiche
I pouil am maad mymist: & now
I haue ioye i passion for zou: & I
fille po pigis y' faulen of pe pas
sionis of crist i my fleish: for his
body y' is re churche of whiche I
pouil am maad mymist: bi pe dis
pensation of god y' is zom to me
i zou: y' I fille pe word of god: pe
pnypte y' was hid fro wordis
& genacions: but now it is the
wid to his seyntis: to whiche
god wold make knowu pe ry
chellis of pe glorie. of yis sacra
met in heuene me: whiche is
crist in zou: pe hope of glorie: wdo
we shewen. reprenge ech ma.
& techge ech ma in al wysdom:
y' we offere ech ma partyt i crist

in which pig also / trauel
 i dreyng: bi pe wordyng of hy
 he wordyng i me i vertu
But i wole y ze wyl
 te. What byfynelle i ha
 ue for you. i for he y be
 at laodice. i whiche enie saye
 not my face in fleulth. y her her
 tis be confornd. i pe be taut
 in charite. into alle pe richelth
 of pe plente of vnderstondig.
 into pe knowyng of myfterie
 of god pe fadir of ihu crist. in
 whom alle pe tresouris of wyl
 dom i of stience ben hid / for yis
 pig i sepe. y no ma disleue
 in hyz pe of wordis. for pouz i
 be absent in body. by spirit i
 am wy 3on. ioyng i seynge you
 re ordre. i pe sadnelle. of zour
 bileue y is in ctt. y fore as ze ha
 takn ihu ctt oure lord. walke
 ze in hy. i be ze rootid i byldid
 aboue in hi. i cotermyd in pe bi
 leue as ze han lerid. abonidige
 i hy in doynge of panfigis. Se
 ze y no ma disleue you. bi filo
 sofye i veyn fallace. afen ye i
 dition of me. afen ye elemetis
 of pe world. i not afen ctt. for
 in hi dwelly bodilich al pe fulnes
 of pe godheed. i ze ben fillid i hi.
 y is heed of al principat i polker
 i who also ze ben circuldid. in
 circualion not maad wy hond i
 dispothge of pe body of fleulth.
 but i circualion of crist. i ze be
 buried to guidre wy hi in bapty.
 in who also ze han rise aze bi tem
 of pe wordyng of god. y reside hi
 fro deap. i whane ze were deed
 i gyltis i pe ppruce of zour fleulth.
 he afenye to guidre you wy hi

forzpyngge to you alle gyltis.
 doynge asey y wryng of de
 cree. y was azen us. y was a
 tte to us. i he took asey pat
 fro pe myddel pithge it on pe
 cross. i he spophite pncipatis i
 poweris. i dede out etaly. ope
 ly ouercomynge he in hi self. y
 fore no ma nige you i mete or in
 dreyng or in part of feete day.
 or of neomenye or of sabotis. whi
 che ben shadowne of yis to co
 myte. for pe body. is of ctt. 200
 man disleue you wyllyge to te
 che i mekenelle i religion of
 angls po pigis whiche he hap not
 seyn wallige veynly bolned
 wy wit of his fleulth. i not hol
 dige pe heed. of whiche al pe body.
 by bondis i ioyngis to guidre in
 dir ministrand i maad. wey ito
 eutreefing of god for if ze ben de
 de wy crist fro pe elemetis of yis
 world. what zit as me hyngge to
 pe world deme ze. y ze touche not
 ney taste ney tete wy hondis
 po pigis. whiche alle ben into deap
 bi pe ilke vill. afen ye comande
 metis i pe techyngis of me. whi
 che han a relou of wysdom in
 veyn religion i mekenelle. i
 not to spare pe body. not i ony
 honour to pe fulfylling of pe fleulth.
Trihu to guidre w ctt. aete
 ze po pigis y ben aboue. whi
 re ctt is sittige in pe ryt
 half of god. sanore ze po pi
 gis y ben aboue. not po pigis
 y be on pe erpe. for ze ben dede.
 i zour lpt is hid wy ctt in god
 for whane ctt shal apper. you
 lpt. pane also ze shulen appere

Wy hi in glorie y fore sle ze
 zoure mebris whiche ben on pe er
 pe. for macion vncleuelle. let
 cherie. vnel couetile. i amarece
 whiche is sermyle of malmetis
 for whiche pigis. pe wyappe of
 god cam on pe sonnes of vubile
 ue. in whiche also ze wallid li
 tyne. whane ze lyuede in he. but
 not putte ze asey alle pigis.
 wyappe indignacion. malice.
 blafteyng. i foul word of zour
 moyn. nyle ze lye to guidre. spop
 le ze you fro pe eelde ma wy his
 dedis i clove ze pe newe man.
 y is maad newe azen into pe
 knowyng of god. afen ye yma
 ge of hy y made hi. wher is
 not male i female. hevene ma
 i Jew. circualion i ppruce. bar
 barus i ita. boude ma i fre
 ma. but alle pigis i in alle pi
 gis ctt. y fore ze as pe chofone
 of god. hooly i loued clove you
 wy pe entrails of mercy. be
 ngyngte i mekenelle. tepan
 ce patience i supporte ze ethe
 opur. i forzme to you self. if
 ony ma azen ony hap a quere
 le as pe lord for af to you. so al
 lo ze i upon alle pigis. pes ha
 ne ze charite. y is pe bond of p
 fecion. i pe pees of ctt. i ope
 in zour hertis i whiche ze be de
 pid in moo body. i be ze kynde pe
 word of ctt dwelle in you plente
 uously in al wysdom. i teches
 moneste you self in salmes i
 ymynes i spiritual songis in
 grace. lynyngge in zoure hertis
 to pe lord al pig. what en ying
 what en ying ze doen i word or
 i de. alle pigis in pe name of

our lord ihu ctt. doynge pakegi
 to god i to pe fadir bi hi. i wy
 me be luyet to zour hofebondis.
 as it bihouey in pe lord. me lo
 ne ze zour wyues. i nyle ze be
 butre to hem. bones. obepe ze
 to zour fadir i modir by alle
 pigis. for yis is wel plehyge in
 pe lord fadir. nyle ze terre zo
 sonnes to indignacion. y pe be
 not maad feble hertid. seruau
 tis. obepe ze by alle pigis to fleul
 chly lordis. not sermyngge at yze.
 as plehyngge to me. but in sp
 pleneffe of herte. dzedige pe
 lord. what enie ze doen. worche
 ze of wille. as to pe lord. i not
 to me. wryngge. y of pe lord ze
 shule take zeldig of errage.
 serue ze to pe lord ctt. for he pat
 doyn nurie. what reslepe pat
 y he dite yuele. i a ception of
 ploones. is not anentis god.
Iordis yme. i. m. m.
 ze to seruauitis. y pat
 is mit i euene wryngge.
 y also ze han alord in heuene. be
 ze bihy in prier. i wake in it.
 in doynge of panfigis. i prier
 ech for opur i for us. y god app
 ne to us pe dore of word. to lye
 ke ye mytpe of ctt for whiche
 allo i am bondu. y i thewe it.
 so as it bihouey me to lyeke.
 walke ze in wysdom to he pat
 ben wyonte for. azen byge
 tyme. zour word be sanord.
 salt evermore in grace. y ze
 wite. hord it bihouey you to an
 cof. luyet to ech man. i tucus
 moost dere brop i feryful my
 mistre i my felouke i pe lord.
 what make alle pigis knowu

to 3ou þ ben aboute me / whom I
seute to 3ou to þis same pig: þ
he knowe what pigis þen abou
te 3ou. & comforte 3oum herthis
wip oueþyme moost dere & fey
ful broþir: which is of 3ou wh
che thule make alle pigis þ be
don here: knowiū to 3ou / **Ar**
tark þloner wip me: greetip
3ou wel / & wark þe colyn of **Bar**
nabas: of who 3e han take man
dementis / if he come to 3ou: rel
seyue 3e hy / and ihs þ is leid in
whiche ben of circucision þe al
oone þen my helperis in þe ky
dom of god: þ were to me in solace
Epafras þ is of 3ou þe seruauit
of ihu ctt: greetip 3ou wel / eue
bily for 3ou i þieris: þ 3e stonde
par fyt & ful in al þe wille of god
and I bere witnessig to hy: þ he
hay moche trauel for 3ou / and for
þe þen at laodice: & þ ben at
jerapolyim / luk þe leche moost
dere & demas: greetē 3ou wel
Greete 3e wel þe bypen: þ ben
at laodice / & þe woman nympam:
þ þe churche pat is in þe hous
þ whāne þis pittle is rad amōg
3ou: do 3e þ it be rad i þe churche
of laodicensis: & rede 3e þat pitt
le þ is of laodicensis: & sepe 3e to
archippus: Se þe mynistrē þat
þ hast takū in þe lord: þ þ fille it
my salutation: bi þe hond of
poul: be 3e myldeful of my bondis
þe grace of þe lord ihu be w 3ou
amē / **Here endip þe pittle to**
colocensis: & bigyne þe plog o
þe firsle pittle to tessalome

Thalomicesis ben // **lis**
macedomes: in ihu est / vñ
ane per hadde resleyued pe word

of trempre: per hoode fide fastly
in ye fery: & also i psecucion of
her owne citeleyus / fery mo
ze per resley nede not false a
posths: ue po rigis y werten
leid of false aposths / pese pe
pofte pzeifip: wntige to hem
from athenis bi titicus i onesy
mus / Jerom in his prolog on
his pulle sen pis // C. v. //

Dul & eulian & thy mo
che. to ye churche of cel
salomellis. in god ye
fadir & in ye lord ihu
crist. grace & pees to zoni. We do
paukyngis to god eimmore for al
le zoni. & we make mynde of zoni
in our prieris wyponne weelg/
hauyge mynde of ye werk of zoni
ure feyr & trauel & charite & a
bydyng of ye hope of our lord ihu
crist bifoze god & our fadir. ze
louyd by pere of god. we remi/
ge zoni re chelyng. for our gospel
was not at zoni i word only. but
allo m&tu & in ye hooly goost &
in moche plente. as ze witen.
whiche we were amog zoni for
zoni. & ze ben maad folowyris of
us & of ye lord. resseyuynge ye
word i moche tribulacioun. wry
ioye of ye hooly goost. so pat ze
ben maad enlauple to alle men
y bileue. i macedonye & i acaye/
for of zoni ye word of ye lord is
purpyshtyd. not only i macedo
nye & acaye. but zoni. feyr pat
is to god. in ech place is gon fory.
so y it is not nete to us for to
speke ony ying. for ye i shewe
of zoni. what maner entre we
hadde to zoni. & hon ze be comitid
to god fro man metis. to serue

to ye lyfge god & very / & to
abide his lone fro heuenes.
Whom he reside fro deap. ye
lord ihu y delynede us fro thrap
ye to comynge // **Cm. ij.** //

In byperēze wētē our
entre to ȝou. for it was
not weyn but first we
suffred & werē pouerfuld wif
wzongis as ze wētē in filippis. &
hadden trist in our lord. to speke
to ȝou pe gospel of god in moche
bysynesse & oure confortaciō. is
not of erroun. neȝ of vicienes
se. neȝ in gyle but as we ben pre
myd of god. y^e gospel of god
shulde be takē to us. so we spe
ken not as plesige to mē. but
to god y^e preuey oure hertis. for
neȝ we werē ony tyme i word
of glosyng. as ze wētē neȝ in
oaciō of auarice. god is wit
nelle. neȝ y^e sekyge gloire of mē.
neȝ of ȝou neȝ of oyr. Whiche
we as cristis apollis myzten
hane be in charge to ȝou but we
werē maad lytle in pe myddel of
ȝou as if a myrre fottre hur so
nes so we delirige ȝou wif gre
et loue. wolde hane brake to ȝou.
not oonly pe gospel of god but
allo oure lynes. for ze ben maad
moost dere. for ze to us for
berpen ze bē mynde ful of oure
tramel & werynelle. we worch
de myzt & day. y^e we shulde not
greue ony of ȝou & prechide to
ȝou pe enāgelio of god. god & ze
ben wyne this. how hookly & mist
ly. & wyponet playnt we werē
to ȝou pat bileuede. as ze witen.
how we preiede ȝou & confortide
ech of ȝou as ye fadur. his sones.

& we han witneslid / y^e ihu^e ihu^e
 go worþy to god. y^e at clepide you
 into his kyngdom & glorie / y^e fore
 we don þankis to god. w^h pou
 tē ceellig / for w^hane ze hadden
 take of us y^e word of y^e heerig
 of god. ze tooken it not as y^e word
 of men / but as it is w^h y^e word
 of god. y^e w^hochir i you y^e han bi
 leued / for bryen ze ben maad fo
 loweis of y^e churcis of god y^e be
 in iudea i crist ihu^e / for ze han suf
 frid y^e same yigis of zour euene
 lynagis / as yei of y^e ielwis / w^hi
 che sloken bove y^e lord ihu^e & y^e
 & fetis. & purshbede us / & yei
 plesen not to god. & yei ben adu
 saries to alle mē / forbedige us
 to speke to hevene mē. y^e yei be
 maad sark / y^e yei fille her hines
 enmoze for y^e w^harre of god cā
 on hē. into y^e ende / & bryere we
 desolat fro you for a tyme by mo
 ny. & in biholdig / but not in her
 te. han hized moze plenteuous
 ly to se zour face w^h y^e greet desir
 for we wolde come to you / zhe y^e
 pouil comys & esaloone / but sa
 thamas lettide us for w^hi w^hat
 is our hope. or ioye or corowne
 of glorie. w^hey ze ben not bifore
 our lord ihu^e c^h / in his comyng.
 for ze ben our glorie & ioye. C. iii.

In which pig we suffere
no lengere: & it please
to us to dwelle aloone at
Ztamps/ and we sente tymothe
our brop. & mynstre of god in
pe euagelye of crist: to you to be
cōfermyd & to be tauyt for our
seip. yf no mā be moued in perse
tribulaciōis/ for ze silt wite. yf
in pis pig we ben sette/ for wite

we were at you: we before leiden
to you y^e we shuld suffer tri-
bulaciōis/ as it is don: & ze w^e
ten y^e fore y^e poul no legere a
bidige: sente to knowe your
feyr/ lest. p^ractur^r he y^e tēpt^r
tepte you: & your trauel be
maad veyn/ but now whine ty
moche shal come to us fro:
& telle to you your fey & chari-
te: & y^e ze han good mynde of
vs: enen desire to se us. as
we also you y^e fore bryen we be
confortid in you i al our nede
& tribulaciōis: by your fey/ for
now we lyne: if ze stonde in ye
lord/ for what doyng of p^racti-
gis moun we zelde to god for
you: in al ioye. i which we ioye
for you. before oure lord: n^ext
& day more plenteuouly prei-
ge: y^e we se your face: & ful-
le po pigis y^e faylen to your fey
but god hi self & our fadir & ye
lord ihu crist: dresse our wepe to
you: & ye lord multiplye you: &
make your charite to be plen-
teuous of ech to ovr & into alle
mē. as also we in you y^e your
hertis ben confermyd. w^epon
te pleynt in hoolynesse before
god & our fadir: i ye comyng of
our lord ihu crist w^e alle hile.
leynis amē. **¶** **Chap. iiii.**
¶ Forze bryen fro he-
me forwarde we p^rien you:
& b^rlechen i ye lord ihu y^e
as ze han resseynd of us.
how it bihouey you to go & to
plese god: so walke ze y^e ze a
bonide ye more/ for ze w^ete wh^e
comandemētis y^e hane you
to you: by ye lord ihu/ for yis

is ye wille of god. your
hoolynesse. y^e ze absteyne you
fro fornicaciōis/ & ech of you
k^eue welde his vessel: in hoo-
lynelle & hono^r/ not i pallou
of lust: as hepen we y^e knowe
not god: & y^e no mā on go: ney
disseyne his brop in chaffarig
for ye lord is venger of alle y^e
p^rigis: as we before seide to you.
& han witnessid/ for god clepde
not us to vncleuesse: but to
hoolynesse/ y^e fore he y^e disp^ris-
yes p^rigis: disp^ris not mā: but
god y^e also: & his hooly sp^rit
i us. **¶** But of ye charite of ben
y^eheed: we hadde no nede to w^e-
te to you/ ze h^el han let us of god:
y^e ze loue to gidre/ for ze doe pat-
into alle bryen i al macedonie
& bryen we preyen you: y^e ze a
bonide more/ & take kepe: y^e ze
be quyet/ & y^e ze do your nede:
ze worche w^e your hondis: as
we han comandid to you/ & y^e
ze wandre honestly to he pat
ben w^eponteforz: & y^e of no mā-
nes ze desir our y^eg/ for bryen
we wolen not y^e ze vnk^enowe:
of mē y^e d^ren. y^e ze ben not loz-
ful as ope y^e han not hope/ for
if we b^rleuen y^e ihu was deed
& roos azen: so god shal lede
w^e y^e h^el hem y^e ben deede bi ihu
& we seien yis y^eg to you: i ye
word of ye lord/ & we pat lyuen
y^e ben lest in ye comyng of ye lord
shule not come before hem pat
ben deede/ for ye lord hi self shal
come down fro heuene: i ye
comandemēt & in ye vois of
an archangel. & in ye trūpe of
god/ & ye deede mē y^e ben i crist.

shule y^ele men first/ af^rward
we y^e lyuen y^e ben lest: shule
be r^emythid to gidre w^e hem
in clowdis. meetige eit into ye
eyr/ & so eu^emore we shule be
w^e ye lord/ y^e fore he ze toufor-
tid to gidre: i yes wordis. **¶**
¶ We bryen of ty **¶** **¶**
¶ mes & monētis: ze nede
not y^e y^e w^ete to you for
ze s^el w^eten diligently: y^e ye
day of ye lord shal come as a
peef in ye nyzt/ for whāne ye
shule seye pees is & sik^rnel
se: p^rāne sudyn deyr shal come
ou hem as sorve to a wōman
y^e is w^e child: & yei shule not
stape/ but bryen ze ben not i
derknessis: y^e ye ilke day as a
peef caache you/ for alle ze ben
ye lones of lyzt: & lones of day
we be. not of nyzt: ney of derk-
nessis/ y^e fore slepe we not as
ope: but wake we & be we so-
bre for yei pat slepen: slepe
in ye nyzt/ & yei y^e ben d^rukⁿ.
ben d^rukⁿ in ye nyzt/ but we
y^e ben of ye day: ben sobre/ do
yd in ye habynon of fey &
of charite: & in ye helm of ho-
pe of helpe/ for god putide not
us into w^erappe/ but ito ye p^r-
challig of heeche by our lord
ihu crist. y^e was deed for vs/ pat
whē we waken. whē we sle-
pen: we lyue to gidre w^e y^e h^el
for which y^eg confort ze to gi-
dre: & edefie ze ech ovr. as ze
don & bryen we preien you:
y^e ze knowe hem pat trauelē
amog you/ & ben loueyng to
you in ye lord. & techen you: y^e
ze hane hem abundantly i cha-

rite & for ye werk of hem: ha-
ue ze pees w^e y^e & bryen we
preyen you: repreue ze/ & y^e
shule mē. confort ze mē of lytle
herte. resseyne ze syke mē. be
ze pacient to alle mē/ & ze pat
no mā zelde y^euel for y^euel to ovr
mā: but eu^emore sm^eke ze y^e y^e is
good ech to ovr & to alle mē/ en-
more ioye ze: w^epon te c^estlyg
preie ze: in alle y^eg do ze p^ran-
k^eis/ for yis is ye wille of god
in crist ihu. in alle you/ m^ele ze
quench ye sp^rit: nyle ze dis-
pile p^retres/ but preue ze alle
y^eg/ & holde ze pat y^eg y^e is
good: absteyne you fro al y^euel
spice/ & god hi self of pees ma-
ke you hooly bi alle y^eg: pat
your sp^rit be kept hool. & sou-
le & body w^epon te playnt i ye
comyng of oure lord ihu crist/ god
is trewe y^e clepde you: which
also shal do/ bryen: preie ze for
us/ greete ze wel alle bryen
in hooly coll/ y^e comre you bi ye
lord: y^e yis pistle be rad to alle
hooly bryen/ ye g^rte of of our
lord ihu crist: be w^e you amē.
¶ Her endy ye f^rste pistle to
thessaloumēsis: & bigyny ye p^r-
log on ye secūde pistle to thessa-
loumēsis. **¶** **Chap. iiii.**
¶ The possle w^ete ye secū-
de epistle to thessaloumēsis: &
maky knowū to hem of ye las-
te tymes/ & of ye comyng of
ye adūsarie: & of ye prowyn-
don of h^el/ he w^ete yis epist-
le fro athenys: bi titicus ye de-
bene & oneym/ ye acolyt.
¶ Jerom in his prolog on yis
pistle seiy yis. **¶** **¶** **¶**

Dul & siluan & tymothe: to ye church of tessalomyces i god our fadir. & in ye lord ihu crist grace to you & pees of god our fadir. & of ye lord ihu crist. We owen to do pauligis enmoze to god for you byperre: so as it is worpi for our fery on werp: & ye charite of ech of you to ope aboundy so y we silf glori en in you i ye church of god: for your patience & fery. i alle your plectuious & tribulaciouns. Whiche ye susteynen to ye ensauple of ye mist dom of god: y ze be had worpi in ye bigdom of god. for which ze susteyne if nepeles it is mist to fore god. to quyte tribulacioun to hem pat troublen you: & to you y ben troublid: sette wy us i ye the big of ye lord ihu fro heuene wy angelis of his vertu: in ye flauine of fier y thal zyne veniunce to he y knowe not god: & y obeyen not to ye euangehe of our lord ihu crist. Whiche thulde susteyne enlastige peynes: i perulthig fro ye face of ye lord & fro ye glorie of his vertu. Whane he thal come to be glorified in his seitis. & to be maid wondrousful in alle me y byleue den for our witnessig is bileuid on you: in pat day i which pig also we pze pen enmoze for you: y our god make you worpi to his clepig: & fille al ye wal of his goodnesse: & ye werk of fery i uerit y ye name of our lord ihu crist be claresied i you & ze in hi: bi ye gte of our lord

Bhesu crist. & of our cōgre gation into ye same comyg. y ze be not mouyd soone fro you reuatt: ney be afeerd. ney by spirit. ney by word. ney by epistle as sent by us: as if ye day of ye lord be ney: no man dullepne you i our maner: for but dissencion come first. & ye mis of hne be thewid ye fore of pdition: y is aduer sarie & is enhauid ouer al pig y is seid god. or pat is worlthipid so y he sitte in ye temple of god: & thewe hi silf. as if he were god. wher ze holde not. y it whane y was at you: y leude pes pigs to you: & now what wyholdy ze wite: y he be thewid in his tyme for ye pxynte of wickidnesse worchyp now: onely pat he y holdy now. holde til he be don away: & pane ye ille thid ma thal be thewid: who ye lord ihu thal ele wy ye spirit of his mouy. & thal distre wy hz nyp of his comyg: hi whos comyg is bi ye worchig of sathanas. i al vtu & signes. & grete wondrous folle & mal dyllet of wickidnesse: to hem y perulthen for y per resleue den not ye charite of trewe: y per thulde be maid last: & y for god thal sende to he. a wor chig of error: y per bileue to lesyng y alle be demyd: whiche bileuede not to trewe but cōsentide to wickidnesse: but buyen loued of god. We owen

to do pauligis enmoze to god for you. y god chees us ye firste fruntis into heele i halewig of spirit & in fery of trewe: in which also he clepide you by our gospel: into gerig of ye glorie of our lord ihu crist: y for bypen stonde ze & holde ze ye tridicioun y ze han lerid: ey by word. ey by our epistle: & our lord ihu crist hi silf. & god our fadir. which loued us & gaf en lastige confort & good hope & gce: for your hertis & cōterme i al good werk: i word. **E**m. **B**uyen fro hemis for ward pie ze for us: y ye word of god rene & be clarifi ed. As it is anentis you: & y we be deliyed: fro noyous & yuele me for fery is not of alle me: but ye lord is trewe y thal cōterme you: & thal kepe fro yuel: & bypen we triden of you in ye lord. for what en pigs we comande to you hope ze don & thulen do: & ye lord dresse you re hertis i ye charite of god: & in ye patience of crist but buyen we denoucen to you i ye name of our lord ihu crist: y ze wydrabe you fro ech bro pyr y wandry out of ordre: & not after ye techig: y per rel seynede of us for ze silf wite: hois it bihouey to sulke us: for we were not vnpeleble a mog you: ney wyoute our on ne tranel. We eete breed of ony ma but i tranel & werynelle worchide nyzt & day: pat we greuede noon of you not as we hadden not power: but y we

thulden zyne us hif ensauple to you to snue us for also whane we were amog you: we denoucede pis pig to you: y if ony ma wole not worche: ney ete he for we han herd y sūme a mog you gde in reite: & no pig worchen but doe curioully: but we denoucen to he y ben luche me: & blesche in ye lord ihu crist: y per worche wy hilece: & ete her oibne breed. **S**ut nyle ze byperre fayne: wel doynge: pat if ony ma obeyen not to our word by epistle: marke ze hi: & conyue ze not wy hy: y he be thamed: & nyle ze gelle hi as an enemye: but reproue ze hi as a broy: & god hi hif of pees: zyne to you ener lastige pees i al place: ye lord be wy alle you: my salitacioun: by ye hond of poull: which signe i ech epistle: i wyte pus ye gce of our lord ihu crist: be wy alle you. amē. **Y**er endy ye secunde pistle to tessalomyces: & bigyner a plog on ye firste pistle to tymothe. **E**m. **H**enfourmey & techy tymothe of ye ordynance of bisho pis office: & of dekenes office: & eny ch distrypne of hooly church: writige to hi fro macedonie by titicus ye deken. **Y**er i this plog on pis pistle: seip pis. **E**m. **D**ul apostle of crist ihu: bi ye comande met of god our sauy our: & of ihu crist our hope. to tymothe biloued sone in ye fery: gte & mercy & pees. of god ye fadir & of ihu crist our lord: as i preyede yee y y thul

dist diuelli at effect. whane i
wente into macedonie. p' pou
shuldest denouce to su me p'
pei shulde not teche of wylle
nep zyne tent to fablis. & gene
logies p' ben vincer tē. whub
zyuen questionis more pā edi
ficacion of god p' is in pe fery
for pe ende of comādemēt of
charite of clene herte & good
cōscience. & of fery not feryned
fro whiche rygis hi me han er
rid & ben turned ito weyn spe
che & willen to be techeris of
pe lawe. & vnderstonde not
what rygis pei speken. nep
of what rygis pei assermen
& we wten p' pe lawe is good.
if ony mā rise it lawefully &
witynge pis ryg. p' pe lawe is
not lett to a nust mā. but to vn
nust mē & not ligit. to wictid
mē & to syneris. to arfid men
& defoulid. to sleeris of fadir &
sleeris of modir. to mē sleeris
& lechouris. to hem p' doe leache
me wip mē. lesyngmōgeris. &
forlyorne. & if ony opir pūg
is cōtrarie to pe holli teching.
p' is aser pe euāgelie of pe glo
rie of bleid god. which is bita
kū to me i do pākyngis to hym
p' cōfōrtide me in crist ihū ou
re lord. for he geslde me fery
ful & putte me i mymsterie. p'
first was a blafeme & a plu
ere & ful of wrongis but i ha
ue getū pe mercy of god. for
i vnknoyge dide i vnbilene
but pe grace of our lord. on
abouidide wip fery & loue p' is
i crist ihū a trewe word & wozp
al ressepyng for crist ihū cam i

to vis world. to make spēul mē
sarf. of whiche i am pe first
but p'fore i haue getū mercy.
p' crist ihū shulde thewe i me
first. al pacience to pe enfor
myng of be p' shule bileue to hi
into enlascige lys & to pe king
ito worldis of worldis amē
bitake pis comādemēt to pee
pou lone tynothe aser pe p'
fecies p' han be her tofore in
pee. p' pou trauel in hē a gud
trauel. hanngge fery & good cō
sue whiche sū men casten away.
& pūthide aboune pe fery of
whiche is i mene & alsāndre.
whiche i brook to sathanas. p'
pei lerye to not blafeme
Verfore i bileche first
of alle rygis p' biledigis.
preieris at rygis. doynge
of pākyngis be maid for alle
mē for kingis. & alle p' ben
lett in hynesse. p' we leden a
quyer & a pelible lys m al pi
te & charite for pis ryg is go
od & acceptid bi fore god oure
sanyour. p' wole p' alle men
be maid sarf. & p' pei come to
pe knouyng of treupe for o
god & a mediatō is of god & of
mē. amē & crist ihū. p' zat hi salf
relepciō for alle mē whos
witneslig is confermyd in
his tymes. in whiche i am lett
a p'chour & an apostle for i
sepe treupe. & i lyze not. pā
am atechere of hepen me in
fery & in treupe p'fore i wole
p' men prepe m al place. luf
ge xp. clene hondis wipome
wraffe & stryf. also wipmen
i cōuenable abite. wip thame

fastnele & sobrenelle arayinge he
salf. not in wipū heeris epū i
gold. epir peerhs. ep p'eciōul
clōp. but pat p' bicomē wipmē.
biheetige pitee. by good werhs
A wōman lerne in silence wip
al enbiectiōn but i enstire not
awōman to teche. nep to hane
lordshipp on pe hōsebonde. but
to be in silence for adam was
first fourmed. after ward eue
& adam was not dillepued. but
pe wōman was not dillepued i
brectig. of pe lawe but shal be
sauerd bi genaciō of children.
if she diuelli p'fytly in fery &
loue & hoolhnele wip sobrenelle
feryful word. **C. m. i.**
if ony mā desirp abillhop
ryche. he desirp a good
werk p'fore it bihouey a bish
op to be wipoute repret pe ho
sebonde of o wipf. sobre. pridet.
chast. vtiōis. holdige hōspita
lite. a techer. not zōm moche
to wipū. not a lūpē but tēpat.
not ful of chidig. not coueto?
wel rewhige his hōns. & hane
sones liget wip al chastite
for if ony mā kan not goime
his hōns. hōw shal he hane di
ligēce of pe churche of god not
neue cōuertid to pe fery lest
he be born vp into pride. & fal
le into dom of pe denel for it
bihouey hē to hane also good
witneslig. of hem p' ben wipon
te forp. p' he falle not ito repret.
& into pe snar of pe denel **A. xli**
so it bihouey dekenes to be ch
ast. not double tūgid. not zōm
moche to wipū. not lūyngē so
ul wipuyng p' han pe mēte le

of fery in clene cōscience but be
pei p'zend first. & mymstren
so. hanngge no cr yme. also it bi
houey wipmen to be chast. not
barbyrige sobre. feryful in alle
rygis dekenes be hōsebondis of
o wipf. whiche gouerne wel her
sones & her hōules for pei pat
mymstere wel. shule gete a
good degree to be salf. & moche
triste in pe fery p' is in crist ihū
Sone tynothe. i wryte to pee
pes rygis. hopige p' i shal co
me soone to pee but if i tarie.
p' you wite hōw it bihouey pee
to hūe i pe hōus of god p' is pe
churche of hūyge god. a piler
& sadnesse of treupe & opynly
it is a greet sacramēt of pitee
pat pūg p' was thewid i flesch.
it is iustified in spūit. it appe
rde to anigels. it is p'chid
to hepe mē. it is bileued i pe wo
ld. it is takū vp in glorie. **C. m. i.**
bet pe spūit lery openly
pat in pe laste tymes. hi
me shulen departe fro
pe fery zynngē tent to spūiti
of errour. & to techigis of deue
lis. p' speken lesyng & p'pocri
lie. & hane her cōscience corrup
forbedige to be weddid. to abday
ne fro metis whiche god made.
to take wip doynge of pākyng
to feryful mē & hem p' han kno
we pe treupe for ech creatur
of god is good. & no ryg is to
be cast away. which is takū i
doynge of pākyngis for it is ha
lewid bi pe word of god & bi p'ei
er/pou pūttige forp pes ryg
to brypen. shal be a good mym
tre of crist ihū. nozūthid wip wo

dis of fery & of good doctryne. Whi
ch pou hast gete / but eltherwe
ynconuenable fablis & alder Wynn
enes fablis. haue yisult to pi
tee / for bodily exercitaciou. is
pfitable to lytil pig. but pitee
is pfitable to alle pigs. p' hay
a biheeste of lyf & now is & y
is to come. **T**rewe word.
& worpi al accepcon. & in pis
pig we tranelen. & ben cur lid.
for we hopen i hygge god y' is
saupour of alle men. moost of
feryful me / comaude y' pis pig
& teche / no ma dispile y' zongre.
but be pou enlauple of feryful
me i word. i hygge i charite. m
fery i chardite. til y' come take
tent to redige. to exortaciou
& techig. nyle y' luel charge pe
grace which is m per. y' is so
ui to pee bi pferie wip puttig
on of hondis of presthod yente
pon pes pigs. i pefe be pon. pat
pi pfitig be thewid to alle me
take tent to doctryn. be blyp i
he / for pou doyng pes pigs.
thalt make bope y' silt cas. & he
y' heere pee / blame pou not an
eldere man. but bisech as a fad
zonge me as bryen. elde wipm
men. as modis / zonge wipme.
as sitye i al chardite. **C. V.**
Honour pou widowis. y'
ben vzi widowis. but if
ony widowe hay childe
of sones. lerne she first to go
ime hir hous. & quyte to fadr
& modir / for pis pig is accepnd
bifore god. & she y' is a widowe
zily & desolat. hope in god. & be
blyp in bisechigis & preieris
nyzt & day. for she pat is hyng

ge i delices. is deed. & comaude
pou pis pig. y' rei ben wiponte
reprez. for if ony ma hay not
cure of his owne. & moost of
his houshold me. he hay demjed
pe fery. & is worle pa an vnfery
ful ma. & widowe be choli not
lesse pan ferty zeer. y' was wip
of con holebonte. & hay wipnel
lig in good werkis. if she noz
chide childe. if she ressepyede
pore me to herboze. if she hay
wanthi pe feet of loch me. if
she mynystride to me y' suffre
den tribilaciou. if she tolewid
al good werk. but eltherwe pon
zonge widowis. for whane rei
han don leathere. y' wolen be
weddid in ca. haunge dapna
ciou. for rei han mand voyde pe
fiste fery. also rei ydel lerne
to go aboute housis. not conly
ydel but fil of wordis & curion
se. spekege pigs y' bihouey not
pfore. i wole y' zonger. widowis
be weddid. & bryngge fery childe.
& ben hofewynes. to zpye noo
ocasiou to pe adulsare. bi can
se of curfid pig. for now linge
ben turned abat after lathans.
if ony feryful ma hay widowis.
myntre he to he. y' pe churche
be not greuyd. y' it suffice to
hem y' ben verrey widowis. y'
prettis y' ben wel goimouris.
ben per had worpi to double
honour. moost rei y' tranelen
in word & techig. for lpture fery
y' thalt not bridle pe moun of
pe oze vzeuunge. & avert
ma is worpi his hyze. nyle
pou resseyue actung agen a
preest. but vndir trepne.

or yre wipnelis. but repreue
pou me pat synen bifore alle
me. y' also opef haue drete. i pie
bifore god & ihu. & his choli
angels. y' pon kepe pes pigs
wiponte pindice. & do no ping
i bowyng into pe oyr lyde. put
te pou hondis to no ma. neyr
anoon conyue y' wip oye me
wys synes. kepe y' silt chaff
nyle pou zit dzynte watir. but
yle alpyt wipn for y' stomak.
& for ym ofte fallyng. i firmite
es. su mens synes ben oppn
bifore goyng to doom. but of
su men rei come after. & also
goode dedis ben oppn. & po pat
han he in opir maner moun
not be lid. **C. VI.**
Wat en seruauis be m
dr. jok. deme rei her loz
dis worpi al honour. let pe na
me of pe lord & pe doctryn be
blasfemyd. & rei y' han feryful
lordis. dispile hem not for rei
ben bryen. but more lerne
rei. for rei ben feryful & lored.
whiche ben parteneris of be
nefice. teche pou pes yingis.
& mouette pou pes pigs. if ony
ma techy oyr wyle. & accordy
not to pe holli wordis of oure
lord ihu. & to pat techig. y' is
by pitee. he is prond & can no
pig. but langtistlyp aboute
questiouns & stryng of wordis.
of pe whiche ben brynt fery
feryes. stryues. blasfemyes. y'
nele suspiciouns. fityngis of me
y' ben corrupt in soule. & y' be
pnyued fro treupe. y' demen
wipnyng to be pitee. but agreeet
wipnyng is pitee. wip sufficie

ce. for we brynten in no pig ito
pis world. & no doite. y' we moun
not bere aney ony pig. but we
haunge fodye & wip what pigs
we sthulen be hild. be we payed
wip pes pigs. for rei y' wolen
be maid ryche. fallen into tep
taciou. & into snare of pe deuel.
& into manye vnpfitable de liris
& noyons. whiche oxenche men
into deye & perdition. for pe roo
te of alle yuels. is conertile. w
hich su me conertige. erride fro
pe fery. & biletiden he wip many
lozys. but pou ma of god fley
pes pigs. but hilde y' ryzte w
nelle pite fery charite paciete
myldenes. Stryue y' a good stry
of fery caache enlastige lyf. into
which y' art clepid. & hast know
lethid a good knottlethig bifore
many wipnelis. i comaude to
pee bifore god. y' quye ney alle
pigs. & bifore ch. ihu. y' zeldide
anwinessig. vndir pilat of pou
ce. a good confelhou. y' pon ke
pe pe comaudemet wiponte
wem wiponte reprez. into pe
conyng of our lord ihu. & w
pe blethid & aloone myzty king
of kyngis. & lord of lordis. thal
dheise in his tymes. whiche al
oone hay vnderdlynelle. & dyl
lyp in lzt to whiche no ma may
come. w
ho no ma sayz. ney may
se. to w
hogloze & honour. & em
pire be wiponte ende amen.
Comande pou to pe riche me of
pis world. y' rei vndir stonde
not hily. ney y' rei hope in an
crepnte of richellis. but in pe
hygge god. y' zpye to us alle
pigs plenteuouly to vlete do

Wel to be made riche in god
Werkis. lytly to yve. to co
mynge to trelour to hem liff
a good foundement i to tyme
to comynge. pat pei caache
eludayng. lytly. ¶ Timothy
kepe pe reynge butakū to pee.
elche wyng. curtid nonetces
of voices. i oppynous of fall
name of kymng. which lūne
biher tyege. aboute pe few.
felle dou. pe grace of god be
wy pe amen. Here endy pe
firste pistle to tymothe. i bigyn
ney pe plog on pe secūde pistle to

¶ Timothy also. ¶ Timothy
to tymothe of exortacion
to martir dom. i of eueri reu
le of treupe. i what shal co
me in pe laste tymes. i of his
owne pallou. Writte to hi
fro pe citee of rom. ¶ Jerō
his plog on vis pistle. ser vis

¶ Paul apostle. ¶ P
of ihu crist bi pe wil
le of. bi pe biheeste
of luf. ¶ i i crist ihu.
to tymothe his mooste deribor
pe lone. grace mercy i pees. of
god pe fadir. i of ihu crist our lord.
I do palkyng to my god. to who
I serue fro my pgenytouris i
clene collience. ¶ wy poute ceef
lig. I haue mynde of pee i my
preieris nyzt i day. de lryng
to se pee. shanyge mynde of pi
teeris. ¶ I be fillid wy ioye. i
bipenke of y few. ¶ i is in pee not
feyued. which also dwellede first
in ym ante loide. i in y modir
enye. i I am certeyn. ¶ also i
pee. for which cause I monette
pee. ¶ pou reyle azen pe gre of

god. ¶ i is in pee by pe setting on
of myn hondis. for whi god zaf
not to us pe spirit of drede. but
of vti. i of lone. i of sobrenelle.
i fore nyle y shame pe witnes
lig of our lord ihu crist. ney me
his pson. but tranele y to gide
i pe gospel bi pe vti of god. pat
de lrynde us. i de lrynde wy his
hooly clep. not after our. Wer
tis but bi his pynpos. i grace
¶ i is zoun in crist ihu before world
tymes. but now it is opyn bi pe
lryng of our sayour ihu crist.
which distriede deep. i lrynde
lytly i vncorruptioun bi pe gospel.
i which I am sett a prechour. i
apostle. i maistr of hepe men.
for which cause also I suiff pes
pyns. but I am not confoundid
for I woot to who I haue bileued.
i I am certeyn. ¶ he is myzty
to kepe pat is take to my kepig
into pat day. haue you pe four
me of holi wordis. which pou
herdist of me in few. i lone. i crist
ihu. kepe pou pe good takū to
kepig. bi pe hooly gost. ¶ dwel
ly in us. pou wost vis pat alle
pat ben in alie ben turned ankei
fro me. of which is figelus. i er
mogenes. pe lord yue mercy to
pe hous of oneshyous. for ofte he
refreithide me. i shamede not
my chayne. But whane he cam
to rome. he louzte me bi lry. i
fond. pe lord yue to hi to fynde
mercy of god in y day. i hois gre
te pyns he mynstride to me at
effeli. ¶ I knowist beter. ¶ i
fore y my lone be cou
foud in gre. ¶ i is in crist ihu.
And what pyns pou hast

¶ I fore y my lone be cou
foud in gre. ¶ i is in crist ihu.
And what pyns pou hast

herd of me by many witnes. bi
take y pes to fewful me. which
shulen be able also to teche ope
me. tranele pou as a good knygt
of crist ihu. no mā holdyng. knygt
thood to god. Wlappy hy self
wy worldy nedis. ¶ he plese to
hy. to whom he hap premed hy
self. for he pat fiste in a batel.
shal not be crokned. but he fize
te larkfully. it bihouey an erpe
thier to resleyme first of pe fr
mytis. vnder stonde pou what vi
gis. I sepe. for pe lord shal yue
to pee vnder stondig. in alle ym
gis. be pou mynde ful. ¶ pe lord
ihu crist. of pe seed of dany. hap
rile azen fro deep after my gol
pel. in which I tranele til to bo
dis. as wozchige yuele. but pe
word of god is not boūdu. i fore
I suiffre alle pyns for pe chole
ne. ¶ also pei gete pe heolpe. ¶
is i crist ihu. wy heuently glorie. i
trewe word. ¶ i if we ben deed to
gide. we shulen lyue to gide.
¶ i if we suiffren. we shulen regne
to gide. i if we denyen. he shal
denye us. i if we bileue not. he
dwelhy fewful. he may not de
nye hym self. teche pou pes vi
gis. Witneslige bifore god. my
le pou stpye in wordis. for to
no yig it is profitable. but to
pe subuerting. of me pat heere
bilyt kepe to yue y self a pūed
preilable werk mā to god. Wy pou
te shame. rylly tetrynge pe wo
rd of treupe. but elche we y vn
hooly. i veyn lpechis. for why
yo. pfiten moche to vnserpyfulnel
se. i pe word of hem crepyr as
a lankir. of which filete is i

ymeneus. which feldē dou fro
pe treupe. lryng. ¶ pe rlyng
aze is now don. ¶ pei subitide
pe few of lūmen. but pe sad fou
damet of god stondy. hanyge
vis marke. pe lord knowy. whi
che ben hile. i ech mā y namey
pe name of pe lord. departy fro
wickidnesse. but in a greet hous
be not conly. vessels of gold. i of
siluer. but also of tree. i of erpe.
i so sū me ben into honou. i
eūme into dylit. i fore if omy mā
clenhy hi self fro pe se. he shal
be a vessel haleid into honou.
i pfitable to pe lord redy to al good
werk. i fle pou desiris of zoye.
but sue pou rytlynele. few
charite. pees wy he y mlyndly
clepen pe lord of a clene herte. i
elche we pou foltlythe questions
i wy poute kymng. Writte y po
gendren chidigis. but it bihouey
pe seruait of pe lord to chide not.
but to be mylde to alle me. able
to teche. patient. wy tēperan
ce repreyng hem y azenstōde
pe treupe. ¶ i sū tyme god yue
to he forpynig. ¶ pei knowe pe
treupe. i y pei ryle azen fro pe
snaris of pe denel. of who pei
be holdū psoneris at his wille. ¶ i

¶ I write pou vis yig. ¶
in pe laste dayes perelou
se tymes shule neye. i
me shule be lryng. he self. co
uetoule. hz of ber yng. proude.
blasfemeris. not obediēt to fa
dir. i modir. vnkynde. curtid.
wōnte affecion. Wy poute pees.
falle blameris. vncōtynēt. vn
mylde. Wy poute beyngete. ty
tours. onywert. bolli n. prou

ben god: but bi dedis pei deni
en whane pei ben abhominable
in vnbilene ful: & reproua
ble to al good werk. *C. n.*
Bet speke you po pigis.
pat biseimen holci te
chig. v. elde me be soubre.
chast. prudent. hool in fery i lo
ue & patience. also olde wyme
in hooly habite. not stonde
ris. not seruyge moche to w
wel techige. v. pei techie pri
dence. moneste you jonge w
me. v. pei loue here holebondi.
v. pei loue her children. & v. pei
be prudent. chast. soubre. han
ge cure of ye hous. benigne. si
get to her holebondis. v. pe word
of god be not blasfemyd. *C. llo*
moneste you jonge me. v. pei be
soubre in alle pigis. yue pi silf
en sample of good werkis. ite
chig. in hoolnesse. in sadnesse.
an holci. *Word & virepro*
uable. v. he. v. is of ye cont
rie hie be a shamed. hanng
noon yuel pig to seie of you. mo
nefte you seruantis. to be suget
to her lordis in al pigis. plesige
not aenleyge. not defraudige.
but in alle pigis thewige good
fery. v. pei honoure i alle pigis
ye doctryn of god our samour.
for ye grace of god oure sam
our hay apperid to alle me. & cau
te us. v. we forsake wickidnesse
& worldly deliris. lyne soubrly
& mistly & pteuoussly in pis wo
ld. abidige ye blessed hope & ye
comng of ye glorie of ye grete
god. & of oure samour ihu crist.
v. as hi silf for us. to aenbie
us fro al wickidnesse. & make

clene to hi silf a peple accepta
ble & snibere of good werkis.
Speke you pes pigis & mones
te you. & repene you wip al
comandment. no ma dispise v.
moneste he. to *C. m.*
Abe sugetis to pices &
to pokersis. to obeithe
to pat v. is leid. & to be redy to
al good werk. to blasfeme no
ma. to be not ful of chidig. but
teporat thewige al wylness
le to alle men. for we were su
tyme vnblyse. vnbilene. er
rige & lernunge to deliris & to dy
ule lufis. doynge i malice & en
nye worpi to be hatid. hatige
ech ovr. but whane ye benng
nrite & ye manhood of ou. sa
nyour god apperide. not of ther
kis of rixt wille. v. we dide.
but by his mercy he made us
sax. bi waillthig of azen bige
tig & azen nellyng of ye hooly
gost. who he thede into us ple
teuoussly bi ihu crist oure samour.
v. we iustified by his grace. be
eyris bi hope of enelantige. h
a trewe word is. & of pes pigis
i wole v. pou cofere me ope. pat
pei v. bilene to god. be bly to
be aboue ope in gode werkis.
pes pigis ben gode. & pfitable
to men. & eltheve pou foltilke
questions & genealogies & stry
ues. & fytigis of ye laue. for
yo ben vnpofitable & vepn. el
cheve pou amaretyt. after
oon & ye serude correccion. *W*
tise v. he v. is such aman. *ma*
is libitid. & trespassy. & is
dampned bi his owne dom. wha
ne i sende to pee artema. or ti

ticus. hie you to come to me
to nycopolis. for i have spolid.
to dwelle in wynter pere. billy
bifore sende zeuam a wile man
of laue & apollo. v. no pig faile
to hem. pei v. ben of ouris. lerne
to be gouernours in gode wer
kis. to necessare vlis. v. pei be
not wipoute fruyt. alle me pat
ben wip me. greetee pee wel. gr
eete you wel hem. v. loue vs in
fery. ye grace of god be wip you
alle amen. *Here endy pe pil
tle to tite. & bigney pe plog
on ye pistle to filemon.*
Huakry fanphar. or ho
mely letteris to filemon.
for honestus his seruait. *W*
tise to hi fro ye cite of rome
out of prilon bi ye forleid ouer
unus. *Jerom i his*
plog on pis pistle. lery pis. C. p.
Dul ye boundi of crist
ihu. & tymothe brop.
to filemo biloned &
oure helper. & to ap
pia moost der. lither & to archp
our euene knygt. & to ye chr
che v. is in yin hous. grace be
to you & pees of god our fadir.
& of ye lord ihu crist. i do pak
gis to my god eunioze. makige
myde of pee in my preieris. hee
rige pi charite & fery v. pou
hast in ye lord ihu. & to alle hoo
ly me. pat ye comynng of pi
fery be maad oppn. in knothig
of al good pig in crist ihu. & i had
de greet ioye & confort i pi cha
rite. for ye entrails of hooly
me restide by pee broyn. *For*
which pig i hanng moche tr
ust in crist ihu to comande to pee.

pat v. pteyner to ptyt. but i bi
leche moze for charite. *S*
wen you art such as ye elde poult. &
now ye boundi of ihu crist. i bile
che pee for my lone onetyme.
whom i in boondis bigat. wh
ich su tyme was vnpofita
ble to pee. but now pofitable
bope to pee & to me. who i sente
agen to pee. & resseue you hi.
as myne entrails. who i wolde
wipholde wip me. v. he thilde
serue to me for pee in boondis
of ye gospel. But wipoute pi
couceil i wolde not do my pig.
v. pi good thilde not be as of
uede. but wylful. for pauetur.
v. fore he departide fro pee for
a tyme. v. pou thildist ressey
ne hi wipoute ende. *N*
ow not as a seruait. but for a seruait.
a moost dere brop. moost to me
& hoi moche moze to pee. bope
in fleuth & in ye lord. v. fore if v
hast me a felowe. resseue hy
as me. for if he hay ony ping a
noyed pee. ey ouer. arette you
pis pig to me. i poult woot wip
mynd hond. i thal zelde. i seye not
to pee. pat also you ouerist to me
pi silf. So brop. i thal. v. pee i
ye lord. fille you my entrails in
crist. i tristenge of yin obedien
ce. woot to pee. witege v. pou
thalt do. ou pat v. i thal seye.
also make you redy to me an hous
to dwelle yue. for i hope v. bi you
preieris. i thal be zoini to you.
Epafra plover wip me i crist
ihu greety pee wel. and mark.
aristark. demas. lucas. mynd hel
peris. ye grace. of our lord
ihu crist. be wip you. re spurt.

Thine Here endy pe pistle to
flemo: & bigynne pe plog on
pe pistle to Brevis

Ist it is to seye. Whi poul
apostle i pis epistle. in wrighte
kepyn not his visage. distring
ge his name or ye digrite of his
ordre. pis is pe cause p he wri
toge to hem p were of circun
sion. bileded. wroot as pe apost
le of hevene me & not of ieris
and he knowe her prude. & the
wige her owne humehesse. nol
de not putte bifoze pe distert of
his office. & in lyk man also John
pe apostle for humehesse in his
epistal. for pe same skile sette
not his name to foze. Als it seid
pe apostle sente pis epistle to
pe brevis wriit in Brevis ti
ge. & after pe deop of poul pe a
postle. huf pe enangeliste made
it in greek speche. holdyng pe
vnderstanding. & pe ordre of it.

Let o this plog o pis pistle seip pis

God pat spak. C. p.
on tyme by pferis. i
many manes to om
faders. at pe laste in
pes dayes he hay spoke to us bi
pe sone. Whom he hay ordeyned
er of alle pigis. & by whom he
made pe worldis. which whie
also he is pe bytneisse of gloze.
& figme of his substance. & herp
alle pigis bi word of his vertu.
he makyn purgacion of synes
& entrip on pe rythale of pe ma
gette in hevenes. & so moche is
madd bete pan angelis. bi hons
moche he hay en eritid amoz dy
uers na. me bifoze he for
to. which of pe angels

seide god on tyme. p art my sone.
I haue gendrid pee to day. & eft
soone. I shal be to hy into a fader.
& he shal be to me into a sone. &
whie eftsoone he byngyn yn pe
fufte bigetun sone. into pe world.
he seip. & alle pe angels of god wro
thipe hy. but he seip to angelis.
he p makyn his angels spiritis.
& gile mynistris flauine of fier.
But to pe sone he seip. god yn tro
ne is into pe world of world. agend
of epyrte is pe zerd of yn reys
me. youn hast loued ryttynges
se. & hardest wickidnesse. pfor
pe god yn god. anoyntide pee
wry oyle of ioye. moze pa pise
lowis. & youn lord i pe bigynnyng
foundedit. pe erpe. & heuenes
begyn. & his of pyn honours. pan
thulens. peritthe. but p sh
alt par spytly diuulle. & alle sh
len were elde as a clop. & p sh
it change hem as a clop. & p sh
len be chaignd. but you art pe
same p silt. & p zeeris thulen
not faple. but to which of pe an
gels seide god at ony tyme. sitte
on my rythale. til i putte yn
enemys astool of yn feet. & the
p yei alle be not seruyge spri
tis. sent to seruen. for he pat
taken pe eritage of heeche.

Ier fore moze. C. 7.
plenituously it bihouer
us to kepe pe pigis p we
han herd. lest panetun. & we
fleten ankep. for if pe ilke
word p was seid bi angelis. & so
madd sad. & ech brekyng of pe
lawe. & violence took inst re
tribucion of meede. how shu
len we asape. if we dispisen

so greet an heeche. which whane
it hadde takn bigynnyng to be teld
out bi pe lord. of hem p herde. is
cofermyd into us. for god wriuel
sile to gidre by myracles. & won
dres. & greete mynistris. & dynerse
tues. & departigis of pe hooly go
ost bi his wille. but not to angelis.
god fingeride pe world. p is to co
myge. of which we speke. but
su ma wriuelide in a place. & sei
de. What pigis is man. p art my
deful of hi. or mams sone. for you
vilitat hi. youn hast madd hi a lital
lesse you angelis. p hast crowned
hi wry gloze & honour. & p hast or
deyned hy on pe werkis of pyn hou
dis. youn hast madd alle pigis suget
vndir his feet. & in pat. p he suge
nde alle pigis to hi. he leste no pig
vnsuget to hi. but now we seen
not it alle pigis suget to hym.
but we seen hi. p was madd altil
lesse pan angelis. shu for pe pass
on of deop. crowned wry gloze &
honour. p he pynz grace of god
shulte tande deop for alle me. for it
biledede hi for who alle pigis. & by
whom alle pigis were madd. which
hadde brougt many sones into glo
ze. & was autour of pe heeche of
hem. p he hadde an ende by passon.
for he pat halewyp. & yei p ben hale
wid. ben alle of oon. for which cau
se he is not shamed to clepe hem
byperen sepyge. I shal telle yn na
me to my byperen. in pe mydel of
pe churche. I shal herie pee. & eft
soone. I shal be trustyge into hi.
& eftsoone. lo. I & my childe. & wh
iche god zaf to me. pfore for chl
dren comynede to flesch & blood.
& he also took part of pe same

p by deop he shulde destrye hym
p hadde lordship of deop. p is to
sepe pe deuel. & p he shulde dehy
ner he. p bi drede of deop bi al luf.
weren bound to seruage. & he
took nese angelis. but he took
pe seed of abrahm. wherfore he
ougte to be hlymed to byperen by
alle pigis. p he shulde be madd
merciful. & fepful bihop to god.
p he shulde be merciful to pe
trespassis of pe peple. for i pat
pig in which he sustynde. & was
temptid. he is myrty to helpe al
lo he pat ben teptid. C. 111.

Ier fore hooly byperen. &
peneris of heeche cle
pyng. biholde ze pe apos
tle & pe bihop of our cofel
sion shu. which is trewe to hi
pat madd hi. as also moyses in
al pe hons of hi. but pis bihop
is had wrypi of moze gloze pan
moyses. by as moche as he hay
more honour of pe hons p madd
pe hons. for ech hons is madd of
su ma. he p madd alle pigis of
noyrt. is god. & moyses was tre
we in alle his hons. as a seruant
into wriueling of po pigis pat
were to be seid. but eft as a sone
in his hons. which hons we be.
if we holden sad trist & gloze
of hope into pe ende. wherfore
as pe hooly goost seip. to day if
ze hau herd his vois. nyle ze hard
ne zome hertis. as in wryppis.
lyk pe day of teptacion i desert.
wher zour faders teptiden me.
& peneide & eyzen my werkis
fourtyzeeris. wherfore I was
wryp to pis genacion. & I seide
enmore pei erren i herte. for

pei knebe not my wepes. to whiche I swooz in my wrape. pei shulen not entre into my reste. brypen se ze. lest panetur i om of zoi be an yuel herte of vnbileue. to departe fro pe lymyng god. but moneste zoi galk bi all dayes. pe while to day is named. p noon of zoi be hardned bi falla ce of syne. for we ben maid par ceneris of est. if nepeles we hol den pe bigynnyng of his substa nce sad into pe ende. while it is leid. to day. if ze han herd pe vois of hi. nyle ze hardne zour hertis. as in p wrape. for su me hee rige wrapeiden. but not alle pei pat wenten out of egypt by moyses. but to whiche was he wrapeid fourt yzeris. wether not to he p synede. whos careyns were cast down i desert. i to whiche swooz he. p pei shulde not entre into pe reste of hy. no but to hem p were vnbileueful. i we seen p pei myzte not entre into pe res te of hi for vnbileue. **C. m.**

Therfore drede we lest p anetur. while pe biheer te of entryng into his reste is left. p om of us be get lid to be a wepe. for it is teeld al so to us. as to hem. i pe word p was herd p fide not to he. not meynd to fery. of po p hys pat pei herden. for we p han bileud. shule entre into reste. as he seide. as I swooz in my wrape. pei shule not entre into my res te. i whine pe werkis weren maid p fyt at pe ordynaice of pe world. he seide yus i a place of pe senenpe day. i god reste

in pe senenpe day. fro alle his wer kis. i in his place estloone. pei shulen not entre into my reste. p fore for it luyser. p su men shule entre into it. i pei to whiche it was teeld to bfore entlen not for her vnbileue. estloone he termynep su day i fery. i da my to day after so moche tyme of tyme. as it is bfore seid. to day if ze han herd his vois. nyle ze hard ne zoure hertis. for if he hadde zour reste to hem. he shulde neie speke of opere after his day. p fore pe la bot is left to pe peple of god. for he pat is entrid into his rest. restide of his werkis. as also god of hile. p fore hadde we to entre into pat reste. p no ma falle into pe same ensauple of vnbileue. for pe word of god is quyk i speid in woorthig. i moze able to perle pan any tweyne eggid swerd. i fter chyp forp to pe departyng of pe soule i of spyt. i of pe wyntu ris i merewis i demer of poyn tis i of ententis i hertis. and no creatur is vnbile in pe sxt of god. for alle pigis ben nakid. i o pyn to his pzen. to who alward to us. p fore we p han a greet bish op p p fide heuenes i hi pe sone of god. holde we pe knowlece of our hope. for we han not a bi shop p may not hane apallhoi on oure i firmytees. but was teptid bi alle pigis. bi hknelle wir onte syne. p fore go we out to pe trone of his grace. p we gete myc. i fynde gte i conena

Able help. **C. m.** **O** est bishop takn of me. is ordeyned for me.

in pes pigis p be to god. p he of fre zifris i sacrificis for syne. which may to gidre sonwe wir he pat bey vnbilmyge i erren. for al so he is enyrouned i infirmyte. i p fore he owir. as for pe peple. so also for hi self to offre for syne. ney om ma takn to hi honon. but he p is depid of god as aaron was. so est clarified not hi self. p he wer bishop. but he pat spak to hi. ponart my lone. to day i gen dide pee. as in anoy place he seip. p art a preeft wir onte ende af tr pe ordze of melchisedech. whi ch in pe dayes of his fleish offri de wir greet cry i teeris. pzeie ris i bilechigis to hy p myzte ma ke hym saf fro deap. i was herd for his reuence. and whine he was goddis sone. he lerynte obedien ce of pes pigis p he suffride. i he brynt to pe ende. is maid can le of eulastig heelp to alle pat oberthen to hi. i is depid of god a bishop. by pe ordze of melchisedech. of who per is to us a greet word. for to sepe. for ze ben maid feeble to heere. for whine ze onte to be mantris for tyme. estloo ne ze neder p ze be tanyt. whiche ben pe letris of pe bigynnyng of goddis wordis. and ze be maid pilke whiche is nede of mylk. i not sad mete. for ech p is par cener of mylk. is wyoute part of pe word of ryzlyshelle. for he is a lytil chld. but of parfyt me is sad mete. of he p for custd han wittis extid. to discrecion

Wherfore we bryngunge in a word of pe bigynnyng

of est. be we born to pe pfecti on of hi. not estloone leggyn ge pe foundamet of penance fo deede werkis i of pe fery to god. i of techig. of baptyms. i of leyngis on of hondis i of rlysh men of deede me. i of pe eulasti ge don. i ris pig we shule do. if god shal suffre. but it is ym possible p pei p ben ompe lymed. i han tanyd also an heuenly zite. i ben maid parceris of pe hoody goost. i nepeles han tanyd pe good word of god. i pe etnes of pe world to conyge. i ben shidun fer asey. p pei ben reuend est loone to penance. whiche estloo nes crucien to he self pe sone of god. i han to storn. for pe erpe p dzyntir reyn ofte conyge on it i bryngir forp conenabie erbe to he of whiche it is tild. takn blellig of god. but pat p is bry gunge forp poines i breeris. is reprenable. i next to cur. whos endig shal be into brynging. but ze moost derer woze. we tristen of zoi bettr pigis. i neer to heel pe. pouz we speken so. for god is not vnt. p he forzete zour werk i lone which ze han shewid in his name. for ze han mymst trid to leyntis. i mymstre. and we conente p ech of zoi shewe pe same bishpelle to pe filling of hope. into pe ende. p ze be not maid slowe. but also shawe ris of he whiche bi fery i paci ence shulen enherre pe biheer tis. for god by heestas. for god biheetunge to abrahm. for he hadde noon greet by who he sh ulde swer. swooz by hi self i

leide / I blisse thal blisse pee: & / I multiplunge thal multiplie
pee: & so he longe abidige: had
de pe biheeste / for me siwere bi
a gretter pan hem self: & pe
ende of al her pleis an ooy to co
firmacion / I which pig god wil
lige to thewe plenteuously
to pe eyris of his biheeste. pe
sadnesse of his conent: putte
bit wyre an ooy / by ribey pig
by which it is impossible god
lye: we haue strengthe solace
pat fleu to godre: to holde pe hope
p is put for to us / which hope
as an ankir we han siker to pe
soule & sad & goynge yn to pe
ynel pigis of hydig: wher pe
bifore goere ihu: & is maad bil
shop wyrount ende: by pe ordre
of melchisedech: entide for us //

Ad pis melchise // C. vii. //
dech big of salem: & preest
of pe hyeste god: which met
te wy abrahim: as he turnede a
zen fro pesleyng of figis: & blis
side hi to whom: also abrahim
departide tyris of alle pigis: for
he is leid big of ryt wysnesse: &
afterward big of salem p is to
sepe big of pees wyrount fadir
wyrount modir: woute genealogie:
nep hanysse bigynnyng of dayes
nep ende of lyf: & he is likned to
pe gone of god: & dwellyng preest
woute ende: but biholder ze hou
greet: is pis: to whom abrahim
pe patriarch: zat tyris of pe beste
pigis: pigis: for me of pe sones
of leeny takige presthod: han man
demet to take tyris of pe peple
bi pe laue: p is to sepe of her by
verre: youz also pei wente out

of pe leendis of abrahim: But
he whos genacion is not noubrd
in hem: took tyris of abrahim: &
he blisse pis abrahim: which
hadde repmyssionis wyrount
any azenleyng: pat p is lesse: is
blessid of pe bettre: & here dech
me take tyris: but pei he be
rry witneslig p he lyney: & pat
it be leid so: bi abrahim: also le
ny pat took tyris was tyrid:
& zit he was in his fadris leendis:
whie melchisedech mette wy hy
pfore if perfecion was bi pe prest
hod of leny: for vnder hi pe pe
ple took pe laue: what zit was
it nedeful: anoy preest to ryse bi
pe ordre of melchisedech: & not to
be leid bi pe ordre of Aaron: for wh
whie pe presthod is tullatid: it is
nede: & also tullacou of laue be
maad: but he in whom pes pigis
ben leid: is of anoyr lynage: of
which no ma was preest to pe
auter: for it is opyn: Four lord
is born of juda: in which lyna
ge moyses spak no pig of preest:
& more: it is knowen: if bi pe or
dre of melchisedech: an oy preest
is rlyt up: which is not maad bi pe
laue of fleschly manidemet: but
but by vertu of lyf p may not
be vndon: for he witneslig p you
art a preest wyrount ende: bi pe
ordre of melchisedech p repreyng
of pe manidemet bifore goynge
is maad: for pe vnsadnesse from
pfit of it: for whi pe laue brow
te no pig to pfecton: but p is a
bringyng yn of a bettr hope: by
which we nere to god: and how
greet it is: not wyrount siwere:
but pe ope ben maad prestis wy

outen an ooy: but pis preest wy
an ooch by hi p seide to hi: pe lord
siboor: & it thal not rewe hi: p
art a pest wyrount ende: bi pe or
dre of melchisedech: i so moche
ihc is maad biheester of pe bet
tre testamet: & pe ope were ma
ad manysse pdis pfore for pei we
re forbeden bi deey to diuella stille
but pis: for he dwellyng wyrount
ende: har an euilantige presthod
wherfore also he may sane wy
rount ende: coumge nys: by hy
self to god: & enmore lym to pie
for us: for it blesmyt p such a
ma were a bishop to us: hooky
inocent: vnde foulid: clene depar
tid fro syful me: & maad lyzer
pan heuenes: which har not nede
ech day as preestis: for his owne
gyltis to offre sacrificies: & after
ward for pe peple: for he dide
pis pig: i offrige hi self oomys:
& re laue ordeynede me preestis:
hanysse spknesse: but pe word of
swerig: which is after pe laue:
ordeynede pe lone pfit wyrount
ende // C. vii. //

But a capite on po pigis
p ben leid we han ench
abilshop: p sac in pe ryt hall of
pe seete: of greetnesse i heuenes:
pe mynstre of leyntis: & of pe
very tabernacle pat god made
& not ma: for ech bilshop is ordey
ned to offre zltis & sacrificis: wh
fore it is nede: & also pis bilshop
hane su pig: p he thal offre p
for if he were on erpe: he wer
no preest: whie per were pat
thulden offre zltis bi pe laue:
whiche serue to pe sampler: &
thadonbe of heuenly pigis: as

it was anshered to moyses:
whie he thulde ende pe taber
nacle: se he seide: make p alle
pigis: bi pe sampler: p is the
wid to pee i pe moyn: but not
he har getti a bettr mynstre:
bi so moche as he is a mediatour
of a bettre testamet: wyrount
biheestis: for if pe ilke fiste had
de lackid blame: pe place of pe
secide thulde not hane be soust:
for he repreyng hem: serp lo
dayes comen serp pe lord: & /
thal make parfyt a newe tes
tamet on pe hous of isrl: & on
pe hous of juda: not lyk pe testa
met p: made to her fadris i pe
day i which / caute her hond: p
thulde lede hem out of pe lond
of egypt: for pei dwellyng not par
fyt i my testamet: & / hane di
plid he serp pe lord: but pis is pe
testamet: which / thal dispoie
to pe hous of wael: after po dayes
serp pe lord: in zynge my laue
into pe souls of hem: & into pe
hertis of he: / thal aboue write
hem: & / thal be to he into a god:
& pei thulen be to me ito a peple:
& ech ma thal not teche his nez
ehore: & ech ma his brop: serynge
knowe me: fro pe lesse to pe mo
re of he: for / thal be merciful
to pe wickednesse of he: & not
/ thal not bypenke on pe synes
of he: but in sepyge a newe: pe
former werid eeld: & pat p is
of many dayes & werid eeld: is
myz pe deyr // C. vii. //

Ad pe former testamet
hadde nullifigis of wez
thip & hooky pig: dirige for a ty
me: for pe tabernacle was maad

Whiche is a figure

Quoniam pui po lord
for alla mra sigla

first. in which were candelsticks.
 & boord & setting: for of loones
 which is seid hooly: & pe veil: pe
 secunde tabernacle. y is seid sanc
 ta lloz: y is hooly of hooly pigis
 hantge a goldii censer: & pe arke
 of pe testamēt. kenerid aboute
 on ech syde wip gold in which
 was apott of gold. hantge mā
 na: & pe zerd of aron y flozultu
 de: & pe tablis of pe testamēt on
 which pigis were cherubyns
 of glorie ouer shadenyge pe ppi
 ciatorie: of which pigis it is not
 now to sepe by alle: but whāne
 pes were maid yus to gidre: ppe
 this entride enemore i pe former
 tabernacle. doynge pe offices of
 sacrifices: but i pe secunde tabe
 rnade pe bishop entride oomys
 in pe zeer not wip oute blood:
 which he offride for his ignorā
 ce & pe pephe for pe hooly gost
 signyfyede pis pig y not 3it pe
 wepe of seyntis was openyd. whi
 le pe former tabernacle hadde
 stat which parable is of pis p
 sent tyme: bi which also 3it is
 & sacrifices ben offrid: which
 moou not make a man seruyge
 parfyt by conscience: conly i me
 tis & drynkis & drynkis waulthigis.
 & 3it wylfulness of fleish. y were
 oet to pe tyme of correccion. ||
 But cēt beynge a bishop of goo
 dis to conynge: entride bi alarge
 & pfitere tabernacle not maid
 by hond. y is to sepe not of pis ma
 fig: ney bi blood of goot buckis
 oz of calues: but by his owne blo
 od entride oomys into hooly pigis
 y were fouden bi an euilastige re
 deccion: for if pe blood of goot bu

ckis & of bohs. & pe authe of a con
 calf spreynd. hale wip vndene
 me to pe denlig of fleish: hōb
 moche moze pe blood of cēt. whi
 bi pe hooly goot offride hi self on
 we myd to god. thal denle oure
 conscience fro deede werkis to ser
 ne god y linyep: and y fore he is
 a mediator of pe neuwe testamēt.
 y bi depe fallige bitywe into re
 deccion of po trespassingis y were
 vndir pe former testamēt. pei
 pat ben clepid: take pe biheede
 of euilastig eritage: for wher
 a testamēt is: it is nece y re depe
 of pe testamēt maker come by
 titywe: for a testamēt is confer
 med in deede me: ellis it is not
 wozy. while he linyep. y made
 pe testamēt: wherfore ney pe
 furte testamēt was halewid
 oute blood for whie ech maide
 met of pe lawe was rad of mo
 ples to al pe peple: he took pe blo
 od of calues: & of buckis of geet.
 wip watir & reed wolke & slape
 & bitywe bove yllke bock & al
 pe peple & seide: pis is pe blood of
 pe testamēt: y god commande
 to 3ou: also he spreynde wip blood
 pe tabernacle & alle pe vessels of
 pe seruyce in lyk man: & al mest
 alle pigis ben denlid in blood bi
 pe lawe: & wipoute shedig of
 blood. remission of synes is not
 maid y fore it is nece pat pe lau
 ples of heuely pigis wip ber
 tre sacrifices ran yele: for whi
 entride not into hooly pigis ma
 ad bi hondis. y ben sampleris
 of verrp pigis: but into he
 uene it self y he appere now
 to pe cheer of god for us: ney

be denlid wip pes pigis: but yd
 be heuely pigis.

y he offre hi self ofte: as pe bish
 op entride into hooly pigis. bi
 alle zeeris maken blood: ellis
 it bihofe hym to suffer ofte: fro
 pe bigynnyng of pe world: but
 now oomys. in pe endyng of
 worldis. to destruction of sy
 ne. bi his sacrifice he apperide
 & as it is ordeyned to men oomys
 to dye: but aftir pis is pe dom:
 so cēt was offrid oomys. to anoi
 de pe synes of many me: pe lecti
 de tyme he thal apper wipoute
 syne: to me y abiden hi to heche.
 ||
 D: pe lawe hantge. ||
 a shadowe of good pigis y be to
 come: not pe ilke ymage of pigis.
 may neu make me neyge pfit: bi yllke
 same sacrifices. whiche pei offre
 wipoute ceellis by alle zeeris: el
 lis pei thulde hane ceellid to be
 offrid: for as moche as pe wor
 ldyeris denlid oomys. hadde not
 ferpermore conscience of syne:
 but in hem mynde of synes is
 maid by alle zeeris for it is ym
 possible: y synes be don alwey
 by blood of bohs & of buckis of ge
 et: y fore he entrige into pe world:
 seip: pou woldst not sacrifice &
 offryng: but pou hast thapna
 body to me: brent sacrifices also
 for syne: pleide uot to pee: pane
 I seide: lo: come in pe bigynnyng
 of pe bock: it is wraut of me: y
 I do pi wille god: he seiyge bfore
 y pou woldst not sacrifices &
 offryngis & brent sacrifices for sy
 ne. ne pe pigis ben pleisat to pee
 whiche ben offrid bi pe lawe: pa
 ne: I seide: lo: come: y I do pi
 wille god: he doy alwey pe furte.
 y he make shedefast: pe secunde

in which wille we ben halewid.
 bi pe offryng of pe body of cēt thi
 oomys: & ech pzeet is redy. myms
 frynge ech day: & ofte tymes of
 frynge pe same sacrifices: whi
 che moou neuwe do mey synes
 but pis mā offryge o sacrifice
 for synes: for enmore: sittip in
 pe ryzthalf of god pe fadir: fro
 penys for abidng: til his ene
 myes be putt a stool of his feet:
 for by oon offryng he made parfyt
 for ene halewid me: & pe hooly
 gost witnessip to us for aftir y
 he seide: pis is pe testamēt. whi
 ch y anesse thal to hem aftir
 po dayes. pe lord seip: i 3ynge
 my lawis in pe hertis of hem: &
 in pe sonlis of hem: thal no mo
 ze penke on pe synes & wickid
 nessis of hem: & wher remys
 sion of pes is: now is y noon
 offryng for syne: y fore bypen
 hantge trist into pe entrig of
 hooly pigis in pe blood of crist.
 which halewid to us a neuwe
 wepe & linyge bi pe hlygh pat
 is to sepe his fleish: & we hant
 ge pe greet pzeet on pe hous
 of god: neyge we wip verrp her
 te in pe plente of fery: and be
 oin: hertis spreynd fro an ynel
 conscience. & our bodies waulthi
 wip clene watir: & holde we pe
 cofusion of our hope bouyge to
 no hyde: for he is trewe: y hap ma
 ad pe biheest & biholde we to gi
 dre in pe fryng of charite & of
 goode werkis: not for labyngge
 our gaderig to gidre: as it is of
 custom to eu me: But conforti
 ge: & bi so moche pe moze: bi hōb
 moche 3e seen pe day neyngge

for whi now a sacrifice for synes
is not left to us p synen wil
fuly: after pat we han take pe
knowyng of trewe for whi an
abpdyng of dom is dredeful. &
pe synyng of fier: which shal
waste aduylariness: who p bre
kyn moyses sake: drey wipou
ten ony mercy by tyme or pre
witness: hou moche gessenze
pat he dyllyner worse tynne
tis: which defouley pe sone of
god: & holdyng pe blood of pe tes
tament polut: in which he is ha
lewid: & dey dyspat to pe spyt
of grace: for we knowen hym
p seide: to me weraunce: & shal
zelde: & est: for pe lord shal deme
his peple: it is ferdful to falle in
to pe hondis of god hyngge: & haue
ze mynde on pe formere dayes: i
which ze weren lizned: & outryde
greet stryft of passions: & in pe
toz ze were maid a spectacle bi the
lithyns & tribulacions: in anoyr
ze weren maid felows of we hy
ngge so: for also to boundu me ze
hadden compassioun: & ze resseyne
den wip ioye: pe robbynge of zour
goodis: knowyng p ze han a bettr
adibellig substance: yfoze nyle
ze leese zour trust: which hay gre
et rewardyng: for patience is ne
cessary to zour: p ze doen pe wille of
god: & byngen azen pe biheest
for zit alytel & he p is to compe
shal come: & he shal not tarie:
for my nylt ma lynes of fery: p
if he wipdrayn hy dylt: he shal
not plese to my soule: but we
ben not pe sones of wipdraynig
akey into perdition: but of fery
into getyng of soule. **Hebrens**

But fery is pe substance of
pigns pat ben to be hopid:
an argumet of pigns not
apperige: and in pis fery: elde me
han getu wittness: bi fery we
vndirstoden p pe wordis were ma
ad bi godis word: p vnsible pigns
were maid of vnsible pigns: bi
fery: abel offryde a moche more sa
crifice pan caym to god: bi which
he gat wittness: to be nylt: for
god bar wittness: to hyle zittis:
& by pat fery: he deed spekyng zit:
bi fery enok was tustland: p he
shulde not se dey: & he was not
foundu: for pe lord tustland hi: for
bifore tustland: he hadde wittnes
fig: p he pleide god: & it is ym
possible: to plese god wipoute fery:
for it bihouey p amia compe to
god bileue: p he is: & p he is rewar
der to me pat seken hi: By fery
moze drede ymz anlyer taku: of
pes pigns p zit were not seyn: &
shapide althyn: into pe heele of
his hors: bi which he depened pe
world: & is ordeyned ew of ryzibil
nelle which is bi fery: bi fery he
pat is clepid abrahym: oberde to
go out into a place: which he shul
de take into eritage: & he were
out: not wittige wylidur he shul
de go: bi fery he dwelte in pe lond
of biheest as man alien lond: dwel
lige in lytel housis wip fery: &
jacob enene cyris of pe same bi
heeste: for he abood a citee hany
ge foundemntis: whos crafty man
& maker is god: bi fery also pe ilke
sara bareyn: took verty i cōsē
nyng of leed: she azen of pe tyme
of age: for she bileuede in trewe
p hadde blyst: for which pig of

con & zit ny: deed p ben born as ster
ris of heuene in multitude: & as
grauel p is at pe see hde out of
mouthe: bi fery alle pely ben deed:
whi pe biheestis were not ta
ku: but pei biheeste hem afer: &
greetyng he wel: & knowlechte
pat pei were pilgris & herbord
me on pe erpe: & pei p synen pes
pigns: hignificu p pei sechen a cū
tree: if pei hadden had mynde of
pe ilke of which pei wente out: pei
hadden tyme of tynnyng azen: but
now pei dehyen a bettr: p is to
seye heuene: p for god is not con
foundu: to be clepid pe god of he
for he made redy to he a citee: bi
fery abrahym offryde fery: whi
he was teptid: & he offryde pe con
bigeu: which hadde take pe bi
heestis: go who it was seid: for
in fery pe seid shal be clepid to
pe: for he dempte p god is myz
ty to reyle hy: zhe fro dey: wher
fore he took hy also into a para
ble: By fery also of pigns to co
myge: fery bleide: jacob dyng
bleide alle pe sones of joseph:
& onouere pe hynelle of his zerd:
bi fery joseph dyng: hadde my
de of pe pallig: for of pe childe
of uael & comauide of his bo
nes: bi fery moyses born was hyd
pe moneys of his fadyr: & mo
dir: for p pei synen pe zong childe
fayr: & pei drede not pe maude
met of pe kig: bi fery: moyses
was maid greet: & dempte p
he was pe sone of faraos donz
ty: and chees moze to be tur
metid wip pe peple of god: p
to haue myzpe of tēporal hyne:
dempte pe reproe of cū: moze

richellis: pan pe tresouris of
egyptians: for he biheeld into
pe rewardyng: bi fery he forsook
egypt: & drede not pe hardnes
se of pe kig: for he abood al see
yng: bi pat was vnsible: bi fery
he halewde pat & pe shedyng out
of blood: p he p dylt pe fery
te pigns of egyptians: shulde not
touche he: bi fery pei passide pe
reed see as bi dype lond: which
pign egyptians alayngge weren
denouid: bi fery: pe walls of je
rico feldu don: bi cūpallise of seu
ne dayes: bi fery: rath hoore ressey
uede pe alpyeris wip pees: & pe
rythide not wip vnsiblestul me:
& what zit shal i seie: for tyme
shal faple to me tellige of jede
on: barab: saplon: jecte: dany
el: samuel & of ope profetis: whi
che bifery oncame reynmes wryng
ten ryz wip helle gaten repro
millions: pei stappide pe monyis
of hōus: pei quenched pe fery
nelle of fier: pei dymede a wey
pe egge of siverd: pei koneride
of siknelle pei were maid strong
in batel: pei turnede pe oostis
of aliens: wip men resseyuede
her dede children fro dey to lyf:
but ope were holdu forz not ta
kige redēcioun: p pei shulden
fynde a bettre azen: p ope
alayete stonyngis & bettyngis: mo
re on & bondis & plous: pei were
stonyd: pei were sauid: pei we
re teptid: pei were deed i slepyng
of siverd: pei wente aboute in
broc skynis: & i skynis of geet: ne
dy: anguylid: tynmetid: to whi
che pe world was not wryng: pei
erride in wildirnesses: i mountis

Jacob &
elam: bi
fery

And thus I canes of pe erpe: & alle
pele pteyng by wimessig of fery:
token not repproffion for god
purueyede gu better pig for us:
y pei shulde not be maad par
fyt wyoute us. // C. xij. //

Verfore we pat han so
greet a clowde of wimess
his pmt to: do we alweil al
charge & syne stondege a
boute us: & by patience reue
we to pe baten pposid to us: bi
holdige into pe make of fery
& pe parfyt ender ihu: which
whane iope was pposid to hi
he suffride pe croll: & dispensed
confusio: And litty on pe ryg
hale of pe sete of god: and bi
penke ze on hi p suffride such
agen leyng of synful me agen
hy silf: y ze be not maad wery.
faylige in zour sonis: for ze aze
stoden not zt til to blood: fytige
agen syne: & ze han forzete pe
confort p spekyp to zoi as to so
nes & lery: my soue nyle pou dispise
pe techys of pe lord: ney be y maad
wery: pe while pou art chastid
of hi: for pe lord chastity hi pat
he loney: he bety euy sone: pat
he resleyney: abide ze stille in ch
astilg: god proferp hi to zoi
al to sones: for what sone is it:
whom pe fadir chastity not: y
if ze ben out of chastilg: whos
parteneris be ze alle maad: yane
ze ben auowtrerys & not sones
& asturward. we hadde fadyus of
our fleulth tetherys: & we wy re
uerce dzedd hem: wher not moche
more we shulen obeidhe to pe fa
drys of spyritys: & we shulen lyue
& pei in tyme of felle dages: tang

ten vs bi her wille: but vis fadir
techy to pat pig: pat is pfitable:
i resleyng pe halewys of hym:
& ch chastilg in present tyme: se
mey to be not of iope but of ho
we: but asturward it shal zelle
fryt of rytebyfuelle moost pee
hble: to me exersid bi it: for wh
ich pig reile ze stowe hondis: &
knees vnbound: & make ze ryg
ful steppis to zour feet: y no ma
hastige erre: but moze be heeld
swe ze pees wy alle me & ho
lynele: wyoute which no ma
shal se god: biholde ze y no man
fayle to pe grace of god: y no ro
te of bitternele: but iowlyng
expwand lette: & manye be foun
d bi hit: y no ma be lechd epyr
vnhoosy as elam: which for mte
selle his firtte pigis: for wite ze
pat asturward. he couerige: to en
erte blellig: was reprenyd: for
he foud not place of penance: yoz
he souzte it wy teeris: but ze han
not come to: & to pe wshewyng
& myt & tempest & loun of tru
pe: & vois of wordis: which pei
y herde exculde hem: y pe word
shulde not be maad to he: for pei
bare not: y pat was leid: & it
a beest touchde pe hyl: it was flo
ned: & so dzedd ful it was: y was
seyn: y moyses leyde: y am aferd.
& ful of tremblg: but ze han to
mū miz to pe hyl syon: & to pe cite
of god hyngge: pe heuently ierlm.
& to pe unktude of many poulad
angels: & to pe churche of pe fir
ste me: which ben wztren i hene
nes: & to god domelina of alle: &
to pe spirt of iust parfit me: & to
ihu mediator of pe newe testa

A pe fier able to be touchd & able to
come to.

met: & to pe spreyng of blood:
bece spetige ran abel: Se ze y
ze forlake not pe speker: for it
pei y forlaken hy y spak on pe er
pe astapud not: moche more we
y turuen away fro hy y speky
us to fro heuene: whos voys pa
ne monede pe erpe: but not he
agen bihet y lery: zt onys & y
shal moue not conly erpe: but
also heuene: & y he lery zt comys:
he declary pe euillacion of mona
ble pigis as of maad pigis: y po pi
gis dwelle: y ben vmonable: y for
we resleyngge pe kyngdom vmo
nable hane we grace: bi which
serue we plesige to god wy dzed
& reuerce: for ouris fier y wasty
god

The charite of // C. xij. //
byner hed dwelle in zoi: &
nyle ze forzete holpralite
for bi pis: su me plesiden to auge
his y were resleyued to her bozyl:
penke ze on bound me: as ze we
re to gndre bound: & of trauelge
me: as ze silf dwellynge i pe bo
dy weddigis i alle pigis hondable:
& bed vnbound: for god shal de
me fornycatouris & auowtrerys:
be zoure manes wyoute con
tyle: apayed wy present pigis
for he seide: I shal not leene pee.
neyr forlake: so y we seye tris
tily pe lord is an helper to me:
I shal not dzedd: what amā shal
do to me: hane ze myde of zoure
loueyns pat han spokū to zoi pe
word of god of which biholde ze
pe goyng out of lymg: & sinbe
ze pe fery of hem ihu cit iusturday
& to day: he is also into wordis: ny
le ze be led away: wy dryle techy
gis & trauige: for it is best to sta

ble pe herte wy grace: & not w
metis: which profitede not to
me wandrige in he: we han an
auter of which pei y serue to pe
tabernacle: han not pouer to
ete: for of which beettis pe blood
is born yn for syne into hoosy pigis
bi pe bishop: pe bodies of hem be
brent wyoute pe castels: for whi
ch pig: ihu y he shulde halewe
pe peple bi his blood: snuffide wy
oute pe zate: yfoze go we out to
hi wyoute pe castels: berige his
repret: for we han not here a ci
tee dwellege: but we seken a citee
to comyge: yfoze bi hi offre we
a sacifice of heryng: enen more
to god: y is to seye: pe fryt of
lupis knowlechyng to his name:
& nyle ze forzete wel doyng & co
mynyg: for bi such sacrefices
god is diller wyd: obeye ze to zoi:
suffreyngs: & be ze suget to hem:
for pei parfytly waken: as to zel
dige resoi for zoe sonis: y pei do
pis pig wy iope: & not forwige
for pis pig spedy not to zoi: pre
re ze for us: and we trust: y we
han good consiēce in alle pigis
willige to lyue wel: more ouer
I biledhe zoi to do: y y be restu
rid pe sime to zoi: & god of pees
y ledde out fro deap pe greet sh
epard of sheep in pe blood of en
ladyge testamēt oure lord ihu cit:
shape zoi in al good yng: y ze do
pe wille of hi: & he do in zoi y pig
y shal plesid bifoze hy: bi ihu cit.
to who be glorie to wordis of wordis: am
And bryen I prepe zoi: y ze suf
fre aword of solace: for bi ful fe
we pigis I hane iheru to zoi: fwo
we ze oure broper tymothe y is

send. & forþ: wip whom if he
shal come more hastily. I shal
se you greete & wel alle your so
neyus: & alle hooly me þe bryde
of ytalpe: greete you wel þe
gite of god be wip you alle amē

Here endyþe þe pille to the
actis: & bigynneþe þe prolog on
þe actis of apostles //

Actis of antioche of þe naciō
of syrie whos preliþ is teeld
i þe gospel: at antioche he was a
wozpi mā of leche craft. & after
ward a discipule of cristis apostles
& simete poul þe apostle he seruy
de god i manye hōd wip oute blame:
& whāne he was fourtē zeer
old & fourtē he dyede i bythynge ful
of þe hooly gost: & he pur: aung of
þe hooly gost in þe coostis of acaye
wzoot þe gospel to ferstul grekis:
& thewede þe incarnaciō of þe lord
by a trewe tellig. & thewede also þe
was come of þe kynde of dāny
to hi not wōnte desiert wō zōu po
wer: to wite þe doynge of þe apol
this iher mynstre: y god beige fuli
god whāne þe sone of pēdiciō was
deed. & þe apostles hadde maad her pi
er pur: lot of þe lordis elemōi: þe
nōiþe of þe apostles wer fulfild
& also þe poul shuldē ceden þe doynge
of þe apostles whō þe lord hadde cho
si: y long tyme wylde azen þe pē
ke: and to he patrede & sechen god
he wolde thewe it: bi shōrt tellig
rayer pā thewe forz omȝ pē mo
ze lenger to hem y wlatē longe
pēgis: knoweþe y it bihōney þe ti
lyer y wozchir: to ete of his owne
fruytis: and he found so moche g
ce of god. y not conly his medicy
ne pfitete to bodies: but also þe

sonhs // **T**erom in his prologe:
on þis booke seruyþ
þe people first
I made a sermon of
alle pēgis y shi by
gan to do & to teche into þe dāy
of his assencion & whāch he comā
dite: bi þe hooly gost: to hile xps
this whāche he hadde chōsi to w
che he shewede hy self ahyue: af
tir his passiō by many argu
mētis: apperige to hem fourty
dayes: & speke of þe reuēue of
god: and he eet wip þe & comādi
de y þe shuldē not departe fro ie
rlm: but abyde þe biheste of þe
fadur: whāch ze herden he seide bi
my mōy for John baptiste in
wātr: but ze shuldē be bapti
sed in þe hooly gost: after þes fe
we dayes: þe fōre þe pat we
re comi to gidre: ariden hy &
seyde: lord whē þe in þis tyme
you shalt restoze þe kyngdom of
israel: & he seide to hem: it is not
your to knowe þe tyme epr
mōmētis: whāch þe fadir hap
pit i his power: but ze shuldē
take þe vertu of þe hooly gost
comyge fro aboue into you: &
ze shuldē be my witness i ie
rlm: & in al iude & samarie: &
to þe vtmoste of þe erþe: & whā
ne he hadde seid þes pēgis: in
her eizt: he was lyft up: & a clōd
de releyneþe hi fro þe erþe
& whāne þe bihelden hi goyng
into heuene: lo atey me stood
biþdis he in wht doryg: & seide
men of galile: what stōde ze
biholdige into heuene: þis shi
whāch is takē up fro you into
heuene: shal come: as ze sayen

hi goyng into heuene: yāne þe
turneden azen into ierlm fro þe
hil y is depid of olyuete: whāch
is biþdis ierlm an halp dayes
hurney: & whāne þe werē into
into þe hōus wher þe diuelliþe:
þe wente up into þe soler: petre
& John: James & andreu: philip
& thōm: bartilnew & mathen:
James of alþei & symōnd zelote:
& Judas of James: alle þes werē
lastigly cōtēyngge wip o wille
in priet: wip wīmen & marie
þe modir of ihu: & wip his bry
en: in þo dayes petre roos up
in þe myddel of hem: & seide: &
þe was a cupamp of me to gidre
al meet an hundred & twenty
bryen it bihōney y þe scriptu
re be fillid: whāch þe hooly gost
biþse seide bi þe mōy of dāny
of Judas pat was ledere of þe
y token ihu: & was nōiþd a
mōg us: & gat a part of þis
seruyse: & þis Judas hadde a fe
eld of þe hyze of wickidnesse:
& he was hangid: & to barst þe
myddel: & alle his entrails we
ren stred a brood: & it was mō
knowē to alle me y diueltē
i ierlm: s y þe ilke feeld was
depid achilēmak i þe langa
ge of he: y is þe feeld of blood
& it is witi in þe book of sal
mes: þe habitaciō of he be
maad desiert: & be þ noon pat
diuelliþe in it: & anoy take his
biþhopriche: y for it bihōney
of þes me pat be gade: &
rid to gidre wip us in
al þe tyme: i whāch þe lord
ihu entride & wente out an
ong vs: & bigan fro þe bap

tym of John til into þe day wh
ich he was takē up fro us: y
oon of þese be maad a witnel
se of his resurrecciō wip vs: &
þe ordeynede tibeys: Joseph
y was depid bar labas: y was
named nūt: & mathi: & þe pri
ete: & seide: you lord y knowē
þe hertis of alle me: thewe whō
you hast chōsi of þes tibeys:
y oon take þe place of þis seruy
se & apostliþed: of whāch Judas
treþspallid: y he shuldē go into
his place: & þe zauen lothis to
he: & þe lost telle on mathi: & he
was nōiþd wip eulēne apostli:
Ad whāne þe // **A**ctis of pentecost
werē fillid: alle þe disciples
werē to gidre i þe same place:
& suddenly y was maad a storm
fro heuene: as of a greet wynd
comyge: & it fillid al þe hōus:
wher þe laten: & dyuerse tū
gis as spēr apperiden to he: & it
sat on ech of hem: & alle werē
fillid wip þe hooly gost: & þe by
gimen to speke dyuerse langa
gis: as þe hooly gost gaf to hem
for to speke: & þe werē in ierlm
diuelligē ierlm religionis men:
of ech naciō y is vōndir heuene: &
whāne þis vois was maad: þe mul
titude cam to gidre: & þe werē
a stormed in pouit: for ech man
herde he speke i his langage:
& alle werē astonped: & wōndre
& seide to gidre: whā not alle þes
pat speke be men of galile: and
how herde we ech mā his langa
ge in whāch we ben bozn: par
tly & medy & elamite & þe pat
diuellen at mesopotam: Jude

of capodocia & pontus & alie. fri-
gie & panphylie. egipt. & pe par-
ties of libie. & is aboue sirenien.
& comelugis romayns & ieris
& prolelmis me of crete & of
arabie. We han herd he speke
in our langagis & grete ym-
gis of god. & alle weren a ston-
ed. & wondred & seide to gidre
what wole pis pig be. & ope
dozned & seide. for pes me be
ful of must. but petre stood wip
ye enleuene. & reihde wip his
vois & spak to he. ze ieris & al
le pat dwelle at ierlm. be pis
knowu to you. & wip eiris per-
sejue ze my wordis. for not as
ze wene pes ben drun. wha-
ne it is pe pzide our of pe day
but pis it is. & was seide bi pe
pfere Joel. & it shal be in pe las-
te dapes pe lord seip. & shal hee
de out my spirit on ech fleuth.
& your sones & your dozns sh-
ule pfectie. & your zonge shule
be vilious. & your eldis shule
dreime liuenenes. & on my ser-
uautis. & on my handmaydes.
i po dapes. & shal shede out of
my spirit. & pei shulen pfectie
& shal zyne grete wondris
in heuene aboue. & signes i er-
pe bimepe. blood & fyre & heete
of smoke. pe lime shal be tur-
ned into blood. bifore & pe greet
pe apyn day of pe lord come.
& it shal be ech ma which enei-
shal depe to help pe name of
pe lord. shal be saaf. & ze me of
isrl. hee ze pes wordis ihu of
nasareth a ma preupd of god
bifore you bi stues & wondris

& tokenes. which god dide bi hi
in pe myddel of you as ze wene
ze turmetide & killede bi pe
hondis of wicked me. bi coun-
sel detynd. & bitakn bi pe for-
wynng of god whom god reihde.
whie sorwis of helle were an-
boudn bi pat & it was ipossible
p he wer holdn of it. for damp-
sen of hi. & sanz afer pe lord bi-
foze me euer more. for he is on
my ryzthalf. & be not moued
for pis pig my herte ioyede & my
tuge made fulout ioye. & more
ouer my fleuth shal reide i hope
for you shal not leue my soule
in helle. ney you shal zyne pu-
hooly to se corrupcion. you shal
maad knowu to me pe weyes
of lyf. & shal fille me in myz-
pe wip pi face. bypen be it leet
ful boldly to seie to you of pe pa-
triark. for he is ded & buried. &
his sepulchre is amog us into pis
dape. pfoze whie he was a ppo-
fete. & wite & wip a greet oop-
god hadde liuorn to hi p of pe fir-
it of his leende. shulde con sette on
his seete. he seynge afer spak of
pe resurrexiou of et. for ney he
was left in helle. ney his fleuth
siz corrupcion. god reihde pis
ihu. to who we alle ben wituellis
pfoze he was enhauid bi pe ryz-
hond of god. & purz pe biheste
of pe hooly gost. p he took of pe fa-
dur. he shede out pis spirit pat
ze seen & heere for damp stude
net. into heuene. but he seip pe
lord seide to my lord. sette
you on my ryzthalf. til i
putte ym euemys. pe stool of
pi feet. pfoze moost certynly

wite al pe hous of israel. & god ma-
de hi bore lord & et. pis ihu who
ze crucified. whie pei herde pes
pignis. pei were copit in herte
& pei seiden to petre. & to ope a
posthis. bypen. what schulen
we do. & petre seide to hem. do
ze penance. & ech of you be bap-
tisd in pe name of ihu. & into
remysion of your synes. & ze
shulen take pe yfte of pe hooly
gost. for pe biheste is to you. &
to your sones & to alle p ben fer.
which enei our lord god hap de-
pid also wip ope wordis ful ma-
nye he wituellde to he. & mo-
nestide to hem & seide. be ze sa-
ued fro pis shperid generaci-
on. pane pei pat resleyued his
word. were baptisd. & in pat day
sonhs were encreesid. aboute
pe poulande. & were lastige sta-
bly in pe teching of pe aposthis. &
in pe comynng of pe heeking of
breed & in pzeperis. & drede was
maad to ech ma. & many won-
dis & signes. were don bi pe
aposthis i ierlm. & greet drede
was in alle. & alle p bileden
were to gidre. & hadde alle pi-
gis comyne. pei seide posselions
& castel. & departide po pigis to
alle me. as it was ned to ech.
& ech day pei dwellede
stably wip o wille in pe
temple. & brake breed aboute
houses. & toke mete wip ful
out ioye & esplenesse of herte.
& herde to gidre god. & hadde g-
ce to al pe folk. & pe lord etreel
side he. & were mid saif e-
che day to pe lame pig.
& petre & John. & c. & c.

wente up into pe temple. at pe
wynpe our of pzeperis. & a ma
pat was lame fro pe wombe of
his modir. was born. & was leid
ech day at pe zate of pe temple.
is leid sayz. to are almes of me
p entriden into pe temple. pis
whie he sayz petre & John bigg-
myge for to entre into pe temple.
pzeied p he shulde take almes.
& petre wip John biheeld on hy.
& seide. bihold p into us. & he bi-
heeld into he. & hopeid p he sh-
ulde take gū what of hem. but
petre seide. i hane ney siluer
ne gold. but pat & i hane. & zyne
to pee. in pe name of ihu crist
of nasareth. ryle you up & go.
& he took hi bi pe ryzthond. & he
wyde hi up. & auoon his leggis. &
his feet were sondid to gidre. &
he leppide & stood. & wandred. &
he entride wip he into pe temple.
& wandred & leppide & heriede
god. & al pe peple siz. hi walki-
ge & herynge god. & pei kneue
hi. p he it was p sat at almes
at pe fair zate of pe temple. & pei
were fillid wip wondris. & sto-
nyng. in pat pig p bifelde to
hi. but whie pei sizzen petre
& John. al pe peple ran to hem
at pe porche. & was depid of sa-
lomon. & wondred greet-
ly. & petre siz. & aueride to
pe peple. men of israel. what
wondren ze i pis pig epi-
what biholden ze us. as bi our
vertu ep polver. we maide pis
ma for to walke. god of abra-
him & god of isaac & god of jacob.
god of our fadris. hap glorified
his sone ihu. who ze bitrayed.

denyede bifore pe face of pilat
 whyne he demyde hi to be deli
 uerid but ze denyede pe hooch
 & pe ryzful: & afide amall leet
 to be zoun to zoun: & ze slowe pe
 maker of lyf: whom god rey
 lide fro deop of who we ben wit
 nellis: & pe fery of his name
 he hay coferyd vis ma who
 ze seen & knowe pe name of
 hi & y is by hi: zat to vis man
 ful heepe in ye fyt of alle zoun
 & now bypen / woot: y bi vult
 tynge ze dide as allo zoun: pnces
 but god y bifore tolde bi ye mo
 ny of alle profetis: y his crut
 thulde enfire: hay fillid so / y
 fore be ze repentant & be ze co
 uertid: y zoun: hines be dona
 way: y whyne pe tymes of re
 frenthig thuleu come fro ye
 ert of ye lord: & he thal lode
 vilke ihu cit y is now prechid
 to zoun / who it bihouey heuene
 to resseue: into ye tymes of
 restitucion of alle pigis. why
 ch ye lord spak bi ye mony of
 his hooly pfetis fro ye world
 for moyses seide / for ye lord zoun
 re god thal reile me to zoun
 a profete of zoure bypen: as
 me ze thule heer hy by alle pi
 gis. what eu he thal speke to
 zoun: & it thal be y euy
 ma y thal not heet ye ilke p
 fete: thal be destruyed fro ye pe
 ple: & alle pfetis fro sam
 uel & asy: pat spaken: teelden
 pes dayes / but ze ben ye lones
 of pfetis: & of ye testamet pat
 god ordeyne to oue fadris: &
 seide to abrahim in y seed: alle
 pe meynes of erpe thule be

blethid / god reilde his sone first
 to zoun: & sente hi blethige zoun
 y ech ma coite hi. fro his wit
 nednesse // C. my.
Ad while pei spake to
 pe peple. ye prectis & ma
 gestatis of ye temple & ye saduce
 es came vp on hem & forweden
 y pei tanzte pe peple: & telden
 in ihu pe azenrlyng fro deop
 & pei leide hondis on he. & putti
 den hem to ward: to ye moztwe
 for it was pane euentid / but
 many of hem y hadden herd ye
 word: bileuete & pe noubre of
 me was maad fyne poulandis
 & a moztwe it was don. y re p
 tis of he & ye eloze me & tribis
 were gedrid i ierlm & anas p
 ce of prectis & capfas & iohn &
 alisandre: & how many eue we
 re of ye kynde of prectis: & pe
 lettide he in ye mydel: & exat
 in what vten ey in what name:
 han ze doon pis pig: pane pe
 tre was fillid wy ye hooly go
 ost: & seide to he ze pncis of ye
 peple and ze eloze me: heere
 ze / if we to day bedempe in ye
 good dede of a sylk man: i who
 pis ma is maad laf: be it kno
 wn to zoun alle: & to al ye peple
 of nrael y in ye name of ihu
 cit of na: & areth whom
 ze crucified: whom god
 reilde fro deop: in pis pi ma
 stouy hool: bifore zoun: pis is
 ye stoon: which was reppenyd
 of zoun bildige / which is maad
 into ye heed of ye corner: and
 heeche is not in ony opn: for
 nep of name vndir heuene
 is zoun to me: i which it biho

ney vs to be maad laf: & pei ly
 en ye stoufastnesse of petret
 of iohn: for it was fouden pat
 pei were me vlettrid & leuid
 me: & pei kondred & kneiben
 he y pei were wy ihu: & pei
 syzen ye ma y was heeld ston
 dige wy hem: & pei myzte no
 pig azen sepe / but pei comandi
 den hem to go forp wypon te ye
 coucel: & pei spaken to gidge
 & seiden: what thulen we do to
 pes me: for ye signe is maad
 know bi he: to alle me y dwe
 len at ierlm: it is opyn: & we
 moyn not denye / but y it be
 no more pnyphthid into ye pe
 ple: manafe we to he. y pei spe
 ke no more in pis name to ony
 me: & pei clepde he: & denouce
 den to he. y on no man pei thul
 den speke ney teche in ye name
 of ihu: but petre & iohn answ
 riden: & seiden to hem: if it be
 ryzful in ye list of god to hee
 zoun rapn van god: deme ze / for
 we mote nedis speke po pigis:
 pat we han seyn & herd: & pei
 manafiden & leften hem: & fou
 den not how pei thulde pony
 the he: for ye peple: for alle me
 darfide pat pig y was don i
 pat y was bifalle: for ye man
 was more pa of forty zeer:
 i which pis ligue of heeche was
 maad: & whyne pei were deli
 ed yei came to her felowis
 & teelde to he: how grette pigis
 ye pnces of prectis & ye eloze
 me hadde seid to he: & whyne
 pei herde wy don herte pei rei
 leden vons to ye lord: & seide / lord
 pou pat madist heuene & erpe

se & alle pigis y ben in he: why
 ch seidist bi ye hooly gost bi ye
 mony of oure fadir dainy y ch
 ild: why heepe me gnastiden wy
 teep to gidge: & ye pepis pouz
 ten: veyn pigis: figis of ye erpe
 stoude wy: & pnces come to gidge
 in oon azens ye lord ye lord: & a
 zens his cit: for verily eroude
 & pouce pilat wy heren men
 & pepis of nrael came to gidge
 in pis citee azens ym hooly chld
 ihu whom pou anoyntidest: to do
 ye pigis y ym hond & y coucel
 demede to be don: & now lord bi
 hold into ye pretenyngis of he
 & graute to y seruantis to spe
 ke y word wy al trit: i y pig
 y pou holde forp ym hond y hee
 pis & signes & bondis be ma
 ad: bi ye name of ym hooly sone
 ihu: & whyne pei hadden preied:
 ye place was moued: in which
 pei were gaderid: & alle were
 fillid wy ye hooly goost: & spa
 ke ye word of god wy trit: &
 of ye mltitude of me bilemyge:
 was oon herte & oon wille: ney
 ony ma seide ony pigis of po
 pigis: y he weeldid to be his
 onne: but alle pigis were co
 myne to hem: & wy greet / st
 ye apostlis zeldid wy ne llyg
 of ye azenrlyg of ihu cit out
 lord: & greet grace was i alle
 hem: for nep ony uedy man
 was amog he: for how many
 enen weren possessoris of
 feeldis epyr of housis: pei sel
 den & bzouzte ye pris of po pi
 gis y pei selde & leide bifore
 ye feet of ye apo: ths: & it
 was departid: to ech: as it

was neide to ech forsope josph
was named bar labas of apost
lis y is to sepe ye lone of confort
of ye lymage of leeny anna of ci
pre: whine he hadde a feeld solde
it & bzouzte ye pis: & leide it bi
fore ye feet of apostlis. **C. V.**

Bet amā anany bi name
wry sathira his wyf: sol
de a feeld: & de fraudite of
ye prys of ye feeld & his wyf was
wryte: & he bzouzte a part & lei
de before ye feet of ye apostlis.
& petre seide to hi: zmany whi
hap sathanas tēptid ym herte y
you lye to ye hooly goost: & to de
fraude of ye prys of ye feeld.
Wher it vnseld was not ym: &
whine it was seeld it was i ppo
wer: whi hast you putt yis pig
in ym herte: y hast not lye to
me: but to god: anany herde pes
wordis: & felde dolyn & was deed/
& greet drede was maid on alle y
herde: & zonge me risen & moue
de hi awei: & baren hi out & buri
de: & pere was maid as a spate
of pre ouris: & his wyf kneiwe
not pat pig y was don: & entride
& petre answere to hi: whō mā
seie to me: wher ze selden ye fe
eld for so moche: & she seide zhe
for so moche: & petre seide to hi:
whar bifel to you: to tēpte ye spi
rit of ye lord: lo ye feet of hem
y han buried ym holobonde ven
at pe doze: & ye shulen bere yee
out: anon she felde dou at his
feet: & diede: & ye zonge me en
triden & fouden hir deed & ye ha
ren hir out & buri de to hir hōse
bōnde: and greet drede was ma
ad in al pe church: & into

alle y herden pes pigis: & bi ye
hoondis of ye apostlis: signes
& many wondrous were maid in
ye peple: & alle were of con acord
in ye porche of salomō: but no
man of opur durste ioyne hi awei
bi ye: but ye peple magnified
he: & ye multitude of me & of whi
me bilinge in ye lord: was
more encreesid: so pat yei bz
uizte out syke me into streets:
& leiden i lital beddis & couchis:
whine petre cam nameli pe sh
dōlwe of hi shulde shadōwe ech
of hem: & yei shulde be dehynd
fro her sykeness: and ye mlti
tude of citees nyz to ierlm ran:
bringyge syf me & y were tra
uelid of vndene spiritus: whiche
alle weren heeld: but ye pnce of
prestis roos up: & alle y were
tōy hi: y is pe ere sie of saduce
is: & were fillid wry enye: & lei
den hoondis on ye apostlis: & pit
tude he in ye cony warde: but ye
aūgel of ye lord openyde hy m
te ye zatis of ye plou: & lede he
out & leide go ze & stonde ze & spe
ke in ye tēple to ye peple: alle
ye wordis of yis lye whi whine
yei hadde herd yei entride eerly
into ye tēple & tanyte: & ye p
ce of prestis cam & yei y were
wry hi: & depide to gidze ye cou
cil: & alle ye eldze me of ye chil
dren of israel: & senten to ye pri
sou: pat yei shulde be bzouzt for
& whane ye mynistis cam: fou
den he not: & for ye plou was
openyde: yei turnete asen & fel
den & leiden we foude ye priou
schitt wry al diligēte & ye kepe
ris stōndyge at ye zatis: but we

openyde: & fouden no mā y yne
& as ye manestratis of ye tēple:
& ye prices of prestis herde pes wor
dis: yei douteden of he whar was
don: but amā cam: & telde to hem
for lo yo me whiche ze han putt i
to plou: ben in ye tēple & stonden
& techen ye peple: pane ye manes
trat wente wry ye mynistis:
& bzouzte hem wrypente violence
for yei drede ye peple: lest yei sh
ulden be stōoned: & whine yei had
de bzouzt he: yei lettide hem i ye
coucil: & ye pnce of prestis: ari
de hem & seide i comādemēt we
comāden you: y ze shulde not
teche in yis name: & lo ze han fil
lid ierlm wry you: techyng: & ze
wolen bringe on vs ye blood of
yis mā: & petre answere & ye a
postlis & leiden: it bihōney to obere
to god: moze pan to me: god of ou
re fadris reside ihu whō ze slo
wen: hangyng in a tre: god en
haūcde wry his rythōnd yis p
ce & laupour: y penance wer zo
uū to us: & remysion of synes:
& we ben witnesis of pes wordis:
& ye hooly goost whō god zaf to al
le obeithyge to hi: whine yei her
den pes pigis: yei were turnen
tid: & pouzte to sle he: but a man
ros in ye coucil: a farile gama
liel bi name: a doctour of ye lawe:
a wrythful mā to al ye peple: &
comādid ye me to be putt wry
oute for: for a while: & he seide
to hem: ze me of israel take tent
to you silf on pes me: whar ze sh
ulen do: for bifoze pes dages Geo
das pat seide hi silf to be sū mā:
to whom anōubze of me consenti
de: aboute four hundrid: whiche wh

slayn: & alle y bileuete to hi: were
disparpelid & bzouzt to nouzt: af
ter yis judas of galile was i ye
dages of pfectiō: & turnete awei
ye peple after hi: & alle hois many
ene colentide to hi: were staterid
& he peristide: & nouz pfoze i seie
to you: departe ze fro pes me: &
anfwere ze he: for if yis coucil ey
werk is of me: it shal be vndon:
but if it is of god: ze moun not vn
do hem: lest pāuētū: ze be fōndū
to repugne god: & yei consenti
de to hi: & yei depide to gidze ye apost
lis: & denoucede to hem y were be
tū: y yei shulde no moze speke i
ye name of ihu: & yei leete he go:
& yei wente ioyge fro ye syt of
ye coucil: y yei were had wryp
to soufre dispilg: for ye name
of ihu: but ech day yei ceeliden
not in ye tēple & aboute houles:
to teche & to preche ihu cū. **C. VI.**

Bet in po dages: whine ye
noubre of dispilis encre
side: ye grekis grūathide
men ye ebreis: for y her widoib
were dispilid in eu dages my
nystrige: & ye ebelue depiden
to gidze ye multitude of dispils
& leiden: it is not ryz ful y we le
ue ye word of god: & mynistren
to bozdis: pfoze bryeu biholde ze
me of you: of good fame: ful of
ye hooly goost & of wysdom: whi
che we shulen ordeyne on yis
werk: for we shulen be bly to
preier & preche ye word of god:
& ye word pleside bifoze alle ye
multitude: & yei cheside stene
amā ful of fery & of ye hooly goost:
& phlyp & procoze & nycanor: &
tymon & parmanam & nicol a

comelyng A mā of antioche / pei or
deynede pefe bifore pe list of apost
lis: & pei pzetede. & leyde hondis
on hem / & pei word of pe lord was
de: & pei nonbre of discipulis iern
sale was moche multiplied / also
moche cupany of pzetis: obey
ede to pe fery / & stenen ful of
gite & of strengpe: made wondris
& greete signes in pe peple / but
summe risen of pe synagoge pat
was depid libertyns. & creuen
lis. & of me of alilandre. & of he
p were of alie & of asie. & dispu
tide wip steneue / & pei myzte not
wip stonde pe wysdom & pe spyt
p spak / pāne pei pūchly sente me
pat ihulde lepe p pei herde hi sei
ynge wordis of blasfemye azens
moyses & god: & so pei monede
to gidre pe peple: & pe eldre me
& pe stribis / & pei rānen to gidre
& taken hi: & brouzte into pe cou
cil: & pei ordeynede false witnes
lis. & seide / pis mā ceelshy not to
speke wordis azens pe hooky pla
ce & pe laye / for we herde hym
seynge / p pis ihe of narethy
thah distrūpe pis place: & thah
change pe tradicions. whiche mo
yles bytook to vs: & alle me pat
latten in pe coucil biheldē hy. &
sawzen his face. as pe face of an
aūgel. **C. vii. //**
Ad pe pnce of pāis sei
de to steneue / wher pes
pigns han hem so. / whiche seide / bi
pen & fadris heet / & god of glorie
apperide to our fadir abrahā. whā
ne he was i mesopotamye. bifore
p he dwelte in carrā: & seide to hi
go out of pilond. & of pi kynrede:
& come into pe lond whiche i thah

therke to pee / pāne he wete out
of pe lond of calders: & dwelte in
carrā: & fro pēms astr. p his
fadir was deed: he tūllatide hi
into pis lond. in whiche ze dwelle
now: & he zaf not to hi. eritage
i it. ney a pāis of a foot: but he
bihtze to zyne hi it to posselion.
& to his seed astr hi. whiche he had
de not a lone: & god spak to hi p
his seed thah be comelig i an ahe
lond. & pei thulen make he suget
to seruage. & thūle yuel treete
hem foure hundred zeeis & patti
& i thah fuge pe folk: to whiche
pei thulen serue seip pe lord: &
astur pes pigns pei thūle gon out.
& pei thulen serue to me in pis
place: & he zaf to hy pe testamēt
of circūcisiō: & so he gendide
thāc: & circūcīdē hi in pe extre
day: & thāc gēdide Jacob: & Ja
cob gēdide pe tibelue patriar
kis: & pe patriarkis hadē enye
to Joseph: & seelde hi into egypt:
& god was wip hi. & dehynde hi
of alle his tribulaciōis: & zaf to
hi grace & wysdom i pe list of
faraō kig of egypt: & he ordeyne
de hi lōneyu on egypt: & on al his
houys: & hūgre cam to al egypt
& canaan. & greet tribulaciō: &
our fadris fōnde not mete: but
whiche Jacob hadde herd p whee
te was in egypt: he sente our
fadris first: & in pe secūde tyme
Joseph was knowū of his brise.
& his kyn was mād knowū to
faraō / and Joseph sente & depide
Jacob his fadir: & al his kynre
de senenty & fyne me: & Jacob
cam dōlū to egypt: & was ded:
he & our fadris: & pei wēren

tūllatid into suchen & wēre lead
i pe sepulch p abrahā bouzte bi
pigns of siluer of pe sones of E
moz: pe lone of suchen: & whiche
pe tyme of biheeste cam nyz. wh
ich god had knowlethid to abra
hā: pe peple wēre & i mēph
ede i egypt: til anoy kig roos i
Egypt: whiche knew not Joseph:
pis biylyde our & tūmētide on
re fadris: p pei thūle pūtte
alwey her zong childre: for pei
thūle not kyne in pe same ty
me moyses was born: & he was
loued of god: & he was worthid
pe moneyis: in pe hous of his fa
dir: & whāne he was put out in
pe flood: pe douzter of faraō to
of hy up & nōthidē hi into hy
lone: & moyses was lerned i al pe
wysdom of egyptians: & he was myzty
i his wordis & werkis: but wh
āne pe tyme of forty zeeir was
fillid to hi: it roos up into his
herte: p he thūle wiste his bi
pen pe sones of isrl: & whiche he
saw amā suffrige wrong: he
vengide hi: & dide vēnāūte for
hi p suffride pe wrong: & he
killede pe egyptian: for he gesh
de p his brisen thūle vndrsto
de p god thūle zyne to hem hel
pe bi pe hond of hi: but pei vn
drstoden not: for in pe day li
ynge: he apperide to he chidige.
& he acordide he in pees & seide:
me ze pē brisen whi nōye ze ech
opir: but he p dide pe wrong
to his nezeboze: pūtide hi alwey
& seide: who ordeynede pee pnce
& domyniā on vs: wher p wolt
sle me: as zisturday p killedest
pe egyptian: and in pis word

moyses flez: & was mād a co
melig in pe lond of madian: wher
he he bigant tibeys sones: & whiche
he hadde fillid forty zeeir: an aū
gel apperide to hi in fier of flāw
me of a bouth in desert of pe mount
of syna: & moyses syz: & wōdri
de on pe syt: & whiche he neyede
to biholde: pe vois of pe lord was
mād to hi & seide: i am god of ion
& fadris: god of abrahā: god of
jacob: god of Isaac: moyses was
mād tremblige: & durde not bi
holde: but god seide to hi: do of pe
thoon of pi feet: for pe place i
whiche p stōndist: is hooky erpe:
i seeynge hy: pe tynetyng of my
peple p is in egypt: & i herde pe
mozenys of he: and i cam dōwn
to deluere he: & now come pou:
& i thah sente pee into Egypt:
pis moyses whom pei denyede
seeynge: who ordeynede pee
pnce & domyniā on vs: god
sente pis pnce & zēnbiere: w
pe hond of pe aūgel: p apperide
to hi in pe bouth: pis moyses lab
de he out: & dide wondris & sig
nes in pe lond of egypt: & in pe
reed see & i desert forty zeeis:
pis is moyses p seide to pe lone
of israhel: god thah reise to zōnā
p fete of zōnā: bypen: as me ze
thulen heet: hy: pis it is p wā
in pe churche in wildornelle: w
pe aūgel p spak to hi in pe mount
syna & wip our fadris: whiche
took wordis of hy to zyne to us:
to whom our fadris wolt not
obeye: but pūtide hi alwey: &
wēre turned alwey i hertis in
to egypt: seeynge to Aaron: ma
ke pou to us goodis p thūle go

bifore us for to pis moyses p
ledde us out of ye lond of egypt.
we wite not what is don to hi
¶ pei made a calf i po dayes. &
offride a sacrifice to pe man
met. & pei were glad in pe wer
bis of her hondis. & god turne
de & bitook hem to serue to pe
Furthod of heuene. as it is wri
tū i pe book of pferis. wher
ze hous of nrael offride to me.
slayn sacrifices ey sacrifices
fourty zeer in deserit. & ze han
take pe tabernacle of moloc &
pe ster of zoni god reufam.
figuris p ze han maid to worlth
pe he & i shal tūllate zoni to
habiloine. pe tabernacle of ut
nellig was wip our fadris in
desert. as god dispolite to he &
spak to moyses. p he shulde ma
ke it afir pe fourme pat he say
which also our fadris token wip
ihū & bzoupte into pe possession
of heve men. which god putti
de away fro pe face of our fa
dris. til in pe dayes of dany.
p found grace anetis god. & ar
ide p he shulde fyde a tabernacle
to god of jacob. but salamo bildide
pe hous to hi. but pe huz god dwel
hy not in pigis maid bi hond. as
he sey bi pe profete. heuene is
a seete to me. & pe erpe is pe stool
of my feet. what hous shule ze
bylde to me sey pe lord. ey what
place is of my resting. wher
my hond made not alle pes ym
gis. wip hard nol & vncirculi
did hertis & eeris ze wip tōde en
more pe hooly goost. & as zoni fa
dris so ze. wsho of pe pferis ha not
zoni fadris purfued. & han slayn

hem pat bifore teelden of pe conyng
of pe ryzful mā. wshos trantōs
& manleeris ze were nols. whi
che tooken pe lanse. in ordynance
of angels. & han not kept it. &
pei herte pefe pigis & were dynt
ly turnet in her hertis. & gren
netē wip teep on hi. but wher he
uene was ful of pe hooly goost. he
biheeld into heuene. & ey ze glori
e of god. & ihū stonde on pe ryz
half of pe vertu of god. & he seide.
lo i se heuenes openyd. & māns
sone stonde on pe ryz half of pe
vtu of god. & pei cyete wip agre
et voys. & stoppte her eeris. &
manden wip o wille an asauzt
ito hi. and pei bzoupte hi out of
pe citee. & stouetē. & pe wimel
his dide of her dloyis. bihydis pe
feet of azong mā. p was clepid
samle. and pei stouetē heuene.
pat clepid god to helpe seynge.
lord ihū resleyue my spirit. & he
enelide & cede wip a greet voys &
seide. lord sette not to he pis syne.
& wher he hadde seid pis pig. he dide.
But saul was cō. ¶ C. viii.
seynge to his teep. & greet
psecution was maid pat
day i pe chynche p was in ierlm.
& alle me were staterid bi pecū
treis of iudee & samarie. outta
kū pe apofthas. but good me bi
riete heuene. & maiden greet mo
nyg on hy. but saul greetly dis
trepede pe chynche & entride bi hou
lis. & dronke me & wip me. & bi
took he nito plon. & pei f were
staterid. pallide forp. predhyge
pe word of god. ¶ Had filip cam
dowu into a citee of samarie.
& prechide to hem cō. & pe pe

ple zat tent to pes pigis & were
leid of filip. wip o wille heert
ge & seynge pe signes p he dide.
for manye of he pat hadden vcle
ne spritis. cyete wip a greet
voys & wente out. & many lyke
in pe paleste & crokid were hee
lid. pfore greet ioye was maid
in yat citee. ¶ But p was amā
in f citee whos name was symo
nid a wip che pat hadde disseyned
seynge p hi self was si greet
mā. whom alle herkenetē fro pe
leeite to pe mooste. & seide. pis
is pe vertu of god. which is de
pid greet. & pei leueten hy for
long tyne he hadde maddid hem
wip his wiaherctas. but whā
ne pei hadde bileenid to filip p
p dnd of pe kyngdom of god. men
& wimen were baptid i pe na
me of ihū cō. & pāne allo symonid
hi self bileuete. & whāne he was
baptid. he dronk to filip. & he say
allo signes & greet vtues were
don. he was a stouyed & wondri
de. but whāne pe apofthas p were
at ierlm hadde herd p samarie
hadde resleyued pe word of god.
pei seute to hem petre & ioon. &
whāne pei came. pei preide for
he p pei shulde resleyue pe hooly
goost. for he cam not 3it into ony
of hem. but pei were baptid oon
ly in pe name of pe lord ihū. pā
ne pei seide hondis on he. & pei
resleyuete pe hooly goost. & whā
ne symonid hadde seyn. p pe hoo
ly goost was zoni by leynge on
of hondis of pe apofthas. & he pro
feride to hem money & seide. 3i
me ze also to me pis powver pat
whō ener i shal leye on my hen

dis. p he resleyue pe hooly goost.
but petre seide to hi. pi money be
wip yee into perdition. for you
geilidēt pe 3itte of god shulde be
had for money. p is no part ne so
ort to yee. in pis word. for pi her
te is not ryzful bifore god. pfore
do you penance for pis wickidnes
se of yee. & preie god. if pāuete
pis pouzt of ym herte be forzōu
to yee. for i se p p ert i ye galle
of bitternele. & in ye bond of wic
kidnele. & symonid answerte &
seide. preie ze for me to pe lord. p
no pig of pes pigis p ze han seid
come on me. & pei w itue lide & spa
ken pe word of pe lord. & zede azen
to ierlm. & pchide to many citrees
of samarieans. & an angel of pe
lord. spak to filip & seide. ruse p
& go azen pe souy. to pe were
pat gop doū fro ierlm into gala
pis is deserit. & he roos & wente forp.
& lo amā of ethopie. a myzti mā
seruaūt ageldyng of candace pe
queene of ethopiens. which wō
on alle hyr richellis. cā to worlth
pe i ierlm. & he turnete are litige
in his chare. & redyge. i laye pe
profete. & pe spirit seide to filip.
nere p. & ioyne yee to pis chare.
& filip ran to & herde hi redyge
flaye pe pfete. & he seide. geist
p. wher you vndrthodist. what
pigis p redist. & he seide. hōu
may i if no mā shewe to me. &
he preide filip. p he shulde come
ep. & litte wip hi. & pe place of pe
scripture p he redde. was pis.
as a sheep he was led to sleyn.
& as a lomb bifore amā p shew
hi. is donb wipoute voys. so he o
penide not his mouy. i mekenesse

his doom was takē up. who shal
telle out pe generaciō of hī. for
his līf shal be takē away fro pe
erpe. and pe geldig answere to
filip. & seide. I bileche pee. of what
pfece seip he pis pig. of hī self.
epir of ony ony. & filip openide
his moun. & bigan at pis pte. & tū.
& prechide to hī ihū. & pe while pei
weten bi pe weye. pei came to a
watir. & pe geldig seide. lo watir.
who forbedy me to be baptisid. &
filip seide. if you bileuest of al pe
herte. it is lee thil. & he answere
seide. I bileue p ihū cū is pe so
ne of god. & he comānde pe cha
re to stonde stille. & pei wenten
don boye into pe watir. filip & pe
geldig. & filip baptiside hī. & whā
ne pei werē come up of pe watir.
pe spirit of pe lord rāuēthide fi
lip. & pe geldig. & hī no more.
& filip was found in azotus. &
he passide forp. & pchide to alle ci
tees. til he cam to cesarie. **C. 12.**
But saul sit a blouet of
manasie. & of betigis a
zens pe distuphs of pe lo
rd. cam to pe pnce of prectis. & ar
ide of hī lettis to damask to pe
synagogis. p if he fond ony mē
& wīne of pis līf. he shulde le
de hē bound to ierlm. and whā
he made his journey. it bifelde
p he cam nyz to damask. & sūde
ly a lizt frō heuene sthoon abou
te hī. & he fallde to pe erpe. & her
de a vois seipge to hī. saul saul
what pursuest p me. & he seide.
who art thou lord. & he seide. I am
ihū of nazareth. whom p puest.
it is hard to pee. to like azen pe
pcke. & he tremblde & wondide.

& seide. lord what wolt you pat
do. & pe lord seide to hī. rise up & en
tre into pe citee. & it shal be seid
to pee. what it bihouey pee to do.
& pe mē p wētēn wīp hī. stoden
astonyed. for pei herde a vois. but
pei bzen no mā. & saul roos fro pe
erpe. & whāne his fen werē ope
nyd. he saiz no pig. & pei drowē
hī bi pe hondis. & ledde hī into da
mask. & he was pte days not seipge.
& he eet not neydr drank. & a dis
ciple anany bi name. was at
damask. & pe lord seide to hī. a
visiō. anany. & he seide. lo lord.
& pe lord seide to hī. rise you & go
into a strete. p is clepid rectus.
& seke in pe hous of judas sau
le bi name of tharle. for lo he p
ep. & he liz a mā anany bi name
eutingē & seipge on hī hondis. pat
he resseue sūt. & anany anlike
rite. lord. I haue herd of manye
of pis man. how grete yuelshē
dide to p seyntis i ierlm. & pis hap
posser of pe pnces of prectis
to bynde alle mē p depen p na
me to help. & pe lord seide to hī.
go p for pis is to me a vessel of
cheig. p he bere my name bīp
hepe men & kigis & tofore pe lo
nes of israhel. for. I shal atherbe
to hī. how grete pigis it biho
ney hī to suffre for my name.
& anany wētē & entride ito pe
hous. & leyde on hī his hondis &
seide. saul broz pe lord ihū seide
me p aperide to pee in pe weye
i which p comest. p you se. & he
fulfild wīp pe hooly gost. & a
noo as pe stahs felde fro his pte.
he resseue sūt. and he roos. &
was baptisid. & whāne he hadde ta

bi mete. he was confortid. & he
was bi sū dapes wīp pe distuphs
p iherē at damask. & anoo he en
tride into pe synagogis. & pch
de pe lord ihū. for pis is pe sone
of god. & alle mē pat herde hī m
wondide. & seipden. where pis is
not he p impugnetē i ierlm. hem
p clepide to help pis name. & hīdū.
he cam for pis pig. p he shulde
lete hem bound to pe pnces of
prectis. but saul moche pe more
weride strong. & confōndide pe
pe wīs p dwelidde at damask. & af
ter myde p pis is cū. & whāne mā
ny dapes werē fillid. jehis mā
den a cōncil. p pei shulde sle hī.
& pe apstres of hē. werē mand kno
wē to saul. & pei keptē pe jatis
day & nyz. p pei shulde sle hī. but
his distuphs tookē hī bi myt.
& delyuēde hī. & leete hī dōlū. mā
leep bi pe wal. & whāne he cam i
to ierlm. he asayde to ioyne hī to
pe distuphs. & alle drowē. & leue
de not p he was a distuple. but
barnabas took. & ladde hī to pe
aposths. & teelde to hē. hōis m
pe weye he hadde seyn pe lord.
& p he spak to hī. & hōis m dam
ask he dide tūly. i pe name of
ihū. & he was wīp hē & cutē & ze
de out i ierlm. & dide tūlyly m
pe name of ihū. & he spak wīp hē
pen mē. & distupide wīp grekis.
& pei soute to sle hī. whāch pig
whāne pe bzyen hadde knowe. pei
ledde hī bi mytē to cesarie. & lete
hī go to taris. & pe churche bi al
judē & galile & samarie hadde pe
es. & was edyfied & walkide i pe
diele of pe lord. & was fillid w
confort of pe hooly gost. & it bi

felde. p petre. pe while he passide
aboute alle. cam to pe hooly men
p dwelidde at lūde. and he found
anā enas bi name p fro eize
zeer he hadde sepe m bed. & he wē
syt m palye & petre seide to hī.
Enas pe lord ihū cū heele pee.
rise you & arape pee. & anoo he ro
os. & alle mē p dweliden at lūde.
& at sarone sye hī. whāne werē
cōuertid to pe lord. & m jope was
a distupelle whos name was tabi
ta. p is to seie dorcas. p is was ful
of good werkis & almesdeis pat
she dide. & it bifel m po dapes. p
she was syk & dide. & whāne pei
hadde wailid hī. hī pei leide hī
i a soler. & for lūda was nyz jope
pe distuphs herde p petre. was per
yne. and sentē rāpē mē to hī. &
preiete p pou tarie not to come
to us. & petre roos. & p cam w
hē. & whāne he was comm. pei led
den hī into pe soler. & alle wido
wis stode aboute hī. & seipge &
otherwige cootis & dōpis. whāne
dorcas made to hē. & whāne alle mē
werē pnt wipoute forp. petre
enclide & preie. & he tūmede to
pe bodie. & seide. tabita rise you.
& she openyde hī. & pzen. & whāne
she syz petre she saut. & p se. &
he took hī bi pe hond. & reside
hī. & whāne he hadde clepid pe hoo
ly mē & widois. he allignede hī
alyne. & it was mand knoū bi al
jope & manye bileuēde m pe lord.
& it was mand p māy dapes he dw
ellide i jope. at cōnlymōnd a cōnd.
Anan was i ce. **C. 13.**
sarie corneli by name.
a centuriē of pe cūpāpē
of emyris. p is seid of ytalie. a

religious mā: & dredige ve lord
 by al his meyne / doynge many
 almes to pe peple: & preyng
 pe lord evermore / pis sayz i a
 vision openly as i pe nyne our
 of pe day: an angel of god entri
 ge into hy: & seynge to hi / corne
 lye / & he biheeld hi & was adrad
 & seide / who art þu lord: & he sei
 de to hi / i preieris & iyn almes
 dedis: han itged up into myde
 in pe sixt of pe lord: & now sen
 de þou me into joppe: & clepe
 oon symonit: þis is named petre
 pis is herborid at a man symonit
 corion: whos hous is bihydis
 pe see / pis schal seye to pee: wist
 it bihoney pee to do: & whne pe
 angel þu spak to hi: was gon a
 wey: he clepide alwey me of his
 hous: & a knyzt þu dredde pe lord:
 whiche weren at his biddis: &
 whne he hadde toold he alle pes
 pigis: he seute he into joppe: &
 on pe day synge while pei ma
 den journey: & neizet to pe ci
 te: petre wente up in pe hize
 place of pe hous to preie abou
 te pe lize our: & whne he was
 hūgrid: he wolde haue ete / but
 while pei made redy: a rany
 sching of spirit: felde on hi: & he
 spyz heuene opowd: & a vessel
 comyge dou as a greet scheete
 wip four corners to be lette
 down fro heuene into erpe: i wh
 ich were alle four footid beest:
 & crepige of pe erpe: & volatils
 of heuene: & a vois was maid
 to hi / ryle þu petre ble & ete: and
 petre seide / lord forbete: for i ne
 uer eet ony comy pig: & vnde
 ne: & eft pe secude tyme pe vois

was maid to hy / þu pig: þat god
 hay cleuid: seie þou not vnde
 ne: & pis pig: was don bi pres
 & anoon pe vessel was relleyned
 agen: & while þu petre doutide
 þu hi sike what pe vision was
 þu he spyz: lo pe me þu were sent
 fro cornely: soute pe hous of sy
 monit & stood at pe jate: & whne
 pei hadde clepid: pei aride if sy
 monit þis is named petre: hadde
 pei herboze: & while petre pouzte
 on pe vision: pe spirit seide to hi
 lo þu me seke þu þu ryle þu
 & godou: & go wip þu & doun þu
 no pig: for þu lere hem and þu
 cam don to pe men: & seide / lo
 i am who þu seke: what is pe
 caule: for whiche þu ben come:
 and þu seide / cornely þu comite
 a nist man: & dredige god: &
 hay good carue llig of alle
 þu folk of þe wis: took answer of
 an hooly angel to clepe þu þu
 his hous: & to þu wordis of þu
 þu fore he ledde he þu: & relleyned
 de i herboze: & þu þu þu þu
 wip hi: & in pe day synge he roo
 & wente forwip he: & þu of
 pe þu þu þu þu þu þu þu
 þu þu be witnes to petre: & þu
 opir day he entride into cesarie
 & cornely abood he: wip his co
 spys & necessarie frendes þu
 were clepid to gidre: & it was
 don whne petre was come yn:
 cornely cam metyge hi: & fell
 don at his feet: & worlthypid hi
 but petre reide hi: & seide / a
 ryle þu: also i my sike am a mā
 as þou: & he spak wip hi: & wete
 þu & foud many þu were comi
 to gidre: & he seide to he: þu

how abhominable it is to a jew:
 to be joyned: & to come to a alie
 but god thewde to me þat no
 man seie anoon comi: & vnde
 ne: for whiche þu i cam whne
 þu was clepid: wip oute don þu
 þu fore i ate zon: for what caule
 han þu clepid me: & conely seide
 to day four dayes into pis our: i
 was preyng: & fastige i pe ny
 ne our: i my hous: & lo a mā stood
 before me i a whit clooy: & seide
 cornely þu pier is herd: & i
 almes dedis be i mynde i pe sixt
 of god: þu seute þu into joppe:
 & clepe symonit þu is named petre
 þu is herborid i pe hous of symonit
 corion: bihydis pe see / pis wha
 ne he schal come: schal speke to
 pee: þu fore anoon i seute to pee:
 þu didist wel in comyge to us
 þu fore now we alle ben present
 in þu lize to hee: pe wordis wha
 en ben comandid to pee of pe lo
 rd: and petre openyt his mouy:
 & seide / in treure i haue foundu:
 þu god is not acceptid of psons
 but i ech folk he þu dredy god: &
 worlthyp ryz i þu schelle: is accept
 to hi: god seute a word to pe chil
 dre of israel: thewysge pees bi
 ihu crist: þu is lord of alle pigis
 & wite pe word: þu is maid þu
 al iudee: & bigan at galile: aft
 pe baptym þu john prechide: ihu
 of nazareth: how god anoyntide
 hi wip pe hooly gost: & vertu wh
 ich pallide forwip doynge wel: &
 heelge alle me opprellid of pe
 deuyl: for god was wip hi: & we
 ben witnes of alle pigis: wh
 ich he dide i pe ciutrey of ierlm
 & of ierlm: whom pei gloude han

gyng i a tre / and god reide
 pis in pe pridde day: & zaf hym
 to be maid knoubil: not to alle
 peple: but to witnes bi fore
 ordeyned of god: to us þu eete
 & drunken wip hi: aftir þu he roos
 agen fro deap: & he comandide to
 us to preche to pe peple: & to wit
 nesse þu he it is þu ordeyned of
 god domel mā of pe nyne & of
 teete: to pis alle þu þu her
 nellis: þu alle me þu bileren
 i hi: ihu relleyned remysion
 of synes bi þu name: & þu whi
 le þu petre spak þu wordis:
 pe hooly gost fell on alle þu her
 den pe word: & pe ferynd men
 of circucion þu came wip petre
 wondrit: & also into naciouis
 pe gte of pe hooly gost is shed
 out: for þu herden he speke in
 langagis: & magnifyge god:
 þu petre answeride: wher
 ony man may forbete þu þu
 þu þu be not baptid: þu also relleyned pe hooly
 name of pe lord ihu crist: þu þu
 þu þu þu: þu he ihu seide dyl
 le wip he sume dayes: **¶**
And pe apollis & pe þu
 were þu were in iudee her
 den þu alid hepen me res
 leynde pe word of god: & þu glo
 rified god: but whne petre cam
 to ierlm: þu þu were of circi
 cion disputide agens hi: & seide
 whi entride þu to me þu haue
 spuce: & hast ete wip he: & petre
 bigan & expownde to he bi or
 dre: & seide / i was i pe cite of
 joppe & preiete: & i spyz i ranysh
 yng of my mynde a vision: þu
 a vessel cam don as a greet sche
 te wip four cordis: & was sent

gost as we: & he co
 mmandide he to be ba
 ptid: in pe

don fro heuene: & it cam to me /
to which / I loke bi heeld. & so /
four footide beethis of ye crye &
beethis. & crepyng beethis & vo
latils of heuene / & I herde also
a vois p seide to me / petre ry
se pou & ale etc / but I seide
nay lord: for to myn pig epyr
vncleue: entride uelle into my
mour / & ye vois answereide pe
seide tyme fro heuene / pat pig
p god hay deid: sepe p not vn
dene / & pis was don by pnes:
& alle pigs were resseyned a
zen to heuene / & lo ye me anoo
stode in ye hous i which I was:
& pei were sent fro cesarie to
me / & pe spirit seide to me: p
shulde go wy he & donce no pig
zhe & pes hie bypen came wy
me: & we entiden to ye hous of
ye ma / & he teelde to us how he
sayz an angel i his hous: don
dige & sepyge to hi / sende to pou
wype & clepe symout: p is na
med petre / which shal speke to
pe wordis. i which p shal be
saie & al pin hous / & whane I
hadde bigyne to speke: ye hooly
gost fel on he as to us i ye bi
gynnyng / & I bypouste on pe
word of pe lord: as he seide / for
john baptiste in watir: but ze
shulde be baptisid i ye hooly gost
pfore if god zaf to hem pe same
grace as to us p bilenede in ye
lord ihu crist: who was I p myzte
forbede pe lord p he zyne not pe
hooly gost to he pat bilenede in
ye name of ihu crist / whane pes
pigs were herd: pei heelde pe
ees. & gloufyde god & seide / pfor
also to hepen me: god hay zoni

penance to lye / & pei p were sta
terid of pe tribulaciou p was
mand vnder steuene: well den
fory to fensle & to cyrie & to anti
oche. & spaken pe word to no ma.
but to ieris alone / but sume of
hem were me of cyrie & of cure
nen / which whane pei hadde ent
into antioche: pei spaken to pe
greekis & prechiden pe lord ihu /
pe hond of pe lord was wy he / &
moche noube of me bileuige was
comid to pe lord / & pe word cam
to ye eeris of ye church p was
at ierlm on pes pigs: & pei seute
barabas to antioche: & whane he
was come & hys ye grace of pe
lord: he ioyede & monestide alle
me: to dwelle i ye lord in purpos
of herte / for he was a good man:
& ful of pe hooly gost & of fer /
moche peple. was entresid to pe
lord / & he wente fory to thar his:
to seke saul / & whane he hadde
du hi: he ledde to antioche & awei
pe lymede pet in ye church: & tau
ten moche peple / so p pe dylphis
were named first at antioche
ten me: & in pes dayes: pferis
came ouer fro ierlm to antioche
and oon of hem roos vp agais
bi name: & hie fiede bi pe spirit.
agreet hys to comyge in al
pe world which hys was ma
ad vnder claudius: & alle pe
dylphis pposide after p ech had
de: for to seide to mynsterie. to
bypen p dwelle in iudee / wh
ich pig also peridit & seten it to
pe elde me: bi ye hondis of bar
nabas & saul / **C** **iii**
id in pe same tyme &
roude pe pig seute poy

to turnete sū me of ye church /
& he gloufyd by liwerd: James pe
brof of john / & he sayz p it ples
de to ieris: & kaste to take also
petre / and ye dayes of pete loo
nes were: & whane he hadde ca
nt petre: he seute hi into pson
& butok to four quatryous of
knyz to kepe hi: & wolde afe
pallt bynge hi fory to ye peple
& petre was kept in pson / but
pier was mand of ye church w
oute ceelg: to god for hi / but
whane eroude shulde bynge
hi fory: in pat myzt petre was
slepige by tware tway kny
tis: & was bound wy tway chey
nes: & ye keperis bifore ye doze
kept pe pson / & lo an angel of
pe lord stode myz: & hie shoon
in pe pson hous / & whane he had
de smyte ye eyde of petre: he
rephide hi & seide / ryle pou shalt
ly / and anoo pe chaynes felden
don fro his hondis / & ye angel sei
de to hym / gnde pee: & do on pin
holis: & he dide so / & he seide to hi
do aboute pee ydopis: & sue me
& he zede out & smyte hi: & he wil
te not p it was soy p was don
by ye angel / for he gethede hi zilt
to haue sepe aviloun / and pei
passide pe furte & pe seide war
de & came to ye men zate p ledip
to ye citee which anoo was ope
nyd to he / & pei zeden out & came
into oostreet: & anoon pe angel
passide awei fro hi / & petre tur
nete agen to hi gnt: & seide / now
I boot verily p pe lord seute his
angel: & deliueride me fro ye hōd
of eroude: & fro al pe abydyng of
ye peple of ieris / & he biheld

& cam to ye hous of marie mo
dr of john: p is named marthys:
wher manye were gedrid to gi
dye & frynge / & whane he knocki
de at ye doze of ye zate: a damy
sel roie bi name. com fory to se
and whane she knew pe vois of
petre: for joye she openide not
ye zate. but rā yne & telde pat
petre stood at ye zate / & pei sei
den to hir / pou maddist / but
she aftermyde p it was so / &
pei seide it is his angel / but pe
tre a bood shille & knockide / and
whane pe hadde openide ye doze
pei sayzen hi: & dwounden / & he
bekemyde to he wy hys hond to
be shille: & telde how ye lord had
de led hi out of ye pson / & he sei
de / telle ze to james & to pe bri
ven pes pigs: & he zede out: and
wente to anoo place / & whane
ye day was come: p was not ly
til troublig a mog pe knyztis:
wher was don of petre: & whane
eroude hadde souit hi & fond not:
after p he hadde mnd enquerig
of ye keperis. he comandide he
to be brongt to hi / and he cam don
fro iudee to cesarie: & dwellede
per / & he was wyrop to me of ti
re & of sidon / & pei of oon accord
came to hi whane pei hadde con
celid wy bathys p was pe figi
chambirlayn per arde pees: for
as moche p her karens were
vntailid of hi / & in aday p was
ordeyned. & rōnde was clopid
wy figis clopyg: & latt for do
melms & spak to he / & ye peple
cryede ye vois of god: & not
of man / and anoo an angel of
pe lord smoot hi: for he hadde

not zoue honour to god / & he was
waftid of wormes & diete & pe
word of pe lord waside: & was
mktiphed / and barnabas & sa
ul turneden aze fro ierlm. Wha
ne pe mynisterie was fillid: &
toke iohn p was named markus /

Ad pftis / c. xij. /

Ad doctours were i pe
chirche yat was at an
tioche: in whiche barnabas &
symonid p was clepid blac: &
lucius cronenile & manaeen p
was pe sonig: feer of Eroude
tetrarke & saul were: & whne
pei mynistrud to pe lord & fas
tude: pe hooky goft seide to hem
departe ze to me barnabas &
saul into pe werk to which i
haue takn he: pane pei fastude
& preiet & leyden hondis on hem
& leten he go / but pei were sent
of pe hooky goft: & wente forp
to seleucia: & fro penus pei wente
bi boot to cypre: & whane pei ca
me to salampne: pei prechide pe
word of god in pe synagogis of
ielbis: & pei hadde also iohn i my
nistrud: & whne pei hadde wallid
bi al pe yle to pafum: pei fou
den a man a wiche a fals pftre
a ieris to who pe name was bari
eli: p was wh pe pconful sergi
us paul a prudent ma / pis clepi
de barnabas & poule: & desirde
to heere pe word of god / but ely
mas wiche whpftood he for his
name is expouned so: & he louy
te to turne alyey pe pconful fro
hene: but saul which is seid al
so paul was fillid wh pe hooky
goft: & biheeld into hi & seide / a
you fil of gyle & al falsnesse p

lone of pe deucl: p enemy of al
ryghtnesse: p leuest not to
turue / uplodou pe rustful weies
of pe lord / and now lo pe hond of
pe lord is on yee: & you shal be
blynd & not seynge pe lue to
a tyme / & anos in it & terkesse
felde don on hi: & he zede aboute
& sougte hy pat shulde zyne hond
to hi: pane pe pconful: whne he
hadde seyn pe dede: bileuode
pe teching of pe lord: & whne fro
pafum pouil hadde go by a boot:
& pei p were were wh hi: pei ca
men to pgen of pamsilie / but whn
depride fro hem: & turuete azen
to ierlm: & pei zede to perge: &
came to antioche of phidie: &
pei entrued into pe synagoge
pe day of laboris: & late: & astir
pe redyng of pe laue & of pe p
fctis pe pnces of pe synagoge
senten to hem & seide / brypen it
ony word of exortacion to pe pe
ple is in you: seye ze: & pouil roo
& whp hond hard silence: & seide
me of yrael: & ze pat drede god:
heer ze / god of pe peple of yra
el chees our fadris: & enhanci
de pe peple: whne pei weren
comelgis in pelond of egypt:
& in an hys arme he ledde he out
of it: & by pe tyme of fourty
zeeris: he sustre her manis
in desert: & he destruede leuene
folkis in pe lond of canaan: &
bi sort departide to hem her lo
ond as astir four hndid & fyt
ty zeeris: & astir pes pigis he
zaf domeime to samuel pe pro
fete: & fro p tyme pei ayden
a big: & god zaf to he saul pe so
ne of cis: a ma of pe lynage of

beriamyn: by fourty zeeris: & wha
ne he was don alyey: he rehid to
hem dany kyng: to whom he ba
ar witneslig: & seide / i haue fou
de dany pe lone of jesse: aman
astir my herte: which shal do al
le my willis of whos seed bi pe
biheest god hay led out to uael
a lawour ihu: whne iohn pch
de bifore pe face of his conyng pe
baptym of penance to al pe pe
ple of uael: but whne iohn fillid
his cour: he seide / whom ze deme
me to be: i am not he: but lo he co
mey astir me: & i am not worpi
to don of pe lthoon of his feet: bry
pen & lones of pe lye of abrahm:
& whiche p in you drede god: to
pe word of heelde is sent: for pei
p dwelle at ierlm: & pncis of it:
pat knele not pis ihu: & pe voi
ces of pftis: p biuery sabot
ben red: dempte & filliden: & pei
fouiden in hi no cause of deap: & ari
den of pilat: p pei shulde sle hy:
& whne pei hadde endid alle pigis
p were wntu of hi: pei token hi
don of pe tre: & leyden hy i a gra
ue: & god rehid hi fro deap in pe
pride day: which was seyn by ma
ny dayes: to he p wente up to gi
dre whp hym fro galile to ierlm
whiche ben til now his witneslis
to pe peple: & we thewen to you
pe biheest p was maid to oure
fadris: for god hay fulfillid pis
to her lones: & azenrephid ihu:
as in pe secude salm it is wntu
p art my lone to day: i bigat pee
& he azenrephid hi fro deap: pat
he shulde not turne azen into
corruption: seide pus for i shal
zyne to you pe hooky trewe pigis

of dany / And p fore i on anoyr
side he seip p shal not zyne pi
hooky to ze corruption: but dany
i his genacion: whne he hadde
myntid to pe wille of god:
diete: & was leyd whp his fadris:
& hys corruption: but he whom
god rephid fro deap: saz not cor
ruption: pfore brypen be it kno
wnt to you: p by hi remysion of
synes is teeld to you: fro alle hy
nes: of whiche ze mynt not be
mstified in pe laue of moyses:
& pis ech ma p bileuep: is iustifi
ed: pfore se ze p it come not to
you p is bifore seid in pe pftis:
ze dispuleris se ze & wondre ze
be ze daterid abroad: for i worche
a werk in your dayes a werk in
your dayes: a werk p ze shulde not
bileue: if ony ma shal telle it to
you: & whane pei zeden out: pei
preiet p in pe sabat luyng pei
shulde speke to he pes wordis: &
whne pe synagoge was left:
many of ierlis & of comelgis
worshipige god suuede pouil
& barnabas: pat spaken & conice
lid hem: p pei shulde dwelle in
pe grace of god & in pe sabot su
uyng: almeest al pe citee cam
to gidur: to heere pe word of god:
& ierlis lizen pe peple: & weren
fillid whp euy: & azenleide pes
pigis p were seid of pouil: & blaf
sempden: pane pouil & barnabas
stude fastly seide to you it bihoft
first to speke pe word of god: but
for ze putte it alyey: & han demed
you vntworpi to enerlastige lyf:
lo we turne to hepe me: for so pe
lord comandide vs: i haue sett
pee in pe lye to hepen me: pat

you be into heelp to pe vtmede
of erpe: & hepen me herde: & ioye
den & glorifiede pe word of pe lord
& bileueden as manye as were
bifore ordeyned to enlastige luf
& pe word of pe lord was soum
in al pe cūtre: but pe ieiwis stū
rude religious wpmen & onest.
& pe wozyente me of pe citee: &
stūde psecucion aens poule
barnabas & dēpne hē out of her
cūtreis: & pe ieiwhoken albey to
hem pe dust of her feet: & came
to ioye & pe discipulis were
fuld wip ioye & pe hooly gost.

But it bifel // **Emj.**
at ioye. p̄ pe entri
de to gide. into pe synago
ge of ieiwis & spaken: so p̄ ful gr
et mltitute of ieiwis & grekis
bileuede: but pe ieiwis pat were
onbileueful. reilide psecucion &
stūde to wryppe pe souls of he
pen me aens pe herpen: but pe
lord jat soone pees: p̄foze pei
duellide moche tyme & dide t̄
tily in pe lord. berige w̄tneſſig
to pe word of his grace: & myge
signes & ibondis to be maad bi
pe hondis of hē: but pe multitu
de of pe citee was departid: &
sūme were wip pe ieiwis. & sū
me wip pe apostlis: but w̄hne
per was maad an alaut of pe
hepen me & pe ieiwis wip her
p̄nces to turmeten & to stōone
hē: pei vnderstode & fledde to gi
dre to pe citees of lycaronpe &
histris & derben & to al pe cūtre
aboute: & pei prechide pere pe
gospel: & al pe mltitute was
moued to gide i pe techig of
hē poule & barnabas diuerten

at histris: & amā at histris was
lyk in pe feet: & hadde sete croked
fro his modris wombe w̄hich ne
ner hadde gon: p̄is herde poule
spetige: & poule biheeld hē & egi
p̄ he hadde seip p̄ he shulde be
maad laif: & seide wip a greet
vois: ryle you vp rist on p̄ feet:
& he lypide & walkide: & pe peple
w̄hne pei hadden seipn pat p̄ poule
dide: veride her vois & lycaron tū
ge & seide: goddis maad lyk to me
ben commi don to us: & pei clep
de barnabas iuhiter: & poule mer
curij: for he was ledere of pe word
& pe p̄ceet of iuhit p̄ was bifore
pe citee: broyde bohs & crokne
bifore pe zatis wip pep̄s. & w̄d
de haue maad sacrifice: and w̄hne
pe apostlis barnabas & poule her
den p̄is: pei to rente her coortis
& pei skipten out amōg pe peple.
& cryden & seide: mē w̄hat don ze
p̄is p̄is p̄is: & we ben dedly mē
lyk zōn: & w̄he went to zōn: ze be
conuertid fro rese veyn p̄gis.
to pe kyngge god: p̄ made heue
ne & erpe & pe lee & alle p̄gis p̄
ben i hē: w̄hich i genaciōis pas
sid: suffride alle folkis to go to
her: & w̄he weyes: & ze he leste
not hē self wiponte w̄tneſſig
in isel doying: for he jat reipn
fro heuene & tyme berige frū
yt: & fulfild zōm hertis wip
mete & gladuēse: & pei seyinge
pes p̄gis: vne p̄is w̄agide pe
peple. p̄ pei offride not to hē: but
sū ieiwis came oū fro antioche
& ioye & conuēlede pe peple
& stōnyede poule & drowen out of
pe citee: & geillide p̄ he was ded
but w̄hne discipulis were commi

aboute hē: he roos & wente to
pe citee: and in pe day suynge
he wente fory wip barnabas in
to derben: & w̄hne pei hadde pre
chid to pe ilke citee & tanz ma
ny: pei tūnetē azen to histris
& ioye & to antioche: confer
myge pe souls of discipulis &
monestige: & pei shulde diuē
le in seip. & seide p̄ by many &
bulaciōis: it bihōney us to en
tre into pe kygdom of heuene:
& w̄hne pei hadde ordeyned p̄
tis to hem bi alle citees. & had
de p̄ried wip fastigis: pei by
token hem to pe lord i w̄hom pei
bileuede: and pei passide p̄ hōie.
& came to p̄mfilie: and pei lpa
ken pe word of pe lord in p̄ge:
& camen don to italie: & fro pe
nis pei wente by boot to antio
che: fro w̄hens pei were takū
to pe grace of god into pe werk
p̄ pei filled: & w̄hne pei were in
commi & hadde gadrid pe church:
pei telden hōw grete p̄gis god di
de wip hem & p̄ he hadde apemid
to hepen me pe doze of seip: & pei
diuēllide not a lytil tyme wip pe
discipulis. // **Emj.** //

Ad sūme came don
fro iudee: & tanzte bri
pere: p̄ but ze be circūdid af
pe laue of moyses: ze moien not
be maad laif: per fore w̄hne p̄
was maad not alitil dillencū
to poule & barnabas aens hē: pei
ordeyneden p̄ poule & barnabas:
& sūme ope of hem shulde go vp
to pe apostlis & p̄cis in ieru
sale on p̄is questioū: & so pei lpe
re led fory of pe church: & pass
den bi seipce & samarie: & pei

teelden pe conuēlaciō of hepen
mē: & pei maade greet ioye to al
le pe biyēn: & w̄hne pei came
to ierlin: pei were resseyued
of pe church & of pe apostlis &
of pe eldre mē: & telden hōw gre
te p̄gis god dide wip hē: but sū
me of pe erelic of farisees pat
bileuede: rilen vp & seide: p̄ it
bihōney hē to be circūdid: & to
comāte to kepe also pe laue of
moyses: & pe apostlis & eldre mē
came to gide: to se of p̄is word
& w̄hne p̄ was maad a greet se
fig herof: petre roos & seide to
hem biyēn ze w̄te. p̄ of elde day
es in zōn: god chees by m̄y moyn
hepen to here pe word of pe gos
pel & to bileue: & god p̄ k̄neue
p̄ hertis bair w̄tneſſig: & jat
to hē pe hooly gost: as also to us
& no p̄is d̄yuerſide bi t̄lype us
& hem: & denide pe hertis of hē
bi seip: nōw p̄me w̄hat tepten
ze god: to p̄itte azol: on pe nec
ke of pe discipulis: w̄hich ne p̄r
we ne p̄r oure fadris myte ber:
but bi pe grace of oū lord ihū
crist. we bileue to be lāued: as al
so pei: & al pe mltitute heeld pe
es: & herden barnaban & poule.
tellige hōw grete signes & w̄
dis god dide bi hē in hepe mē:
& astir p̄ pei helden pees: jame
anſweride & seide: biyēn heere
ze me: symōit telde hōw god
uistide first to take of hepene
mē a peple to his name: & pe
wordis of p̄fētis acorde to hē
as it is w̄ritū: astir p̄is p̄ shal
turne azen: & bilde pe taberna
cle of dāny p̄ felde don: & p̄ shal
bilde azen pe cast don p̄gis of it

you be into heelp to ye vtmede
of erpe: & hepen me herde: & ioye
den & glorifiede ye word of ye lord
& bileueden as manye as were
bifore ordeyned to enlastige luf
& ye word of ye lord was sonu
in al ye cūtre: but ye ieiwis stū
rude religious wpmen & onest.
& ye wozyente me of ye citee: &
stūde psecucion aens poule
barnabas & dēpne hē out of her
cūtreis: & per iohoken albey to
hem pe dust of her feet: & came
to ioye: & ye discipulis were
fullid wip ioye & ye hooly gost.

But it bifel // **¶ Emj.**
at ioye. p. per entri
de to gide: into ye synago
ge of ieiwis & spaken: so p. ful gr
et mltitude of ieiwis & grekis
bileuede: but ye ieiwis pat were
onbileueful. reilide psecucion &
stūde to wryppe ye soules of he
pen me aens ye herpen: but ye
lord jat soone pees: p. fore per
duellide moche tyme & dūe t
tily in ye lord. berige wtnelīg
to ye word of his grace: & ynūge
signes & ibondis to be maad bi
pe hondis of hē: but ye multitu
de of ye citee was departid: &
sūme were wip ye ieiwis. & sū
me wip ye apostlis: but whne
per was maad an alaut of ye
hepen me & ye ieiwis wip her
pnces to turmeten & to stōone
hē: per vnderstode & fledde to gi
dre to ye citees of lycraonpe &
histris & derben & to al ye cūtre
aboute: & per prechide pere pe
gospel: & al ye mltitude was
moued to gide i ye teching of
hē poule & barnabas dwelken

at histris: & amā at histris was
lyk in ye feet: & hadde sete croko
fro his modris wombe whch ne
ner hadde gon: p. herde poule
spetige: & poule biheeld hē & egi
p. he hadde seip p. he shulde be
maad laif: & seide wip a greet
vois: ryle you vp rist on p. feet:
& he lypide & walkide: & ye peple
whne per hadden seyn pat p. pou
lde: veride her vois & lycraon tū
ge & seide: goddis maad lyk to me
ben commi don to us: & per clep
de barnabas iuhiter: & poule mer
cury: for he was ledere of ye word
& ye p. oest of iuhit p. was bifore
ye citee: broyde bohs & crokne
bifore ye zatis wip pepis: & w
de haue maad sacrifice: and whne
ye apostlis barnabas & poule her
den p. per to rente her cootis:
& per skipten out amōg ye peple:
& cryden & seide: me what don ze
p. p. p. p. p. & we ben dedly me
lyk zōn: & alhe went to zōn: p. ze be
conuertid fro rese veyn pigis.
to ye kyngge god: p. made heue
ne & erpe & ye lee & alle pigis p
ben ihe: which i genacionis pas
sid: suffride alle folkis to go to
her: & we wip: & ze he leste
not hē sūlf wiponte wtnelīg
in isel doying: for he jat reyns
fro heuene & tynes berige frū
yt: & fulfild zōm hertis wip
mete & gladuēse: & per seynge
pes pigis: vne p. p. p. p. p.
peple: p. per offride not to hē: but
sū ieiwis came on fro antioche
& ioye & conuilede ye peple
& stōnyde poule & drowen out of
ye citee: & geillide p. he was ded
but whne discipulis were commi

aboute hē: he roos & wente to
ye citee: and in ye day suynge
he wente fory wip barnabas in
to derben: & whne per hadde pre
chid to ye ilke citee & tanz ma
ny: per tūnetē azen to histris
& ioye & to antioche: confer
myge ye soules of discipulis &
monestige: & per shulde dwel
le in seip: & seide p. by many &
bulacionis: it bihouep us to en
tre into ye kygdom of heuene:
& whne per hadde ordeyned p
tis to hem bi alle citees: & had
de p. oied wip fastigis: per bi
taken hem to ye lord i whom per
bileuede: and per passide p. lide.
& came to pampile: and per lpa
ken ye word of ye lord in p. ge:
& camen don to italie: & fro p
mis per wente by boot to antio
che: fro whens per were takū
to ye grace of god into ye werk
p. per fillide: & whne per were in
commi & hadde gadrid ye church:
per telden how grete pigis god di
de wip hem: & p. he hadde apemid
to hepen me ye doze of seip: & per
duellide not a lytil tyme wip ye
discipulis // **¶ Emj.**

Ad sūme came don
fro iudee: & tanzte bri
pere: p. but ze be circūdid af
pe laue of moyses: ze moyn not
be maad laif: per fore whne p
was maad not alitil dillencū
to poule & barnabas aens hē: per
ordeyneden p. poule & barnabas:
& sūme ope of hem shulde go vp
to ye apostlis & p. oestis in ieru
sale on p. question: & so per lpe
re led fory of ye church: & pass
den bi seipce & samarie: & per

teelden ye consilaciō of hepen
me: & per maad greet ioye to al
le ye biyēn: & whne per came
to ierlin: per were resseyued
of ye church & of ye apostlis &
of ye eldre me: & telden how gre
te pigis god dide wip hē: but sū
me of ye erelic of farisees pat
bileuede: rilen vp & seide: p. it
bihouep hē to be circūdid: & to
comante to kepe also ye laue of
moyses: & ye apostlis & eldre me
came to gide: to se of p. s word
& whne p. was maad a greet se
fig herof: per roos & seide to
hem biyēn ze wite: p. of elde day
es in zōn: god chees by m. moyn
hepen to here ye word of ye gos
pel & to bileue: & god p. kneue
p. hertis bair wtnelīg: & jat
to hē ye hooly gost: as also to us
& no pig d. uerside bi t. lye us
& hem: & denide ye hertis of hē
bi seip: now p. me what tepten
ze god: to p. itte azol: on ye nec
ke of ye discipulis: which ne p.
we ne p. oure fadris m. tē ber:
but bi ye grace of our lord ihū
crist. we bileue to be lāued: as al
so per: & al ye mltitude heeld pe
es: & herden barnaban & poule.
tellige how grete signes & wo
dis god dide bi hē in hepe me:
& astir p. per helden pees: jame
anwseride & seide: biyēn heere
ze me: symōit telde how god
visitide first to take of hepene
me a peple to his name: & ye
wordis of p. oestis acorde to hē
as it is writū: astir p. p. p. p.
turne azen: & bilde ye taberna
cle of dāny p. felde don: & p. p. p.
bilde azen pe cast don pigis of it

And 7 thal reple it. y'opur me
seke ye lord: & alle folkis on whi
che my name is clepid to helpe.
ye lord doyngis vis pig sey fro
ye world ye werk of ye lord is
knowen to ye lord for which pig
I deme he y'of hepen me ben co
uertid to god to be not diseid
but to write to he: y'pei abstei
ne he fro defouligis of manne
tis. & fro fornicaciou. & straung
lid pigis & blood for moyses of
elde tymes hay i alle citees. he
y'preche hi in synagogis: wher
by ech sabot he is red y'ane it
pleside to ye aposthis & to ye el
dre me wy alle ye churche: to
chese me of he. & sende to antio
che wy poull & barnabas / judas
y'was named barlabas. & silas
ye firste me amog bryse & wo
ten bi ye hondis of he / aposthis
eldre brysen to he y'ben at an
tioche & sune & silas. brysen of
hepe me: greetige for we her
den y'sume wente out fro us.
& troublede zow wy wordis & t
neted vplodou zow soulis to
whiche me we comaudide not
it pleside to us gaderid ito con
to chese me & sende to zow wy
oure moost doreworpe barna
bas & poull me y'zauen her ly
ues: for ye name of our lord
ihū cū / yer fore we sente judas
& silas. & ye ihūle telle ye same
pigis to zow by wordis for it is
seyn to ye hooly goost & to us to
putte to zow no pig more of char
ge pā pes neteful pigis: y'ze
absteine zow fro ye offrid. y'i
gis of mannetis. & blood stra
ngid & fornicaciou fro whiche

ze kepige zow: ihūle do wel far
ze ihel / y'fore ye were let go &
came down to antioche: & whie
ye miltitute was gaderid: yei to
ken ye epistle. which whiche wha
yei hadde red: yei ioyede on ye
comfort & judas & silas. & yei
for yei were pletis: confortide
bryper & cōfermyden wy fil
many wordis: but after y'pei
hadden be yere a lital whie: yei
were let go of brysen wy pees
to hem pat hadden sent hem: but
it was seyn to silas: to dwelle
yei / & judas wente aloue to
ierlin: & poull & barnabas dwel
te at antioche: techige & pchige
ye word of ye lord. wy ope ma
nye: but after summe dages: poull
sende to barnabas: & he we azen
& vlyte brysen by alle citees i
whiche we han prechid ye word
of ye lord: hou yei ha he & barna
bas wolde take wy hi iohū: y'
was named markus: but poull
preide hi: y'he y'departide fro
he fro pamfilihe. & were not w
he into ye werk: ihūle not be
relleped / & dissencion was mō
so y'pei departide actyng: &
barnabas took mark & cam bi
boot to cyprē / and poull ches
sylvas & wente forp fro ye bry
en. & was bitakē to ye grace of
god. & he wente by sune & calice.
& cōfermyde ye churche: coman
dige to kepe ye beentis of apos
thys & eldre men. ¶ **212** ¶
Ad he cam to derben & lū
tram: & lo aduſtiple was
yei bi name thymothe
ye loue of a jewelle criste & of
ye fadir hepen & brysen y'were

in lūtris & jconye: zeldide good wit
nellig to hi: & poull wolde y'vis
nā ihūle go forp wy hi: & he
took & curtidide hi: for ye wis
y'were in ye placis for alle whi
te: y'his fadir was hepen whie
yei pashide by citees: yei bitoke
to hem to kepe ye techigis yat
were demed of aposthis & eldre
me: y'were en at ierlin: & ye dū
chis were cōfermyd in seip & en
creſiden i nonbre ech dave: & yei
pashide frigie & ye citree of ga
lathie: & were forbedū of ye hoo
ly goſt to speke ye word of god i
alie: & whie yei came into myſie:
yei asandē to go into bithynye.
& ye spirit of ihū onſtride not
hem: but whie yei hadde pashid
by myſie: yei came don to troa
de: & a viliou by nyzt was the
wid to poull: but ama of macido
nye y'flood. priede hi & seide: go
pon ito macidonye & help us: &
as he hadde seyn ye viliou: and
we souzte to go forp into macido
nye: & were mand certeyn yat
god hadde clepid vs to preche to
he / and we zeden bi ihūp fro tro
ade & camen to samatrachia i
strentz coms: & ye day linyge to
neapolis: & fro pēms to filippis.
y'is ye firste part of macedonye.
ye citee coloupe: & were in vis ci
tee summe dages: & spake to gidre
& in ye day of sabotis. we witen
forp wy pounte ye zate blydis ye
flood wher preier semede to be:
& we laten & spake to wyemen y'
came to gidre: & alwōman lidda
by name a ppurelle of ye citee of
tiatrens: woulthpige god her
de: whos herte ye lord opempe.

to zyne tent to res pigis. y'were
seid of poull: & whie she was bap
tised & hir hous: she preide & seide
if ze han demyd y' / I am feryful
to ye lord: entre ze into my hous
& dwelle: & she cōstreyne us
& it was don whie we zede to pi
er: y'adampsel y'hadde a spirit
of dympnaciou mette us: which
zaf greet wympyng to hir lordis
& dympnyng: vis lūkede poull & vs:
& cryede & seide: pes me ben ser
uantis of ye hys god: y'tellen to
zow ye wepe of helpe: & vis she
dite in many dages: & poull souz
de & turnede: & seide to ye spirit
I comande pee i ye name of ihū
cū: y'pon go out of hū: & he re
te out i ye same our: & ye lordis
of hū syzen y'ye hope of her
wympyng wente alwepe: & yei
tooken poull & silas & ledde into
ye doom place to ye pncis: & yei
brouzte hem to ye manestratis.
& seide: pes me distrublen our
citee: for yei be jewis. & thewe
a custom which it is not leefful
to us to rellepye ney to: lypen
we ben romayns: & ye peple &
manestratis rinen azen hem.
& whane yei hadde to rent ye ca
tis of he: yei comaudide hem to
be betū wy zerdis: & whie yei
hadde zow to hem many wordis:
yei sente hem ito pſou: & coman
dide to ye keper: y'he ihūle
kepe he diligently: and whie
he hadde take such a precept: he
putte he ito ye yner pſou: & strei
nede ye feet of he in a tree: and
at mydnyt poull & silas wozsthi
pede & heriede god: & yei y'were
in kepnyng: herte he & lūdenly a

greet erpe moing was maid.
so þe foundamētis of þe p̄lou
werē moued / & anon alle þe do
zis werē openid / & þe boondis
of alle werē losid / & þe keperē
of þe p̄lou was abakid. & 81
þe zatis of þe p̄lou openid. &
wip a liberd draun out he wolde
haue slakid hi sif. & geside þ
þe mē þe werē boundid hadden
fled / but pouil criede wip a gre
et / vois & seide / do pou no harm
to þi sif. for alle we ben heet /
þe arde hit & entide. & tre
blid & fel dou to pouil & to silas
at her feet / & he brouzte hem w
oute forp. & seide / lordis what bi
houey me to do: þe be maid la
af. & þe seide / bilene poui þe
lord ihu. & poui shalt be saif &
wip hous / & þe spaken to hi þe
word of þe lord: wip alle þe we
re in his hous / & he took þe m
þe ilke our of þe nyzt. & wip
shide her boundis / & he was bap
tild. & al his hous anon / & whie
he hadde led he into his hous: he
settide to hem aboord / & he was
glad wip al his hous. & bilene
to god / & whie day was come:
þe magistratis sente cathepol
his & seide / deliue þou po men /
þe kepe of þe p̄lou telde þe
wordis to pouil: þe maistratis
han sent þe be deliuerid /
non þe go ze out: & go ze in
pees / & pouil seide to he / þe sen
ten us mē of rome ito p̄lou /
werē betu openid & ondapned.
& now þeuch þe bryngē us out:
not so but come þe: he sif &
deliue us out / & þe cathepol
his teelde þe wordis to þe ma

istratis / & þe dzedde: for þe her
den þe werē romayn / & þe ca
mē & biledide he & þe brouzte he
out. & þe seide / þe shuld go out
of þe citee / & þe zede out of þe
p̄lou: & entide to lide / & whie
þe lizen bryen: þe coustard
hem & zeden forp. ¶ C. 261. //

Ad whie þe hadde par
tid by amfipolis & apolo
nye: þe came to theslo
myk. wher was a synagoge of
jewis / & bi custom pouil entide to
he: & by þe sabotis he declaride
to he of scripturis / & openide
þe whie þe it bihofte cū to sil
fre: & ryle azen fro deep / & þe
is ihu cū. who / telle to 301 /
sūme of he bileneid: & werē
jorned to pouil & to silas / & ag
et mēitide of hepe mē wozthi
pete god: & noble wipmen not a
fenge / but þe þe was hadde eipe.
& token of þe cony peple sūme
yuel mē / & whie þe hadde maid
a cupany þe monede þe citee /
þe came to jalonis hous. & sen
ten he to bryge forp amog þe pe
ple / & whie þe fouden he not
þe drowe jalon & sūme bryen
to þe p̄nces of þe citee / & cryede
þe se it ben þe mone þe word.
& hidir þe came: whie jalon rel
sepete / & þe alle doen azen þe
maidenētis of þe empor: & se
þe ihu is anoy k̄ng / & þe mone
den þe peple & þe p̄nces of þe ci
tee heerige þe pigis / & whie
satisfacōn was takū of jalon.
& of ope þe leten pouil & silas go
and anon bi nyzt bryen leeten
silas go into beroan / & whie þe
came ridir þe entiden ito þe si

nagoge of þe jekis / but þe se
ren þe wozner of he pat ben at
thesolomk / whie resseynede
þe word wip al deli. eche day se
lige scripturis. þe þe pigis had
den he so / and maup of hem bile
uete. & of hepe wipmen onest & mē
not a fenge / but whie þe reibis
tellalomp hadde knowe þe alid at
bero. þe word of god was p̄chid
of pouil: þe came ridir moingē
& disturbige þe multitudine / & þe
anon bryen deliueid pouil: þe
shuld go to þe see / but silas & thi
mothe dwelten þe / & þe ledde
forp pouil: ledde hi to atenys / and
whie þe hadde take a maident
of hi to silas & to thymothe. pat
ful hyngly þe shuld come to
hi: þe wente forp / & whie pouil
abood he at atenys: his spirit was
moued / hi. for he saw þe citee 30
uū to ydolatrie / þe he disputi
de / & þe synagoge wip þe jekis &
wip mē þe wozthipite god & in
þe dom place bi alle dapes to hem
þe herden / & sūme epecturis & sto
lens & filofis disputide wip hy
& sūme seide / what wole þe se
re of wordis seie / & ope seide / he se
mey to be a tellere of newe fendi.
for he treelde to he ihu & þe azenry
fig. & þe token & ledde hi to areo
page & seide / moūn we wite what
is þis newe doctryn pat is leid of
þe: for þe bryge þe sūme newe
pigis to our eers / þe we wole
wite: what þe pigis wolen be /
for alle mē of atenys & counlis
herbord zanen tent to noon opir
pig: but ey to seie ey to heer sūm
newe pig: & pouil stood i þe m̄d
del of areopage & seide / mē of ate

nis by alle pigis / & se 301 as þe nye
wozthiperis / for / passide & 302
maimētis: & found an aut i whi
ch was writū to þe vnknoūge
þe for whie pig ze vnknoūge
wozthipen: þe pig / & thence to
god / & made þe word & alle pigis
þe in it: þe for he is lord of hene
ne & erpe. dwelly not i tēphs maid
wip hond / ne þe wozthipid bi mā
nes hoondis ne þe hāp uete of ony
pig: for he zynep hyf to alle mē. &
bryngē & alle pigis / & made of con
al þe kynde of mē to enhabite on al
þe face of þe erpe. detimpyge ty
mes ordeyned. & termes of þe dis
ellig of he to seke god / if þe panen
ture þe feelen hi ey syniden: þe
he be not fer fro ech of 301 / for i hi
we lye & mouen & ben / as also li
me of 301 poetis seide / & we ben
allid þe kynde of hi / þe forze sūp we
ben of þe kynde of god: we shuld
not deme pat godly pig is lyk gold
& siluer eyr stoon. eyr to graung
of craft of mā / for god dispilip þe
tymes of þe vnknoūge: & now
shewip to mē. þe alle enywhere
don penance / for þe he hāp ordey
ned adap. in whie he shal deme
þe word i equitye. & amā in whie
he ordeynede & zaf seip to alle mē.
& reilde hi fro deep / & whie þe
hadde herd þe azenryfig of deed
mē / sūme stornede. & sūme seide /
we shuld heer þe est of þe pig
so pouil wente out of þe m̄ddil of
he / but sūme drowe to hi: & bilene
de. amog whie denyl areopagite
was / & alwān bi name damaris.
¶ C. 262. //

Ad ope mē wip he / & 303
fer þe pigis pouil zede out
of atenys: & cam to arethe

he found amā aquila by name of
ponte bi kynde. p^r late cam fro pta
lye. & prillille his wyf. for p^r clau
dus comandide alle ierhis to de
parte fro rome. & he cam to he
& for he was of pe same craft. he
dwellide wth hem & brougte. & pei
were of roop makeris craft. & he
he disputide in pe synagoge by
eth sabot puttige among pe na
me of pe lord ihu. & he couchede
iehis & greekis. & whie silas &
tymothe came fro macedoupe.
poul zaf bilynele to pe word. &
whiehe to pe ierhis. p^r ihu is
crist. but whie pei azeuseide &
blakemyde. he thooke alker his
doyis & seide to hem. zom. blood
be on zom. heed. j. shal be dene
fro heims forp. & shal go to hepe
me. and he pallide fro penes. &
entride into pe hous of a nist mā
tite by name pat worlthipide god
whos hous was joynd to pe sy
nagoge. and crispe pnce of pe sy
nagoge. bilynele to pe lord whi
al his hous. & manys of pe cozi
thes herde & bilynele. & were of
tempe. & pe lord seide bi nyxt to po
ul bi aduision. nple pou drede. but
speke & be not stille. for j. am w^e
pee & no mā shal be put to p^e
to noye pee. for moche peple is
to me i pis citee. & he dwelide
pere azer. & hie monepis techi
ge a mog. he ye word of god. but
whie galhon was pconhil of achare.
ierhis rulen up whi do wille azes
poul. & ledde hⁱ to pe doom & sei
de. azen. pe laue. pis coucelip me
to worlthipe god. & whie poul
bigan to oppne his mouy. gal
leon seide to pe ierhis. if p^r wer

om. Wickid pig. ey puel trespas
ze ierhis. rithy j. shulde suffre
zon. but if questions ben of pe
word & of names of zom. laue.
bise zon silt. j. wole not be domel
mā of pes pigis. & he droof hem
fro pe doom place. and alle tooke
softenes pnce of pe synagoge.
& smote hi bifore pe doom place.
& no pig of pes was to charge
to galhon. & whie poul hadde a
bidū many dapes. he seide far
wel to brpere & by boot cam to
sirie. and prillille & aquila came
wth hⁱ. whiche hadde chypid his
heed in tencris. for he hadde anu
& he ca to effecie & pere he leste
hem. & he zede yn to pe synagoge.
& disputide wth ierhis. and whie
pei pceide. & he shulde dwelle more
tyme. he consentide not. but he
made farwel & seide. est. j. shal
turue agen to zon if god wole. &
he wente forp fro effecie. & he ca
dou to cesarie. & he zede. ap. & gr
ette pe churche & cam dou to an
tioche. & whie he hadde dwelid
pere subhat of tyme. he wente
forp wth luge by reike ym. & pe
citrecy of galathie. & frugie. &
cofermyde alle pe diltipis. but
a ieris appollo bi name amā of
ahlandre of kynde amā eloquet
cam to effecie. & he wth mth in
dripturis. pis mā was taut. pe
weye of pe lord. & was feruent
in spirit. & spak. & tauge dilige
ly po pigis. & were of ihu. & hie
oonly pe baptym of john. & pis
mā bigan to do trithly in pe syna
goge. & whie whie p^ralle & aquila
herde. pei tooken hⁱ & more dilige
ly expolknetē to hⁱ pe weye of

pe lord. & whie he wole go to a
caye. brypen certide & wroten
to pe diltipis. p^r pei shulde resley
ue hⁱ. whiche whie he cam. zaf
moche to hem. & bilynele. for he
greetly oucam ierhis. & whie
de openly by stpturis. & ihu is crist.
ad it bifelle. **A** whie apollo was at co
rith. & poul whie he had
de go pe lyet. coctis he cam to
effecie. & found sume of diltipis.
& he seide to hⁱ. whie ze p^r bily
nen han resleyued pe hooly gost.
& pei seide to hⁱ. but ney we han
herd. if pe hooly gost is. & he sei
de. p^r fore in whar pig ben ze bap
tild. & pei seide. in pe baptym of
john. and poul seide. john bapti
side pe peple in baptym of pe
nanice. & tauge. & pei shulden
bilynele i hⁱ. & was to conyge aff
hⁱ. & is in ihu. whie pei herden
pes pigis. pei weren baptild in
pe name of pe lord ihu. & whie
poul hadde leid on hem his hondis.
pe hooly gost cam in h^e. & pei spa
ken wth langagis. & p^rfecete. and
alle were al mest tibelue me. &
he zede into pe synagoge. & spak.
wth trith. pe monepis diltipis.
ge. & tettege of pe bigdom of god.
but whie sume were hardid. &
bilynele not. & curside pe weye
of pe lord. bifore pe mltitude. he
zede asey fro h^e & departide pe
diltipis. & disputide in pe stole of
a mth mā ech day. pis was don
by tibeys zeeris. so alle p^r dwelide
mth herte pe word of pe lord. ie
wis & heyen me. & god bile vtues
not smale bi pe hond of poul. so
p^r on ey me pe sudaries weren

born fro his bodie. and syneleis
departide fro hem. & Wickid spiri
tis wenten out. but allo sume
of pe ierhis exortis zede abonde
& alayde to depe pe name of pe lord
ihu crist. on hem. & hadde puel spi
ritis & seide. j. coure zon bi ihu.
whom poul p^rechy. & pe were
senene sones of a jew stene a pnce
of p^rechis. & dide pis pig. but pe
puel spirit anliberide. & seide to
h^e. j. knowe ihu. & j. knowe poul.
but whie ben ze. & pe mā in whiche
was pe wroste deuel. lypide on h^e.
& hadde vidozie of hope. & was strog
azens h^e. & pei nakid & wondid fled
de asey fro pat hous. & pis pig
was maid knowu to alle ierhis. &
to hepe me. pat dwellen at effeci.
and drede feldou on h^e alle. & pei
magnyfiete pe name of pe lord
ihu. & many me bilynele. & came
knowlechege. & tellige her deedis.
And many of hem p^r anbeden
curious pigis. brougte to gidre
bookis & brenede h^e bifore alle
me. & whie ye phis of po were
acontyd. pei fouden money of
fifty pouland pens. so strougth
pe word of god. were & was con
fermyd. and whie pes pigis were
fild. poul spose in spirit. aff
pat macedoupe was pallid. & asey
to go to ierlin. & seide. for asur pat
j. shal be p^r. & bⁱhoney me also
to se rome. & he sente into mace
doupe tibeys me. & mth p^ride
to hⁱ tymothe & eraste. & he dwel
lde for a tyme i aspe. & agreeet tron
blyng. was maid in pat dape. of
pe weye of pe lord. for amā deme
trie by name a wozcher. in lither.
makide siluerne housis to dyane

ƿas to crafty me moche wynnys
whiche he cleped to gidre he pat we
ren suche man werke: ƿe seide
me ze witte: ƿ of ƿis craft wynn
nyng is to vs: ƿ ze seen ƿ heere
pat ƿis poul coucely ƿ turney
anbey moche peple not onuly of
effeie. but alinest of al asye. ƿ serp
ƿ rei ben not goddis ƿ ben maid
wyr hondis: ƿ not onuly ƿis part
shal be in perel to us to come in
to reprees: but also ƿe teple of
re greet dyan shal be acountid to
nouzt: ƿ he ƿe maestre of hir
shal bygyne to be distried: who
al asye ƿe world wouthpyn
whiche ƿes ƿigis were herd: ƿei
were fillid wyr ure ƿ cryde ƿ sei
de: greet is ƿe dyan of effecians:
ƿe citee was fillid wyr cofuci
on: ƿ ei waden an asant wyr co
wille into ƿe teatre ƿ took ƿay
us ƿ aridark me of macedonie
felais of poul: ƿ whiche poul wolde
haue entrid into ƿe peple ƿe disti
phis suffrid not: ƿ also sune of
ƿe pures of alie ƿ were his fren
dis: sente to hi ƿ preide pat he sh
ulde not ƿyne hi self into ƿe tea
tre: ƿ ope men cryde oyr ƿig: for
ƿe chyrche was confusid: ƿ many
wisten not for what cause ƿei we
re come to gidre: but of ƿe peple
ƿeidrowe alwey oon ablandre whi
le ierwis putte hi fory: ƿ alilandre
axide wyr his hond cience: ƿ wolde
zele a resou to ƿe peple: and as
ƿei kneilen ƿ he was a ierw: oo
vois of alle me was maid cryn
ge as by tibe yne ouris: greet
dyan of effecians: ƿ whiche ƿe str
be hadde ceessid ƿe peple: he seide
men of effeie what ma is he ƿ

knowy not ƿ ƿe citee of effecians
is ƿe wouthpyn of greet dyan:
of ƿe child of iuber: ƿ fore whiche
it may not be azenleid to ƿes ƿi
gis: it bihouey ƿon to be ceessid: ƿ
to do no ƿis folly: for ze han brou
ƿes me neyr sacrologeris. neyr
blasfemyge ƿour goddness: ƿ ƿif
demetrie ƿe werke me ƿ be wyr
hi: han cause azen ony ma. ƿ ben
courtis of domes ƿ fugis: aauile
ƿei ech oyr: ƿ ze seken out of
ony oyr ƿig: it may be also lid:
ƿe lawful chyrche: for whiche we be
in perel to be repreyde of ƿis
dages dissencio: lye no ma is
gilty of whom we mouln zelde re
lou of ƿis reuyng to gidre: ƿ wha
ne he hadde seid ƿis ƿig he leet ƿe
peple go. **A**fter ƿe noule ceessid:
poul depite ƿe distuphis ƿ
monestrie he: ƿ seide farwel: he
wente fory to go into macedonie:
ƿ whiche he hadde walkid bi ƿe co
tis: ƿ hadde monestrid hem by many
wordis: he cam to grece: wher
whiche he hadde be ƿe moneyis
ƿe ierwis leyden alpius for hi ƿ
was to sayle into sirie: ƿ he had
de coucel to turne azen by mace
donie: and solipater of purry bo
uence folowide hi of thesolompe
tis astrak ƿ secidus ƿ gayus de
bens ƿ tymothe: ƿ ahang. titic
ƿ trofym: ƿes for ƿei wente bi
fore: abooden us at troade: for we
shippid afir ƿe dages of ƿerf lo
ues fro shippis ƿ came to he at
troade in fyue dages: wher we
dwelten senene dages: ƿ in ƿe fir
st day of ƿe wofe whiche we ca
me to breke breed: poul distupide

wyr he ƿ shulde go fory in ƿe
morwe: ƿ he drouz along ƿe ser
mon til into mydayt: ƿ many
laupis were in ƿe soler: wher
we were gedrid to gidre: ƿ azen
man cuticis bi name: lat on ƿe
wyndonke: whiche he was fallu
into an heuy sleep: while poul dis
putide longe: al slepyng he fel
doun fro ƿe yad stage: ƿ he was
takn vp: ƿ was brouzt ded: to
whom whiche poul cam dou: he
lay on hi ƿ bichpide ƿ seide: nyle
ze be trouhld: for his soule is i hi
ƿ he wente vp ƿ brak breed ƿ cet
and spak ynou: vnto ƿe day: ƿ
so he wente fory: ƿ ei brouzten
ƿe child alyne: ƿ ei were coufor
tid greetly: and we weten vp i
to a ship: ƿ shippid into allon:
to take poul fro ƿenis: for lo he
hadde distupid to make nurney
by lond: ƿ whiche he found us in
allon: we taken hi ƿ came to mu
tilene: ƿ fro ƿenis we shippid
in ƿe day sulbyge: ƿ we camen
azen chyn: and anoy day we ha
uenede at samu: ƿ in ƿe day ligh
ge we came to mylete: ƿ poul ƿ
poside to shype on to effeli: lest
ony taryng wer maid to hi in
alye: for he hyede. if it wer pos
sible to hi: ƿ he shulde be i ƿe day
of pentecoste at ierlm: fro myle
te he sente to effeli: ƿ cleped ƿe
gretteste me of burpe of ƿe ch
yrche: ƿ whiche ƿei came to hi ƿ we
re to gidre: he seide to he: ze witte
fro ƿe firste day in whiche i cam
into asye: how wyr ƿon by ech
tyne i was seruyng to ƿe lord
wyr al mekenesse ƿ myldenesse
ƿ teeris ƿ teptaciou ƿ felden

to me: of alpiyngis of ierwis: how
i wrydrouz not of ƿfitable ƿm
gis to ƿon: ƿ i telde not to ƿon ƿ
taunte ƿon openly ƿ by honlis: ƿ
i wrytude to ierwis ƿ to hepen
me penance into god: ƿ serp i
to our lord ihu ƿ et: and now lo
i am bound in spirit ƿ go into
ierlm: ƿ i knowe not what ƿm
gis shule come to me in it: but
ƿ ƿe hooly gost bi alle citees wit
nessid to me: ƿ serp ƿ boondis ƿ
tribulaciou at ierlm abide me:
but i drete no ƿis of ƿese: ney
i make my lyf ƿcioulet: ƿa my
sils: so ƿ i ende my courel ƿ ƿe
my misterie of ƿe word: whiche
i relesynde of ƿe lord ihu: to wit
nelle ƿe gospel of ƿe grace of god:
and now lo i woot ƿ ze shulen
no more se my face: alle ze by wh
ich i pallide pzechige ƿe figdom
of god: wherfore i wrytelle to ƿon
ƿis day: pat i am dene of ƿe blo
od of alle me: for i flez not anwey
ƿ i telde not to ƿon al ƿe coucil
of god: take ze tent to ƿon ƿ to al
ƿe flou in whiche ƿe hooly gost hap
sett ƿon bishops to reule ƿe chir
che of god: whiche he purchasid
wyr his blood: i woot ƿ afir my
depar tyng raneymge wobies
shullen entre to ƿon: ƿ spare not
ƿe flou: ƿ me lpekyge shre wid
pigns: shule ryle of ƿon silf: ƿ
ƿei leide away distuphis afir hem:
for whiche ƿig wake ze holdige
in myde: ƿ bi ƿe zeer. nyzt ƿ day
i ceessid not wyr teeris monel
tise ech of ƿon: ƿ now i butake
ƿon to god: ƿ to ƿe word of his
grace: ƿ is myzt to edifie ƿ ƿue
eritage in alle pat ben maid hoo

ly and of man / couetide siluer
 & gold cyr dop as zou gile wite
 for to po pigis y were nedeful to
 me & to pese y ben wy me: pes
 houndis mynstride / alle pes ym
 gis / thewde to zou: for so it bi
 honey me trauelge to resley
 ne syl me / & to hane mynde of
 pe word of pe lord ihu: for he sei
 de it is more blisful to 3yue pan
 to resleyne / & whne he hadde seid
 pes pigis: he knehte & he priede
 wy alle hem / and greet wepyn
 of alle men was maid / & pei fel
 den on pe necke of poul: & kille
 de hi / and forwite moost in pe
 word y he seide: for pei shulen
 no more se his face / & pei lette
 hy to pe shippe. **C**
And whne it was don y
 we shulde saile & weren
 pallid akey fro he: wy streize
 cours we came to chon: & pe day
 synge to rodus: & fro penys to
 patram: & fro penys to myza
 and whne we fouden a shyp pal
 lige ouer to fenyce we weten
 vp into it: & sailede fory / and
 whne we apperiden to cypre:
 we lesten it at pe lesthale & lay
 lede into ffirye & came to cyre
 for per pe shyp shulde be vuch
 argid / and whne we fouden disti
 phis: we dwelhte per senene day
 es / whiche seiden bi spn it to po
 ul: y he shulde not go vp to ie
 rusalem: and whne pe dapes we
 re fillid: we zede fory: & alle me
 wy wyues & childe ledde fory
 vs wyoute pe citee: & we kne
 led in pe see byynke & we pzei
 eden / and whne we hadden ma
 ad far wel to gidre: wente up

into pe shyp: & pei turnede az
 ito her oibue placis: & whne
 pe shyp sailge was fillid fro
 tire: we came don to golomga
 da: & whne we hadde gret wel
 pe bypen: we dwelhte o day at
 hem: & anof day we zeden fory:
 & came to cesarie: and we cur
 den ito pe hous of filip eungeta
 y was oon of pe senene: & dwelhte
 at hi: & to hi weren com donz
 virgyns y profectede: & whne we
 dwelhte yere by sū dapes: appo
 fete agabus by name cam ouer
 fro iudee / vis whne he cam to us:
 took pe گردil of poul: & boond to
 gidre his feet: & hōdis & seide: pe
 hooky goft sen pes pigis / vis whne
 shulen bynde i ierlm pe mā whos
 is vis گردil: & pei shulde bitake
 into hevene mēms hōdis: whiche
 pig whne we herde: we pzeiden
 & pei y were of pat place y he
 shulden not go vp to ierlm: yā
 ne poul answere: & seide: whar
 doen ye wepige & tmentige myn
 herte: for i am redy not oonly
 to be boūdu: but also to die i ierlm
 for pe name of pe lord ihu: & whā
 ne we myte not coucele hi: we
 were stille & seiden: pe wille of pe
 lord be don: & afur pes dapes we
 were maid redy & wenten up to
 ierlm: & sūme of pe distyphs ca
 me wy us fro cesarie: & ledde
 wy hem aman jalon of cypre an
 eld distyple at ishom we shulden
 be herbord: & whne we came to
 ierlm: bypen resleyne vs wil
 fully: & in pe day synge poul en
 tre wy us to james: & alle pe el
 dre me were گردid: whiche whā
 ne he hadde grett: he seide in alle

pyngis: what god hadde don i here
 me bi pe mynsterie of hi: & whā
 ne pei herden: rei magnifide god
 & seide to hi: broyr y seest how
 many poulādis ben i ierlm:
 y han bilened to god: & alle be lo
 ueris of pe lawe: & pei herde of
 pee: y pon techit departyng fro mo
 yles: of pilke ierlm y ben by hepe
 me: pat sepen y pei oken not to
 circūde her lones: ne y oken to
 entre bi custom: y fore what is: it
 bihouey y pe mltitude come to gi
 dre: for pei shulen heer: y y art
 come: y fore do pou vis pig: pat
 we sepen to pee: y ben to us fou
 re me: pat hauei adon on hem
 take y pes me: & hale we pee wy
 hem: hongge on he y pe shane her
 heedis: & y alle me wite: y pe pig
 y pei herden of pee be fals: but y
 pou walkst & y silt kepst pe
 lawe: but of pese y bileued of
 hepen me: we wite demyge: y
 pei abtene hem fro pig offrid
 to ydols & fro blood: & also fro strā
 ghid pig: & fro fornicaciō: yāne
 poul took pe me & into pe day
 synge he was purified wy he:
 & entride into pe tēple: & thew
 de pe fillig of dapes of purifying
 til pe offrig: was offrid for ech
 of he: and whne senene dapes we
 ren endid: pe ierlm y were of a
 fye: whne pei sizen hi in pe tem
 ple: sturde al pe peple: & lepen
 hōdis on hi: & cride: me of ur
 helpe ze vs: vis is pe mā yāzen
 pe peple & pe lawe & vis place te
 chy euerywher: alle me: more o
 ner & har led here me into pe tē
 ple: & har desouhd vis hooky pla
 ce: for pei seien trofym of eveli

in pe citee wy hi: whō rei gellide
 y poul hadde broyt into pe tem
 ple: and al pe citee was moued:
 & a rēnyge to gidre of pe peple
 was maid: & pei took poul & dro
 wen hi out of pe tēple: & anoon
 pe zatis were closid: & whne pei
 loynte to sle hi: it was teeld to
 pe tribune of pe ciupany of kniz
 tis: y al ierlm is cofoundid: whiche
 anoon took kniztis & centuriens:
 & ran to he: & whne pei hadden seen
 pe tribune & pe kniztis: pei ceef
 lide to smyte poul: yāne pe tūme
 cam & camte hi: & comandide y
 he wer boūdu wy akey cheynes:
 & aride who he was: & what he
 hadde don: but of pe cride oyr pig
 amōg pe peple: & whne he myte
 knowe no certeyn pig for pe noy
 se: he comandide hi to be led into
 pe castels: & whne poul cam to
 pe grees: it bifel y he was born
 of kniztis for strengye of pe peple:
 for pe mltitude of peple suede hi:
 & cryde take hi akey: & whne po
 ul bigan to be lad into pe castels:
 he seide to pe tūme: wher it is
 leestful to me: to speke ony pig to
 pee: & he seide: kauft pou grek:
 wher y art not pe egyptian: whiche
 bifoze pes dapes monedit a noy
 se: & leddit out into desert: four
 poulend of me mēllaris: & poul
 seide to hi: for i am a jew of tharse
 of cilice a citeleyn whiche cite is
 not vnknoū: & i pzeie y: suffi
 me to speke to pe peple: & whne he
 gultide: poul stood i pe grees: & be
 kemid i pe hood to pe peple: & whne
 a greet silence was maid: he spak in
 cheyl tige & seide: **C**
 & wen & sadis: heer ze

what reſon I ſelde now to you /
 Whie ſime herde I in ebreis tu
 ge he ſpake to hem. per ſame pe
 more ſilence / & he ſeide / I am
 anna a jehs bozn at tharſe of ci
 lue nozithid / & in pis ctee biſy
 dis pe feet of gamahel tauzt bi
 pe treipe of ſadus labe a long
 et of ye labe. as alſo ze alle ben
 today / and I purſuade pis we
 til to pe deep. byndige & bitake
 ge into holdis me & wpmen / as
 pe pnce of peſtis zeldy wituel
 lig to me. & alle ye gretteſte of
 birp of whom alſo I took piſtis
 to bzipeu. & wente to damask /
 to bzipe fro penys me boundu
 to ierlm. I per ſhulde be peyned
 & it was don whyle I zede & nez
 ede to damask. at mydday lude
 ly frohenene a greet plente of
 lzt ſhoon aboute me / & I ſelde
 dou to pe erpe. & herde a vois fro
 heuene ſeyge to me / ſaul ſaul
 what purſuakeſt I me. / it is
 hard to pee to keke azen pe pe
 ke / & I anſwerde / who art I lord
 & he ſeide to me / I am ihu of na
 zareth. who I purſuakeſt / & per
 pat were wy me. azen but pe
 lzt / but per herde not pe vois
 of hi. I ſpake wy me & I ſeide
 lord what ſhal I do / & ye lord ſe
 de to me / ryle pou & go to dama
 ſk. & per it ſhal be ſeid to pee
 of alle pigis whiche it bihonep
 pee to do / & whie I ſis not for
 ye clere of pat lzt. / I was
 led bi pe hoond of ſelows / & I
 cam to damask. & anna ananpe
 I bi pe labe hadde witneſſig
 of alle jehis diwellige i damask.
 cam to me & ſtood nyz. & ſeide

to me / ſaul bzop bihold / & I pe ſame
 our biheld ito hi / & he ſeide / god of de ſa
 ds hap biſore ordeyned I. I per ſhulde
 we pe will of hi / & ſhulde ſe pe ryl
 ma. & hee pe vois of his moyn / for I
 alt be his witneſſe to alle me of pe ryl
 I per haſt ſep & herd / & now what ſhulde
 ryle vp & be baptiſid / & want he a
 piſynes by pe name of hym de
 pid to help / and it was don to
 to me as I turnede azen ito ierlm
 & preide i pe teple. I per ſhulde
 raiſyſthig of ſoule / & I ſis hi lei
 yuge to me / hze pou & go out ſa
 te of ierlm. for per ſhulde not rel
 ſeyne pi witneſſig of me / & I
 ſeide lord per witen I was do
 lige to gidre into ploy. & betige
 bi ſynagogis. hem I ſileneſen
 into pee / & whie pe blood of ſe
 uene pi witneſſe was ſhed out.
 I ſtood nyz & coſentide & kepte
 pe cloris of me I ſlowen hi / &
 he ſeide to me / go pou for I ſhal
 ſende pee ſer to naciou / & per
 herde hy til pis word. & per reſe
 de her vois & ſenden / take away
 fro erpe ſuch aman man / for
 it is not leeſful. pat he lye
 & whie per cride & keſte away
 her cloris. & preſke diſt into
 pe er. pe tribune comandeſt hi
 to be led into caſtels. & to be betu
 wy ſlowyngis. & to be turnetid.
 I he witte for what cauſe per
 cride ſo to hi / and whie per had
 den boundu hi wy cordis. pou
 ſeide to a centurie ſtoudige nyz
 to hi / wher it is leeſful to you
 to ſtonge a romay / & vndap
 ned. & whie pis pig was herd.
 pe centurie wente to pe thune
 & teld to hi & ſeide / what art I

to ſtonge. for pis man is a ci
 teſeyn of rome / & ye tribune
 cam nyz. & ſeide to hi / ſeie pou
 to me wher you art a romay.
 & he ſeide / he / & ye tribune an
 ſwerde / I wy moche ſinne gat
 pis freedom / & pou ſeide / & I
 bozn a ceteſeyn of rome / per
 anoon per I ſhulden haue tur
 metid hi. departid away fro hi.
 & ye tribune dreedle. aſur I he
 witte I he was a ceteſeyn of ro
 me. & for he hadde boundu hi / but
 in pe day ſynge. he wolde bi
 te more diligeſly for what cauſe
 he were aculiſid of ye ierlis. &
 vnbond hi / & comandeſt preſtis
 & al ye coucil. to come to gidre
 and he bzouzte for pou & ſette
 hi amog hem. **¶ 111**
Ad pou biheld into pe
 coucil. & ſeide / bzipeu. I
 wy al good coſtience haue
 ſyned bi fore god. til into pis day.
 and ananpe pnce of preſtis. co
 mandide to men I ſtoden nyz
 hi I per ſhulden ſynge his mo
 ny / yane pou ſeide to hi / I whi
 tid wal god ſynge pee / you ſittu
 & demet me bi pe labe. & azen
 pe labe you comandeſt me to
 be ſynpiu / & per I ſtood nyz. ſeide
 curſit pou pe hzeſte preſt of god.
 & pou ſeide / bzipeu I witte not.
 I he is pnce of preſtis / for it is
 writu / I ſhalt not curſe pe p
 ce of pi peple / but pou witte I
 co party was of ſaduces & peto
 I of ſarilees. & he cryede i pe cou
 cil bzipeu / I am a ſarile. pe ſo
 ne of ſarilees. I am demed of
 pe hope & of azen ylig of deed
 me / & whie he hadde ſeid pis pig.

dillencion was maid bitwix pe
 ſarilees & pe ſaduces & ye mſa
 tude was departid / for ſaduces
 ſeuen I no rylig azen of deed me
 is. neyr angel neyr ſpirit / but
 ſarilees knowlethi eneypr. &
 a greet cry was maid. & ſinne
 of ſarilees riſen vp. & ſongren
 ſeyge / we ſinden no pig of y
 nel in pis ma / what if a ſpirit
 eyr an angel ſpake to hi. & wha
 ne greet dillencion was maid.
 pe tribune dreedle leſt pou ſhul
 de be to drabne of he / & he coman
 dide knytis to go doibn. & to ta
 ke hi fro ye myddel of he. & to le
 de hi into caſtels. & in pe nyz li
 yuge. pe lord ſtood nyz to hym
 & ſeide. be you ſtudeſt / for as I
 haſt witneſſid of me i ierlm.
 ſo it bihonep pee to witneſſe
 alſo at rome / & whie pe day was
 come. ſinne of pe ierlis gadde
 he. & made a vois & ſeide / I per ſh
 ulde ney ete ne dzyne. til per
 ſlowen pou / and I were mo
 pan fourty me I made pis ſike
 rying to gidre / & per wente to
 pe prices of preſtis & eldre me
 & ſeide / wy deuocion we han a
 vorkid I we ſhulde not taſte o
 ny pig. til we ſleen pou / now
 pfore make ze knowu to pe tri
 bune wy pe coucil. I he bzige
 hi for to you as if ze ſhulden
 knowe ſu pig more certeyn of
 hi / & we ben redy to gle hi. by
 fore I he come / & whie pe ſone
 of pouhs eſtir hadde herd ye
 alpies. he cam & entride into pe
 caſtels & treide to pou / & pou
 depide to hi aon of pe centuries
 & ſeide / lede pis zong man to pe

thine: for he had an pig to the
we to hi/ and he took hi/ & ledde
to pe tribune: & sente/ pouil p'is
boudin p'ide me: to lede to pee
pis jong mā. p'hap summe ym
gis to speke to pee/ & pe t'bine
took his hood: & wente wip hi
a hyd'half & aride hi/ what pig
is it p' you haist to the we to me.
he seide/ pe Jewis ben acordid
to p'ree pee. p' to monke p' by
ge for pouil into pe council: as
if pei shulde enquer sū pig more
certeply of hy/ but bileue you
not to he/ for mo pan fourty me
of he alpien hi/ whiche han a
vordid p' pei shulde not ete ney
drinke. til pei slaen hi/ & now pei
ben redy abydyge y biheeste/
p'fore pe t'bine lette pe jong
mā: & comaūdide p' he shulde spe
ke to no man. p' he hadde mand
pes pigis kuonkū to hi/ he depi
de to gidre tiber centuriens: &
he leide to he/ make ze redy tiber
hūdrū kuytis: p' pei go to cesa
rie/ & hozl me seuenty & sper me
tiber hūdrū: fro pe pridde our
of myzt/ & make ze redy an hors
for pouil to ryde on to lede hi/ sent
to flet pe president/ for pe t'bu
ne dzedde lest pe Jewis wolden
take hi/ bi pe weye & sle hi/ & af
tirward he myzte be chalengid as
he hadde take money/ & woot hi
a p'fide: conteynge pes pigis
claudius lissas to pe bette felix
president: hee he/ pis mā p' was
take of pe Jewis & bigan to be
slayn: I cam upon he wip myn
oost & deliued hi/ fro he whue/ I
knew p' he was a romayn/ & I wol
de write pe cause. which pei put

iden azens hi/ & I ledde hi/ to pe
conleil of hem/ & I found p' he was
aculid of questionis of her laue/
but he hadde no cry me wozpū pe
dey epū boondis/ & whue it was
teeld me of pe alpiens p' pei arny
den for hy/ I sente hi/ to pee/ & I
waruede also pe aculteris: pat
pei seye at pee/ fare wel/ and so
pe kuytis as pei were comaū
did taken pouil: & ledde hi/ by myzt
into antipatri den/ & in pe day sup
ge whue pe hozl me were lest p'
shulden go wip hi/ pei turned
azen to pe castels/ & whue pei ca
men to celarie: pei taken pe
p'fide to pe president: & pei sette
also pouil before hi/ & whue he had
de rad & aride of what p'p'uce
he was. & knew p' he was of chi
cie: I shal heer pee he seide. whā
ne ym aculteris comē/ & he comaū
dide hi/ to be kept i pe moot halle
of eroude. ¶ **A**d after fyne dayes. a
many p'ice of prestis cam
doun wip summe eldre me. & cer
cille a fair speker: whiche we
ten to pe president azens pouil &
whue pouil was lomenyde: terail
le bigan to acule hi/ & seide/ whā
ne in moche pees we doen by
pee. & many pigis ben amēdū
by y whylom: enmore & enmore
wher pou best felix we han rel
eyned wip al doring of rankig/
but lett I tarye pe lenger: I
prepe pee shorthy. heere us for
y mekenesse/ we han foundū pis
wickid mā strige dissencion to
alle ierwis in al pe world: & aur
tour of dissencion of pe secte of
nazarens/ & he also enforlid to

desoule pe temple/ whom also we
tooken & wolden deme astur oure
laue/ but lissas pe tribune cam
wip greet strengpe aboug: & de
liued hi/ fro our hondis/ comaū
dide his aculteris: to come to y/
of whom pou demyge maist kno
we of alle pes pigis: of whiche we
aculsen hi/ & Jewis putte to & lei
de: p' pes pigis hadden he so/ & po
ul answeride: whue pe president
gratide hym to seye/ of many
zeeris I knowe pee p' you art do
melman to pis folk: & I shal do
ynouys for me wip good resou/ for
you maist knowe: for to me he
not more pan tiberue dayes: si
pen I cam up to wozlthipe i re
rlm/ & ney in pe tēple pei soude
me disputige wip ouy mā ney
makige concourf of peple ney
in synagogis ney in citee ney
pei mou p'reue to pee of pe whi
che pigis pei nou aculsen me/
but I knowleche to pee pis pig.
p' after pe sette whiche pei seyn
erelie: so I lerne to god pe fadir
& I bileue to alle pigis p' be wri
ti in pe laue & p'fetic/ & I haue
hope in god: whiche also pei he
sist abide pe azeny pig to co
myge of mit me & wickid i pis
pig/ I studie wip oure hit t'p'ng:
to haue cōstience to god & to me
enmore/ but after many zeeris
I cam to do alines dedis to my
folk & offrigis & anoukis: i whiche
pei souden me purtied i pe tem
ple. not wip ciupany ney wip
nople/ & pei causide me & cryden
& leide/ take away our enemy/ &
summe Jewis of asie whiche it
bushote to be now p'sent at pee.

& acule if pei hadde ouy pig a
zens me/ eyr pe se hem silt seie
if pei souden i me ouy pig of
wickidnesse: si pen/ I soude in
pe council/ but ouly of pis vois:
bi whiche I cryede stouidige anoy
he/ for of pe azeny pig of deed
me: I am demyde pis day of zoi/
sopely felix dilayede hem/ and
knew moost certeply of pe
wepe & seide/ whue lissas pe tri
bune shal come doun: I shal
heer zoi/ & he comaūdide to a
centurien to kepe hi/ & p' he had
de reide: ney to forbete ouy mā
to mynistr of his oune pigis
to hi/ & after summe dayes. felix
cam wip drubille his wyf pat
was a ierbelie: & depide pouil &
herde of hi/ pe fery p' is i ca dhi/
& whue he disputide of ryzal
nesse & chastite & of dome to co
myge: felix was maad t'reblige
& answeride/ p' p'teyney noty go:
but in tyme conuenable/ I shal
clepe pee/ also he hopide: p' mo
ney shulde be zoiū to hi/ of pouil/
for whiche pig he depide hy/ &
spak wip hi/ & whue tiberze
ris were fillid: felix took a sic
cellour porcius fectus/ & flet
wilde yme grace to Jewis: & lette
pouil boudū. ¶ **C.** ¶ **Hb.**
¶ **T**herfore whue fectus ca
into pe p'p'uce after pe
p'ide day: he wente up to ieru
salem fro celarie/ & pe princes
of prestis & pe wozpette of pe
Jewis wente to hy azens pouil:
& preiden hi/ & aride gre azens
hi/ p' he shulde comaūde hi/ to be
led to ierlm/ & pei sette alpiens
to slee hi/ in pe weye/ but fectus

answering: y^e poul shulde be ke
pt i celarie/sopeh y^e he hi self
shulde pcede more answyly/ per
fore he seide/ per y^e m^e you ben my
ty: come don to gidre/ & if ony
cryme is in y^e man: acule y^e i
hi/ & he dwelle amog^s he more
pan eyte epr ten dayes: & cam
don to celarie/ & y^e tof day he
sat for domesna: & comaudide
poul to be brouzt/ and whane
he was brouzt fory: Ierhis stode
aboute hy whiche came don fro
ierlm/ azens hi many & greuous
causis: whiche y^e m^e pte not
pene/ for poul zeldide resou m
alle y^e p^e n^e azens y^e laue
of Ierhis n^e azens y^e teple:
n^e azens y^e empour/ I h^e nede
ony pig/ but festus wolde do
grace to y^e Ierhis: & answeri
de to poul/ & seide/ wolt y^e go up
to ierlm/ & y^e be demed of y^es
y^e p^e b^efore me/ & poul seide/
at y^e doom place of y^e emp
our/ I stonde: where it bihouep
me to be demyd/ I haue not noy
ed y^e Ierhis: as you knowist
wel/ for y^e I haue noyed. epr
don ony pig/ wozp deyr: I forla
ke not to dye/ but if no pig of
po is y^e p^e aculen me: no ma
may zyne me to h^e: I appele to
y^e empour/ pane festus spak
w^e y^e coucil: & answeride/ to
y^e empour/ you hast appellid: to
y^e emp^e y^e thalt go/ & whne su
dayes were passid: Agrippa
fig/ & beroupte came don to
celarie to welcome festus: &
whne y^e dwelle y^e many
dayes: festus thewde to y^e
fig of poul: & seide/ a man is

left bound of felie: of which wha
ne y^e was at ierlm: pnces of p^e
tis & y^e eldre me of Ierhis came
to me: & aride dagnacion azen
hy/ to whiche y^e aliveride/ y^e it is
not cust to romayns to dagne
ony man: b^efore y^e he y^e aculid
haue his aculeris present: &
take place of defendig to putte
auy y^e crimes y^e ben put a
zens hy/ y^e fore whane y^e
came to gidre h^e don/ w^e outen
ony delay i y^e day luyng. I sat
for domesna: & comaudide y^e
ma to be brouzt/ & whne his an
seris stode: y^e seide no cause of
whiche y^e p^e I hadde suspicion
of y^enel/ but y^e hadde azens hy
su questionis of her y^e y^e wozp
pyng: & of oon ihu deed: wh^e poul
assumide to lyue/ & y^e d^entide
of such maner question: & seide/
wher he wolde go to ierlm: & y^e
to be demyd of y^e p^e y^e but
for poul appelede y^e he shulde be
kept to y^e knowyng of y^e emp^e:
I comaudide hi to be kept: til y^e se
de hi to y^e emp^e/ and agrippa se
de to festus/ I my self wolde hee
re y^e ma/ & he seide to moxle y^e
thalt heere hi/ & on petof day
whne agrippa & beroupte came
w^e greet desir/ and entride m
to y^e auditoie w^e tribunes &
y^e p^encipal me of y^e citee: whne
festus bad poul was brouzt/
& fest seide/ fig agrippa & alle
me y^e ben w^e y^e seen y^e ma
of which al y^e m^eitude of
Ierhis p^ede me at ierlm/ & aride
& cride: y^e he shulde lyue no l^ege
but y^e found y^e he hadde don no
pig wozp of deyr/ & y^e deme to

seide hi to y^e emp^e: for he appeli
de y^e p^e y^e of which ma: y^e haue
not certeyn: what y^e p^e I thal
w^ete to y^e lord/ for which y^e p^e
I brouzte hi to you: & moost to y^e
poul fig agrippa: y^e whne arig
is maid: y^e haue what y^e thal w^e
te/ for it is ley to me w^e y^e p^e
resou: to seide abowdū mā &
not to signyfie y^e cause of hy/

A seide to poul it is luffe
ad to y^e: to speke for y^e
salf/ pane poul heeld fory y^e ho
ond: & bigan to zelde resou of al
le y^e p^e in whiche y^e am aculid
of y^e Ierhis/ you fig agrippa/ I
gelle me blethid at y^e: whne y^e
thalt defende me y^e day/ moost
for you knowist alle y^e p^e y^e pat
ben amog^s Ierhis: customs & q^e
tionis/ for which y^e p^e I bleche:
heere me paciently for alle Ierhis
y^e b^efore knenben me fro y^e bi
gynnyng knowe my lyf fro zong
y^e: pat fro y^e bigynnyng was in
my folk i ierlm: if y^e wolen be
re witnesig: y^e by y^e moost
certeyn sette of oure rehgiou:
I lynde afarilee/ & now for y^e
hope of repmission y^e is maid
to oure fadris of god: y^e stonde
sugget in doom: in which hope
oure tibelue lnyagis seruyge
m^ez & day hopen to come/ of
which hope: s^er kyng I am ac
culid of y^e Ierhis/ what vnbil
leefful ying is demyd at you:
if god rethp deed men: & sopeh
I gellede y^e youzte do many con
trarie y^e p^e azens y^e name of
ihu nazarene/ which y^e p^e all
y^e d^ete in ierlm/ and y^e cride

many of leyntis in prilon: whne
I hadde take pouer of y^e p^encis
of y^e p^eth: & whne y^e w^ere slay:
I brouzte y^e sentence/ & by alle
synagogis ofte/ I pouylyue he:
& constraynete to blasfeme/ &
more/ I was wood azens he: &
pursuete into alpen citees/ i
which y^e while/ I wente to damall
w^e pouer & suffryng of p^encis
of y^e p^eth: at nydday i y^e w^epe
I s^er s^er kyng y^e fro heuene hit
shynede aboute me passige y^e
shynyg of lūne: & aboute he y^e
w^ere to gidre w^e y^e me/ & whne
we alle hadde falle don into y^e
erpe: y^e herte adous sepyge to me
mechre w^e tūge/ sand saul what
shabest y^e me: it is hard to y^e:
to like azens y^e p^eke/ & y^e seide/
who art y^e lord/ & y^e lord seide/ I
am ihu whom you p^eshabest/ but
y^e se/ up & stound on y^e feet/ for
wh^e to y^e p^e y^e apperide to y^e:
y^e y^e ordeyne y^e my nyfth/ & wa
nelle of po y^e p^e y^e pon hast
seyn: & of po in whiche y^e thal
it heere to y^e: & y^e thal deliue
y^e fro pepis & folk: & to whiche
norb/ I seide y^e to opyne y^e
y^ezen of he: y^e y^e be couertid fro
derknesse to l^eht/ & fro pouer of
sathanas to god: y^e y^e take te
mythion of synes & part anlyg
seyntis hi seyr y^e is in me/ wher
fore s^er kyng agrippa/ I was
not vnbileefful to y^e heuety
vision/ but I tolde to hem y^e be
at damall first & at ierlm: &
by al y^e citee of iudee & to he
y^een me: y^e y^e shulde do penance:
& be couertid to god: & do wozp
werkis of penance/ for y^e can

le Jewis token me: whiche I was
in ye temple to sle me / but I was
holpū bi ye help of god ito pis
day: & stonde witnesse to let
le & to more: & I seye no pig elis:
van whiche pigis ye & fetis &
moyses spaken p̄ thul come
if crist is to suffre. if he is ye
first of azem̄ p̄ his of deed me.
p̄ thal lthelwe lye to ye peple
& to hepen me / whiche he spak pes
pigis. & zeldite resou: I festus sei
de wy greet voys / poull p̄ mad
dist / many lettris turne pee to
wodnesse / and poull seide / I mad
de not poull bette festus: but I
spoke out ye wordis of trewe
& of sohenesse / for allo pe king
to whom I spoke stide fastly: wo
ot of pes pigis / for I deme p̄ no
pig of yele is hid fro hi / for ney
in a corner. was ouzt of pes pi
gis don / bileuett poull agrip
pa to p̄ fetis: I woot p̄ poull bile
uett / & agripa seide to poull / in
lytū pig poull coucelist me to be
maad a cristen man / & poull sei
de / I desire amentis god bope
in lūl & in greet. not oonly pee.
but alle pes p̄ heere to day to
be maad such as I am: out takū
pes boodis / and ye kig roos up.
& ye p̄ lūent & beroupe: & pei
p̄ saten nyz to he / & whiche pei be
ten aney. pei spake to gidre &
seide / p̄ pis mā hay not don ouy
pig wozp̄ deey: ney bōndis / & a
grupa seide to festus / pis man
myzte be deliuerid: if he hadde
not appeld to ye emperor.
But as it was / C. 111. /
dempd hi to lthippe to
thalpe: pei brooken poull

wy op̄r leperis to a centurie
by name julius of ye alpaup of
buztis of ye empour. & we we
ten up into ye lthip of adymetis
& bigunen to sayle: & were born
about ye placis of alpe. while
aristark of macadonpe tessalo
nceuce dwellete stille wy us
& in ye day lūwige we came to si
don / and julius tretide curtelly
poull: & suffrae to go to frendis
& do his nedis: & whiche we remoue
den fro p̄ em̄s: we vndur saylede
to cyre: for p̄ wyndis were con
trarie / & we seilede in ye see of
silice & paulile: & came to lūth
p̄ is lūe / and pei ye centurie
fond a lthip of alisaunde seilge
ito ytalie: & putte us ouer ito
it / & whiche in many dayes we sa
leden slowly. & sone pe came azes
gabydū. for ye wynd lettide us.
we seilede to creete bihdis lalo
mona: & sone pe seilede bihdis
& came into a place p̄ is depid good
haueue. to whom pe creete tessala
was nyz / & whiche moche tyme was
pallid. & whiche seilig p̄ ane was
not sikur. for pat fastig was pal
lid: poull confortde hem & seide to
he / me / ae p̄ seilg bigyne to
be wy wrong: & moche harm
not coull of charge & of ye lthip:
but allo of oure lūes / but ye
centurie bileuett more to ye go
imour. & to ye lord of ye lthip: p̄
to yele pigis p̄ were leid of poull
& whiche ye haueue was not able
to dwelle in lūth: ful manye
ordeynede coucil. to seile fro
p̄ em̄s / if on ouy mā pei nyz
ten come to ffenye: to dwelle
in lūth: at ye haueue of cre

te whiche biholdy to affrik & to cho
ru: & whiche ye souy bleis: pei ge
liden hem to holde purpos / and
whiche pei hadde remoued fro
allon: pei seilede to creete & not
astur moche: ye wynd tisony
p̄ is depid norpeest: was azes
it / & whiche ye lthip was rany
lthid. & myzte not enforle azes
ye wynd. whiche ye lthip was
zoum to ye blouwis of ye wynd
we weren born wy cours into
an yle p̄ is depid canda: & sone
ye we myzte gete altil boot:
& whiche pis was takū up pei vli
den helpis: gidre to gidre ye lthip
& dreden lest pei lthille falle in
to sondi placis: & whiche ye vel
sel was vndurlett. so pei were
born / & for we were prouen in
strong tempest: ipe day lūyn
ge pei maaden castig out: & ye
pudde day: wy her hondis peical
tude aney ye instrumētis of ye
lthip: & whiche ye sūne ney ye
sterris were seye by many day
es. & tēpest not altil neyede:
note al ye hope of oure heetre
was don aney / & whiche moche
fastig hadde be: p̄ ane poull do
od in ye myddil of he & seide / a me
it bihote whiche ze herde me not
to haue take aney ye lthip fro
crete: & gete pis wrong: & castig
out: & now I couceile zou to be of
good confort / for loss of no p̄ loo
ne of zou lthil be out takū of
ye lthip: for an aūgel of god. who
I am & to whom I serue: stood
nyz to me in pis nyz: & seide
poull drede poull not: it bihouey
pee to stonde bifoze ye empour:
& lo god hay zoum to pee: alle

p̄ be i ye lthip wy pee / for whiche
pig ze me be ze of good confort:
for I bileue to my god: p̄ so it st
hal be as it is leid to me / & it bi
houey us to come into sū yle:
but asturward p̄ in ye fourten
ye day ye nyz cam on as seik
ge in ye stony lee: aboute myd
nyzt ye lthip me supposide sū
lūtre to appere to hem / & pei cal
ten don a p̄ lomet: & fouden tibe
ty palis of depuelle: & astur al
til pei were departid fro p̄ em̄s
& fouden fytene palis: & pei dzed
de lest we lthille haue fallū
into ltharp placis: & fro ye laste
party of ye lthip pei seute sou
aneres & desireten p̄ ye day hadde
be come / & whiche ye lthip men
souzte to fle fro ye lthip. whiche
pei hadden sent altil boot into
ye see vndur colour as pei lthul
ten bigyne to streathe for ye
aneres fro ye former part of
ye lthip: poull seide to ye centuri
en & to ye buztis: but pes dwel
len ipe lthip: ze morbn not be
maad sūf: p̄ ane buztis lūttide
aney ye cordis of ye lūl boot:
& lūttide it to falle aney: & wha
ne ye day was come: poull prei
ede alle me to take mete & seide
ye fourtenye day pis day ze a
būe & dwellen fastig: & taken
no pig / wher fore I preie zou to
take mete for zoum heetre: for
of noon of zou ye heer of ye heed
lthil perltthe: & whiche he hadde
leid pes pigis: poull took breed
& dide p̄ ankigis to god i ye sūz
of alle me: & whiche he hadde bro
kū: he bigan to ete: & alle were
maad of bette confort: & pei too

ken mete / & we were alle men
in pe ship: two hundred seneti &
foure / & pei were allid wip mete.
& dithargide pe ship & castiden
wheete into pe see / & wihane pe
day was come: pei enelwen no
loud / & pei bihelede an haueue p
hadde a watir baule: unto wih
ch pei pounten if pei myhte to
brige up pe ship / & wihane pei
hadde take up pe ankeris: pei
bitooken he to pe see: & slakiden
to gidre pe ioyntouris of goimau
lis / & wip a litil seil lufte up: bi blo
wying of pe wynd pei wente to
pe bank / & wihne we felde into a
place of ganel gon alaboure. w
pe see: pei hirtide pe ship / and
wihne pe former part was fitchid
it dwelle rounouable: & pe laste
part was broke of strengpe of
pe see / & couceil of pe kunztris w
to sle me p were in ward / lest
onw sthulde allape: wihane he
hadde sibyned out / but pe cetu
rien wolte kepe poul: & forbeed
it to be don / & he comandise he
p myhte sibyne: to go into pe
see & stape & go out to pe lond / &
pei baren sume ope on boordis /
sume on po pigis p were of
pe ship / & so it was don: p alle
me allapide to pe lond. ¶ *Wm.*
Ad wihne we hadde a sta
pid: pane we knelle p
pe fle was clepid mylite
ne / & pe heepen me diten to us not
in el circelie / & wihne a sper was
fyndelid: pei refreilliden us al
le for pe reyn p cam f cold / but
wihane poul hadde gederid
a quantite of kettigis of vi
nes & leide on pe fier: an

addir she cam forp fro pe heete &
took hi bi pe hond / & wihne pe he
pen me of pe ple sizen pe beest
hangyge in his hond: pei seide
to gidre / for pis ma is amaquel
lere / & wihne he stapide fro pe
see: goddis weiaunce suffry hi
not to hne terpe / but he sthok
alwey pe beest into pe fier: &
hadde noon harm / & pei geslode
p he sthulde be turned into sthok
lyng: & falle don suddenly / & d
but wihane pei abide longe & s
en p no pig of swel was don in
hi: pei turneden he to gidre & se
den p he was god / & in po places
weren maneris of pe pnce of
pe ple. puplus bi name: wihch
rellepued vs bi pre dapes beny
gueth & foond vs: & it bifel p pe
fadir of puplus lay travelid
wip feueris and bloody flux / to
whom poul entride: & wihne he
hadde pried & leid his hondis on
hi: he heelde hi / & wihane pis pig
was don: alle p in pe ple hadden
syfneles: came & were heeld /
wihche alid onourde us wip ma
ny wortshipis: & putide what
pigns were necessarie to us wih
ne we sthupide / & after pre mo
neris we sthupide in a ship of
ahlaunde. pat hadde wintid i
pe ple. to which was an excellent
signe of castor us / & wihne we ca
men to suraculan: we dweliden
per pre dapes / fro pems we sei
lete aboute: & camen to regynum
& after o day wihle pe sony bleis:
i pe secunde day we came to pu
teolos wihet wihane we founen
brypen: we were preped to dw
elle per anentis hem: seune dan

es / & so we camen to rome / and
fro pems wihne brypen hadden
herd: pei came to us to pe chepi
ge of apptis: & to pe pre taunes
& wihne poul hadde seyn he: he
dide pauligis to god & took: tr
ist / & wihne we came to rome:
it was luffrid to poul to dwelle
bi hi sul: wip a kunztr kepige
hi / & after pre prude day he cle
pide to gidre: pe worpiste of
pe ierlis: & wihne pei camen:
he seide to he / brypen / I dide no
pig azens pe peple epr cust
of fadris: & I was bound at ie
rusalem & was bitalu into pe
hondis of romays / & wihne pei
hadde axid of me: wolden hane
deliuerid me: for p no cause of
depr was i me / but for ierlis
azenleyden: I was cotreyned
to appele to pe empour: not as
hanyge onw pig to acule my
peple / pfore for pis cause I p
te to se you & speke to you / for
pe hope of nrael: I am gird abou
te wip chayne / & pei seide to hi
nepir we han rellepued letteris
of pee fro iudee: ney onw of b
pen comyge sthewide ef spak
onw pnel pig of pee / but we p
en to heet of pee: what pigns p
fecht / for of pis sette it is kno
wii to us: p epril where me azen
sey it / & wihane pei hadde ordey
ned a day to hym: many men
came to hi unto pe yn / to which
he erpouneide watnefige pe
figdom of god: & coucelide hem
of ihu. of pe lawe of moyses
& profetis: fro pe moze til
to euentid & sume bileueden
to pes pigns: p were seid of

poul: sume bileueden not / &
wihne pei were not consentige
to gidre: pei departide: & poul sei
de oo word / for pe hooly gost spak
abel bi / I saye pe profete to ou
fadris: & seide / go you to pis pe
ple: & sepe to hem / wip eere ze sth
ulen heere: & ze sthule not w
durstonde / & ze seynge sthule se:
& ze sthule not biholde / for pe her
te of pis peple is greethly fatid.
& wip epris pei herde he myht: &
pei closedyn to gidre her yren:
lest pauenture pei se wip yren
& wip epris heet: & bi herte / vn
durstonde: & be couertid: & I hee
le he / pfore be it knouii to you.
p pis heelp of of god: is sent
to hepen me: & pei sthule heet
& wihne he hadde seid pes pign:
Ierlis wente out fro hi: & had
den moche questiou epr mullig
amog hem sul / and he dwellede
fulle twey zeer: in his hyzd pla
ce: & he rellepuede: alle p entride
to hi: & pried pe figdom of god /
& tawte po pigis p ben of pe lord
ihu crist: wip all trist wipoute
forbedyng ame. ¶ *Here endip*
pe dedis of apottis: & bigynep
apolog on cate fery. pat ben le
nene i ordre of is. James. ij. of
petr. ij. of iohn. & j. of iude. //
In ordre of pe seune ne epist
hs wihche ben clepid cano
nylid: is not so amog pe
gretis: p fully langzen pe fery
& seibe pe ryt ordre of pe epist
hs. As it is foudu in latyn bokis.
for: for as moche as petr is pe
fiste in ye ordre of apottis: his
episths ben pe fiste of he in oz
dre / but as we longe lypen cozet
not

tiden pe enāgelists to pe lye of tri-
 cipe: is we han sett pes pynz pe
 help of god in her onue ordze
 for pe furste of hem is an epist-
 le of James: twio of petris. pre
 of Johnes. & con of Judee: pe whi-
 che epistlis: if pei hadde be treu-
 turned of pe tūllatouris into
 latyn speche: as pei were maad
 of pe apostlis: pei shulde haue
 maad no doute to pe rederis:
 ne pe variāuce of wordis shu-
 lde not haue spūgned it sile: & a
 meli i pat place in pe furste epist-
 le of John: wher we reden of pe
 conhetē of pe trinite: wher we
 fynde p̄ per hay be greet erro-
 of vntreue tūllatouris: fro pe
 treupe of pe seip: whyle pei sette
 in her tūllatouris. conly pe name
 of pre yis: p̄ is of watir. of bl-
 od. & of spirit: & leue pe witnes-
 sig of pe fadir: & of pe sone. & of
 pe spirit: in whiche witnes-
 sig: our comyn bilene is moost
 reengid: & it is preued p̄ per is
 con substantiūce of godhede of pe
 fadir: & of pe sone. & of pe hooly
 spirit: But i ope epistlis how
 moche our tūllatouris dynerly fo-
 operis: I leue to pe prudence of pe
 rederis: but pou goddis mayde
 Sustachū: whyle pou enquerist bi-
 lity of me pe treupe of scripture:
 pou puttist out my elde to be gna-
 use of enyous mēis tey: whi-
 che seyen p̄ I am a peizere of
 hooly scripture: but I am such
 a werk drete not pe enye of
 of my enemyes: ne I shal not
 denyeu to hem: p̄ axen pe treupe
 of hooly scripture: Jerom ih̄
 plog on pes p̄stis James seip p̄

James seip p̄ p̄
 uant of god. & of our
 lord ih̄ crist. to pe tū-
 che tūredis p̄ be in
 peren tēme ze al ioye: whiche ze fad-
 len ito dyuile tēptaciōis: wher
 ge p̄ re preiung of zour seip: wher
 chyp patience: & patience hay a
 par fyt werk: p̄ ze be par fyt &
 hoolē & faple in no pig: & it om̄
 of zon nedip wylodom: are he of
 god: whiche synep to alle me lar-
 gely & vpbreydy not: & it shal
 be zoun to h̄i: but are he mis-
 & doute no pig: for he p̄ dour-
 is lēk to awayne of pe see: whiche
 is moued & born aboute of tēp-
 p̄ fore gelle not pe ilke mā: p̄ he
 shal take om̄ pig of pe lord: a
 man double in soule: is vnta-
 ble in alle his weyes: & a meli
 broyr: haue gloze in his engha-
 lig: & arychē mā in his lowne-
 for as pe flour of gras he shal
 passe pe sūme roos vp wh̄ heete
 & dzele pe gras & pe flour of it
 fel don: & pe fannelle of his che-
 & perulhite: & so a r̄pche mā we-
 lerip i his weyes: blelid is pe mā
 p̄ suffry tēptaciō: for whāne
 he shal be preiung: he shal res-
 ue pe crowne of lyf: whiche god
 bih̄zte to me p̄ lonen h̄i: no mā
 whāne he is tēptid sepe: p̄ he is
 tēptid of god: for wh̄ god is not
 a tēptere of yuele yis: for he
 tēptid of no mā: but ech mā is tēp-
 tid drabū & strid of his onue
 couertyng: asturward couertyng
 whāne it hay conserued: bryn-
 gip forp syue: but syue whāne
 it is fillid: sendip drey p̄ fore

my mooste dererworpe brypen: uyle
 ze erre/ech good zifte & ech par fyt
 zifte is from aboue & comep don
 fro pe fadir of lytis: anentis w
 hom is noon onūthadonys of re-
 ward: for wh̄ falk he bigat vs
 bi pe word of treupe: p̄ we be a
 bigynnyng of his creatur: wate
 ze my brypen moost loued: be
 ech mā stryft to heere: but slow
 to speke: & slow to wrappe: for
 pe wrappe of mā: worchyp not
 pe ryztyfnesse of god: for whi-
 ch pig caste ze anwe al vnden-
 nelle & plente of malice: & in
 myltenesse resseyne ze pe word
 p̄ is plantid: p̄ may saue zour
 soulis: but be ze doeris of pe w-
 ord: & not heereris conly: dilley
 nyge zour sile: for if om̄ mā is an
 heerer of pe word: & not a doer:
 p̄ is shal be ligned to amā pat
 biholdip pe chere of his brype i
 a myzour: for he biheeld h̄i sile
 & wente away: & anon he forzat
 whiche he was: but he pat bihol-
 dip in pe lawe of par fyt fredo:
 & dwelly in it: & is not mand for
 zetful heeret: but a doer of w-
 erk: p̄ is shal be blelid in his de-
 de: & if om̄ mā gelly h̄i self to
 be religious & refreyney not
 his tinge: but dilleyney his her-
 te: pe religion of h̄i is veyn
 deue religion & vnbemed:
 anentis god & pe fadir is p̄ is
 to visite fadirles & modurles
 childe: & wdonis i her t̄bula-
 ciō: & to kepe h̄i sile vnde fou-
 lid fro p̄ is world: C. 11
My brypen uyle ze haue pe
 seip of our lord ih̄ crist
 of gloze i acceptiō of p̄loones

for if aman p̄ hay a goldū r̄ig &
 m afaur clopig: comep i zour ci-
 pang & a poze mā entrip i a foul
 clopig: & if ze biholdē into h̄i rat
 is clopid wh̄ deer clopig: & if
 ze sepe to h̄i litte p̄ her: w̄el: but
 to pe poze mā ze sepen: stonde p̄
 pere epr litte vnder pe stool of
 my feet: wher ze demē not ane-
 tis zour sile: & ben maad domes
 me of w̄elid p̄oztis: heet ze
 my moost dererworpe brypen:
 wher god chees not poze men
 i p̄ is world: r̄pche in seip: & ey-
 ris of pe kygdom p̄ god bih̄zte
 to me p̄ touē h̄i: but ze han dispi-
 lid pe poze mā: wherip r̄pche me
 opp̄llen not zour bi p̄ower: & pei
 draben zour to domes: wherip
 pei blasseme not pe good name
 p̄ is depid to help on zour: nepe
 les if ze p̄four me pe kygis la-
 we: by scripturis: p̄ shal lo-
 ne p̄i neze bore as p̄i self: ze
 doen w̄el: but if ze take p̄loo-
 nes: ze worche syne: & ben rep-
 ued of pe lawe: as trespalleris:
 & wh̄ eue kep̄ al pe lawe: but
 offendip in con: he is maad gil-
 ti of alle: for he pat seide p̄ shal
 do no lecherie: seide also p̄ sh
 alt not sle: p̄ if pou doubt not
 lecherie: but pou sleeft: pou
 art maad trespallour of fredo:
 for wh̄ doom w̄iponte mercy:
 is to h̄i p̄ dour no mercy: but
 mercy aboue res̄ip dom: my
 brypere wh̄at shal it p̄fite: if
 om̄ mā seie p̄ he hay seip: but
 he hay not pe w̄ertis: wher
 seip shal morbe saue h̄i: &
 if a broy epr listir be nakid:
 & han nete of echē dayes h̄i lode

pe lawe: p̄ speke ze & p̄usdo ze:
 as bigynnyng to be dem̄d by pe
 lawe of

And if ony of zow seye to he. go ze
in pees. be ze maad hoot & be ze fil
lid. but if ze zyne not to he po pi
gis y^e ben necessarie to body.
What shal it p^rite. so also fery
if it hay not werkis. is deed i
it self. but sin mā shal seye y^e
haft fery. & I haue werkis. shē
we y^e to me pi fery wyoute wer
kis. & I shal shewe to yee my
fery of werkis. y^e bileuest pat
o god is. y^e doist wel & denelis
biue. & treble. but wolt y^e
wite pou weyn mā. y^e fery wy
oute werkis is puel. wher
Abrahā ome fadir was not
iustified of werkis. offrige
Isaac his lone on ye aunter. per
fore y^e seest y^e fery wyoute is
his werkis. & his fery was fil
lid of werkis. & ye scripture
was fillid. serunge. Abrahā
bileuede to god. & it was arettid
to hi to rythwysnesse. & he was
clepid ye frend of god. ze seen
y^e amā is iustified of werkis. &
not of fery only in lyk maner.
& wher also rait ye hooze was
not iustified of werkis. & res
seyuede ye wellanger is. & sen
te hem out bi anoy weye.
for as ye body wyoute spyt
is deed. so also fery wyoute wer
kis is deed. **C. m.**

Whyperē nyle ze be maad
many maistris. Witige
y^e ze take more dom. for alle
we offend in many p^ris. if
ony mā offed. not in word. ris
is a partyt mā. for also he may
lete aboure al ye body wy abn
dil. for if we putten byndis i
to hertis moynis. for to cōsente

to us. & we lete aboure al ye bo
dy of he. And lo shypis whie pe
ben grete. & bendyū of stronge
wyndis. it pei ben boyn aboute
of algtel gounernail. wher pe
meing of ye goimour wole so
also ye tūge is but a litil mebe.
& reish grete p^ris. lo hōis litil
fyer bynep a ful greet wode.
& oure tūge is fier. ye vnyfite
of wyckidnesse ye tūge is ordy
ned i our mebis whiche de fouly
al ye body. & it is enflamyd of
helle. & enflamye ye whel of
our bype. And al ye kynde of be
estis & of foulis & of serpētis
& of ope is chaatid & po be maad
tame of māys kynde. but no mā
may chaatle ye tūge. for it is an
vnyfite puel & ful of deedly ve
nyū. it we blesen god ye fadir.
& it we cursen me. y^e ben maad
to ye lyknesse of god. of ye same
moyn passip forp blesig. & our
fig. my byperē it bihoney not
y^e pes p^ris be don so. wher a wel
le of ye same hole bygip fowlyte
te & salt watir. my bypen whe
pir a fyge tre may make gra
pis. eyn a byne fygis. so wep
salt watir may make swete
watir. who is wyis & tanz a
mong zow. shē we he of good
lynyg his worchig. in mylnef
se of his wyldom. y^e if ze han but
tir enye & stryngis ben i zowre
hertis. nyle ze hane gloze & be
lyer is azens ye treupe. for ye
wyldom is not fro aboue comy
ge don. but erret. & bee fly & fend
ly. for wher is endye & stry. ye
is vnyfite fastnesse. & al shē wyl
werk. but wyldom y^e is fro abo

we. first it is chaat. after ward p^resible.
mylne. able to be couched. consenti
ge to goode p^ris. ful of mercy. &
of goode fruytis. demoge wyon
te feryng. & ye fruytis of rythwyl
nesse is sowen in pees. to me pat
maken pees. **C. m.**

Wherof ben batels & chetis
a mog zow. wher not of
zowr conetiles. y^e fyte in zowre
mebis. ze conerte & ze han not
ze sleen & ze han enye. & ze moit
not gete ze chet & make batel.
& ze han not for ze aren not. ze
aren puele. as ze shē wen open
ly i zowr conetilis. auowtraris
wite not ze. y^e ye frendship of pis
world is enemy to god. y^e fore who
euere wole be frend of pis world.
is maad ye enemy of god. wher
ze gessen y^e p^rit. seyn veynly.
ye spyt pat dwellyn in zow to
neyty to enye. but he zynep
ye more grace. for which p^ring
he seyn god wyftondy proude
me. but to meke he zynep grace.
y^e fore ze ze liget to god. but wyfto
de ye deuel. & he shal fle fro zow.
neze ze to god. & he shal neze to
zow. ze syneris deute ze ye hondis.
& ze double in soule purge ze ye her
tis be ze wreathis & weple ze zowr
teyng. be turned into wepyng.
& ioye into lonke of herte. be ze
mekid in ye syt of ye lord. & he
shal enhance zow. my bypen
nyle ze bacbite ech opir. he pat
bacbit his brop. eyn y^e demey
his brop. bacbit ye laue. &
demey ye laue. & if pou demest
ye laue. y^e art not a doere of ye
laue. but a domesma. but don
is maker of ye laue & iuge. y^e

may leete & delpnet. & who art pou
y^e demest pi nezeboze. lo nōis ze
y^e seyn. to day ey to morwe we
shule go into vilke ctee. & ye we
shule dwelle azeer. & we shule
make marchandise. & we shu
len make wyngyng. whiche wite
not what is to zow i ye morwe.
for what is zowre lyf. as smoke
apperige at a litil. & after ward
it shal be wastid. y^e fore y^e ze seie
if ye lord wole. & if we lyuen.
we shulen do pis p^rig eyn. pat
p^rig. & nōis ze maken fulout ioye
in zowr p^ris. eyn such ioyis is
wyckid. perfore it is lyne to hy
y^e kan do good. & doy not. **C. n.**

Dry nōis ze riche men.
weyn ze zellige in zowr
wreathidnesse. y^e shule
come to zow. zowr richellis ben
rotū. & zowre clopis be etū of
mouytis. zowr gold & siluer hay
rustid. & ye rust of he shal be to
zow into wytnessis. & shal ete
zowr fleuthis as fyer. ze hā tre
sourid to zow wyape i ye laste
dages. lo ye hyre of zowr werk
me. y^e repiden zowre feeldis. whi
ch is fraudid of zow. cryep. & ye
cry of he hay entrid. into ye ee
ris of ye lord of costis. ze han ete
ou ye erpe. & in zowr lecheries
ze han norilthid zowr hertis in
ye day of slepyng. ze byouze &
elowen ye nist mā. & he azen
stood not zow y^e fore byperē be
ze pacient til to ye comyng of ye
lord. lo an erpe tiber. abidyng pre
cious fruyt of ye erpe. paciēt
ly suffrige til he relleyue tide
ful & late ful fruyt. & be ze paci
ent & cōferme ze zowr hertis.

for ye comyng of pe lord shal neze
bzepeu nyle ze be souful ech to
oppr. pze be not demyd lo ye zu
ge stonny nyz bfoze pe zate
Expre take ze ensauple of y
uel goyng out & of long abidyng
& tranel & of pacience. pe pte
tis pspaken to zou i pe name
of pe lord lo we blessen he pat
suffrde ze herden ye suffryng
eyr pacience of iob. and ze sy
zen pe ende of pe lord. for pe lord
is merciful & doynge mercy bi
foze alle pigis my bzyen nyle
ze libere. ney by heuene neyr
by erpe. ney bi what en opr
ooth but be zour word zhe zhe
nay nay. pze falle not vndir
dom. & if ony of zou is lozeuful.
preie ze wry paciet soule. & lae
he a plalm if ony of zou is lyk.
leede he yn pectis of pe churche
& preye pei for hi. & anoynte w
oyle in ye name of pe lord. & pe
preier of fey shal saue pe lyk
mal & pe lord shal make hi lyt
& if he be yn synes. pei shule
be for zour to hi pfoze knowle
che ze ech to opr zour synes.
& preie ze ech for opr. pze be
saued for pe comymel preier
of a nist ma. is moche wozy &
he was a deedy man lyk us. &
i preier he preide p it shulde
not reyne on ye erpe. & it rey
nete not ye zeeis & lize mo
nepis & est loone he preide. &
heuene zaf reyn & ye erpe zaf
his fruyt. And bzyen if ony of
zou erry fro treupe. & ony co
uertty hi. he ovy to wite p
he p maky a syner to be tur
ned fro pe errour of his weye.

shal saue pe soule of hi fro deap.
I kenery pe mltitude of synes.
Here endy pe pistle of james. &
bigyney pe firste pistle of pete.
The apostle
Of ihu crist. to pe cho
lu me to pe comelign
of staterig abood. of
ponte of galathe. of capadolie of
asie & bitynye. bi pe bifoynonig
of god pe fadir. i halewyng of spi
rit. bi obedience & spregyng of
pe blood of ihu crist. grace & pees
be mltipled to zou. blesid be god
& ye fadir of our lord ihu crist.
Which by his grte mercy bygat
vs azen ito lymge hope by pe as
ryng of ihu crist fro deap into en
tage vncorruptible. & vnde fould
& pat shal not fade p is kept in
heuene for zou p in ye vtu of god
ben kept bi pe fey. into heele &
is redy to be shewid i pe laste ty
me i which ze shule make ioye.
pouy it bihoney noyblyt. to be
soy i dymers temptacion. p ye pe
wyg of zour fey be moche more
precious pan gold. p is prenyd
by fyer. & be foudu into heryng
& gloze & honour. i pe reuelaci
on of ihu crist. whom whie ze
han not seyn. ze loue ito whom
allo noyb ze not seynge. bilene
but ze pat bilene shule haue
ioye & gladnele p may not be
teeld out. & ze shule be glorified
& haue pe ende of zour fey. pe
heele of zour fey. pe boche of
zourne lous. of which heele pte
tis souzte & enlerchid. p pteide
of pe grace to comyge i zou & lous
te which en what man tyme ye
spirit of crist signyfyede i he. & bi

foze teelde po passionis p ben m cit.
& pe latter glozes to which it was
shewid. for not to he hlt. but to
zou pei mynstryde po pigie pat
now ben teeld to zou bi he p prech
den to zou bi pe hooly gost sent fro
heuene ito whom angels desyre
to biholde for which pig be ze gi
rd pe leendis of zour soule. sobze
pft. & hope ze into pe ilke grace
p is profid to zou bi pe thewyng
of ihu crist as lous of obedyece.
not maad lyk to pe former desy
zis of zour vnkunyngeulle. but
lyk hi pat hay clepid zou hooly.
p alio ze silf be hooly i al lymge
for it is writu ze schule be hooly.
for i am hooly & if ze unwardly clepe
hi fadir. which demep wryoute
acceptcion of psones by pe werk
of ech ma. lyne ze m dze i pe ty
me of zour pilgrymage. wryte
p not bi corruptible gold epur
siluer. ze beubouze azen of zour
deyn lymge of fadis tradicion.
but bi pe precions blood as of pe
loub vnde fould & vnsottid crist
ihu p was kuobu bfoze ye ma
kyg of pe word. but he is shew
id in pe laste tymes for zou
p by hi ben feyful in god p rei
ade hy fro deap. & zaf to hi euer
lastige gloze. p zour fey & ho
pe were in god. & make ze chalt
zour lous i obedyece of cha
rite. in loue of bryhod. of sy
ple herte loue ze to gidre more
bilyt. & be ze boyn azen. not of
corruptible seed bi pe word of
lymyge god & dwellige into w
outen ende for ech fleishly is hey.
& al pe gloze of it is as flour of
hey. pe hey duede up. & lns flo fel
de dou but pe word of pe lord dwellig

Wonne ed i pe word. p is schid
Herfore to zou // C. y. //
putte ze away al malice
& al gyle & feynyngis & e
vies & alle bacbitigis as noyb
boyn zonge children resonable.
wryoute gyle. coueite ze mylk.
p m it ze were into heele. if
nepeles ze han tanyd p pe lord
is libete & neze ze to hi p is al
myge stoon & repnyd of me. but
choli of god. & honoum & ze lile
as quye stoonys be ze aboue bil
did into spual housis & an hooly
preethod to offere spual sacrifi
his acceptable to god by ihu crist
for which pig ye apture seyn
lo. shal sette in eyon ye hyste
corner stoon choli & precions
& he p shal bilene in hi. shal
not be confoudu p fore to zou
p bilene but to me p bilene
not. pe stoon whom pe biler
repreyde. p is is maad into pe
heed of pe corner & pe stoon of
hrtig & stoon of stauoze. to he
p offende to pe word. ney bile
ue it in which pei ben sett but
ze ben a choli & yn. a kyndly
preethod. hooly folk. a peple of
purchasyng. p ze telle ye ver
tues of hi p depide zou fro
derknessis into his wondirful
lyt. which sū tyme were
not a peple of god. but noyb
ze ben pe peple of god which
haddē not mercy. but now ze
han mercy. moost dere i biledh
zou as comelyngis & pilgrymes
to abteyne zou fro fleishly de
liris pat fisten azen pe soule
& haue ze zour conuersacion good
a moog hepeue me pat i p pig p

pei bachte of zoi as of myldoere?
pei biholden zoi of good werks
glorifie god i ye day of visita
cion be ze enget to ech creatu
re for god epr to pe lig as to
hi p is hyere in stat / ey to du
tis as to pulke p ben sent of
hi to pe veiance of myldoe
ris i to pe prelig of good me
for so is pe wille of god: p ze do
wel i make pe vnkunpnesse
of vnpriuet me to be doub as
fre me i not as hampge hyng
but as pe letuantis of god
honore ze alle me: lone ze byper
hood drete ze god honore ze pe
kyng / seruantis be ze ligetis
mal drete to lordis: not only to
goode i to myldo but also to tri
uantis for vis is grace: if for co
stience of god: ony ma susteyn
hempnesles i susteyn vntill / for
what grace is it: if ze synen i
ben bultatid i susteyn but if
ze doen wel i susteyn patiently
vis is grace auentis god for to
vis pig ze ben clepid / for also et
susteyn for us i leste ensauple
to zoi: p ze folke pe steppis of
hi whid dte not lyne: ney gyle
was found in his mony i whine
he was curtid: he curtid not / wha
ne he susteyn: he manafide not
but he bitook hi sulk to hi p demp
de hym vntill i he hi sulk bar
oure synes i his body on a tree
p we be deed to synes i hyne to
vntill synelle: by whos wan wo
ide ze ben heeld for ze were as
sheep errige: but ze ben now
fined to pe sheparde i bulthop
of zoi: lous / **C. m.**
All wyemen be pei liget
to her hotebondis / p if ony

man bilene not to pe word: by pe
comilacoi of wyemen: pei be ly
womyn wyoute word: i bihold
ze indrede zoi hooly comilacoi
of whid p be not wyoute forp
curious onnyng of heer: epr
doynge aboute of gold: epr onnyng
of cloys: but pilke pat is pe
hid man of herte i vncorrupti
on i of myldo spirit: whid is
ridle in pe list of god for so li
tyme hooly wyemen hopige in
god ourueden hem sulk: i weren
liget to her onne hotebondis: as
sare obeide to abraham: i depe
de hi lord of whom ze ben doynge
wel doynge: i dede ony p
baciou also me diuile to gode i
bi kunnge: p ze honore to pe
manis freete as to pe more feble
i as to euene eris of grace i of
lyf: p zoi preieris be not lettid
i m fey al of oon wille: m pier
be ze ech susteyn wy op: lousis
of byrped: in chil: myldo meke
not zeldige puel for puel: ney
curtid for curtid: but ze m
id blellige for in vis pig ze ben
clepid pat ze welid blellig bi eri
tage for he p wole lone lyf i ze
good dayes: contreyne his tilge
fro puel: i hile lypis p pei speke
not gyle i boibe he fro puel i
do good: seke he pees i paratly
sue it for pe zen of pe lord ben
on nist me: i his epris on pe pi
eris of he but pe cheet of pe
lord is on me p doen puel i who
is it p thal anoye zoi: if ze be fieri
i lousis of goodnesse but also
if ze susteyn ony pig for ristul
nesser: ze ben blellid but drete ze
not pe drete of he: p ze be not
distinbid but halye ze pe lord

et in zoi hertis: i eimore be
ze redi to ech ma axynge zoi re
son of p fey i hope pat is i zoi
but wy myldenesse i drete: ha
nyge good consience p m pat
pig p pei bachten of zoi: pei
ben cofundid: whid chalenge
falli zoi: good comilacoi
i et for it is betti pat ze do
wel i susteyn if pe wille of god
wole: pan doynge yuele for al
so et comys drete for onre ly
nes: he nist for vntill: p he nist
nide offe to god vs mand deed
in fleitly but mand qupe i spirit
for whid pig he cam i spirit i
also to he p were clolid to gode
i p lous: p chid / whid were en
tyme vnbileetly whid pei abi
diden pe patience of god i pe dmes
of noe whid pe thup was mid:
in whid a fewe p is to seie epte
sonis were mand laf bi watr:
i so bapty m of lyf four me ma
ky vs laf not pe puttyng anwey
of pe filpis of fleitly: but pe at
ynge of a good consience i god
bi pe zen rylig of on lord ihu
i p is in pe ryzthalf of god: i
risolewip deyr: p we thulden be
mand eris of euilastige lyf / he
zeid into henene: i angels i po
wers i vtues be mand liget
tis to hym / **C. m.**
Therfore for et susteyn
in fleitly: be ze also ar
med bi pe same penkyg for he
p susteyn in fleitly: ceillide f
synes p pat is leest nob i flei
th: lyne not no to pe desiris of
me but to pe wille of god for
pe tyme p is pallid is p nob to
pe wille of hepe me to be cen

did: whid walkide in leatheris:
i hiltis: i moche drynkig of wy
i vmesurable etyngis i dryki
gis i vnleestly wozthpys of
manu metis in whid now pei
ben a stomped i whid pig pei
wondre for ze reneu not to gi
dre into pe same cofusoi of let
cherie i blasfeme i pei thulen
zyne resoi to hi: p is redy to de
me pe qupe i pe deede for whi
for vis pig it is prechid also to
deed men: p pei be dempd by me
in fleitly i p pei lyne bigod in
spirit for pe ende of alle pigis
thah nerze p fore be ze prudent:
i wake ze in preieris bi fore alle
pigis hane ze charite ech to opn
in zoi sulk: algatis lastige: for
charite kenerp pe mltitude of
synes: holde ze ospitalite to gi
dre wyoute gruchig: ech ma
as he hap relesued grace: my
nytrige it into ech opn: as goo
de dispenderis of pe manyfold
grace of god: if ony ma speky
speke he as pe wordis of god:
i ony ma mynistry p god be
honowrid in alle pigis by ihu
crist on lord to who is glorie
i lordship ito wordis of wordis
ame **¶** Forost dere bynen nple ze
go i pilgimage i feruour p is mid
to zoi to teptacoi: as if ony
newe pig bifalle to zoi but co
mpne ze wy pe passiois of et
i hane ze roye: p also ze be glad
i hane ze roye i pe reuelacoi
of his glorie: if ze ben dispid
for pe name of et: ze thulen
be blellid for pat p is of pe ho
nour i of pe glorie of pe ver
tu of god: i pe spirit p is his:

as of pe vnt whid
god ministy.

thai sette on zoi but no mā of
zoi suffre as a mā sleer. ep a
peef. ep curser. ep a defacer. of
ope meins goodis but if a cte
mā. thame he not but glorie
he god in his name for tyme
is p doom bigyne at goddis ho
if it bigyne first at vs. wht
ende thal be of hem y bileue
not to pe gospel. if a nist mā
vnepe thal be saued. wher thū
len pe vfeirful mā. y pe lyner
appere. pfore y pe suffre bi
pe wille of god. bitaken her sou
lis i good dedis. to pe seirful
maker of nouzt. **E** rfore i an euene eldre
mā. i a wreness of cdis
passions. which also am a co
myner of y glorie. y thal be
thetwid i tyme to comyge. bile
che ze pe eldre me p ben amog
zoi. fede ze pe flof of god. y is a
moug zoi. i puruepe ze not as
coultreped but wilfully bi god
not for loue of foule wpyng.
but wilfully. uer as haunge lord
thip in pe clergie. but pat ze be
maud enlauple of pe flof of wil
le of soule. and whie pe pnce of
thepherdis thal appere. ze thū
len releyue ve cronue of glori
e. y may neie vade. **A** llo ze ze
ge me be ze suget to eldre me
f alle thewe ze to gidre meke
nelle. for pe lord wpyndry prou
de me. but he zyner grace to me
ke me. perfore be ze meid. vn
dir pe myzty hond of god. y he rey
se zoi i tyme of visitaciou. i
caste ze al zoi. bynne into hi.
for to hym is cure of zoi. be ze
dohre f wake ze. for zoiure adu

larie pe deuel as a roygge hon
goyr aboute. sechge whō he thal
denou. who axent oude ze fte
ge in pe seip. witige y pe same
passiō is maud to pilke bryphod
of zoi y is in pe world. god of
al grace y depide zoi into his e
ulastige glorie zoi suffrige a ly
til he thal parfōme i thal cōfer
me i thal make sad to by be glorie
f lordship to worldis of worldis
amē. **S** y siluan seirful wpyr
to zoi as y deme. i woot thōzly
bilechge i wittelligge y is is
pe very grace of god i which ze
stonden pe church y is gederid
in babloyne f markus my loue.
greety zoi wel. greete ze wel to
gidre in hooly cos. grace be to zoi
alle y ben i cte amē. **H** ere endy
re firste pille of petre. **S** y
uep pe seirful. **E** rfore i an euene eldre
mā. i a wreness of cdis
passions. which also am a co
myner of y glorie. y thal be
thetwid i tyme to comyge. bile
che ze pe eldre me p ben amog
zoi. fede ze pe flof of god. y is a
moug zoi. i puruepe ze not as
coultreped but wilfully bi god
not for loue of foule wpyng.
but wilfully. uer as haunge lord
thip in pe clergie. but pat ze be
maud enlauple of pe flof of wil
le of soule. and whie pe pnce of
thepherdis thal appere. ze thū
len releyue ve cronue of glori
e. y may neie vade. **A** llo ze ze
ge me be ze suget to eldre me
f alle thewe ze to gidre meke
nelle. for pe lord wpyndry prou
de me. but he zyner grace to me
ke me. perfore be ze meid. vn
dir pe myzty hond of god. y he rey
se zoi i tyme of visitaciou. i
caste ze al zoi. bynne into hi.
for to hym is cure of zoi. be ze
dohre f wake ze. for zoiure adu

of bryphod f in loue of bryphod
charite. for if ye be wpy zoi f
ouercome. yei thūle not make
zoi voide. ney wpynte frust
i ye knowyng of oure lord ihu
crist. but to whom ye ben not
redy. he is blynd. f gropy w
his hond. f forzet y purgynge
of his elde trelpassis. wherfore
brypen be ze more bly. y by go
ode werkis ze make zoi clepig
f chehyng. cer teyn. for ze doynge
yes ygis. thūlen not do lyne
ony tyme. for pus ye entryg in
to euilastige kyngdom of oure lord
f sauyour ihu crist. thal be
nymistrid to zoi plenteuouly.
for which yis i thal bigyne to
monette zoi emore of yes y
gis. f i wole y ze be kymyge f
cōfermyd i pis present treupe.
forfore y deme mally as longe
as i am i pis tabernacle to rei
se zoi i monettig. f i am cer tey
y pe puttis a wey of my taber
nacle is swyft. bi pis f om lord
ihū cte hay thewid to me. but
i thal zyne blynele f ofte aff
my deer ze haue myte of yes y
gis. for we not suryge vnblye
talis han maud knowu to zoi y
vertu f pe bifoze knowyng of
oure lord ihu. but we were ind
bholderis of his gretnele. for
he took of god pe fadir honour
f glorie. by such man. vois lly
dū dou to hy fro pe greet glorie.
pis is my loued loue. i whom i
haue plesid to me. heer ze hi. f
we herde pis vois brouzt fro he
uene. whie we were wpy h
i pe hooly hil. f we han a sadder
word of pferie. to which ze zy

nyge tent don wel. as to alame
ne y zyner lyt in a derk place.
til pe day bigyne to zyne lyt.
f pe day sterre spynge i zoi
hertis. f first vnderstonde ze y
pis. y ech profecie of scripture.
is not maud by ppre interptaci
on. for pferie was not brouzt
ony tyme by māys wille. but
pe hooly me of god ihūrid wpy pe
hooly goost apaken. **E** rfore i an euene eldre
mā. i a wreness of cdis
passions. which also am a co
myner of y glorie. y thal be
thetwid i tyme to comyge. bile
che ze pe eldre me p ben amog
zoi. fede ze pe flof of god. y is a
moug zoi. i puruepe ze not as
coultreped but wilfully bi god
not for loue of foule wpyng.
but wilfully. uer as haunge lord
thip in pe clergie. but pat ze be
maud enlauple of pe flof of wil
le of soule. and whie pe pnce of
thepherdis thal appere. ze thū
len releyue ve cronue of glori
e. y may neie vade. **A** llo ze ze
ge me be ze suget to eldre me
f alle thewe ze to gidre meke
nelle. for pe lord wpyndry prou
de me. but he zyner grace to me
ke me. perfore be ze meid. vn
dir pe myzty hond of god. y he rey
se zoi i tyme of visitaciou. i
caste ze al zoi. bynne into hi.
for to hym is cure of zoi. be ze
dohre f wake ze. for zoiure adu

Wip wickid werkis a nist soule
for pe lord fanderly nere pitouls
me fro temptacion. & kepe wic
fid me into pe day of doom to
be turnetid but moze he pat
walken astur pe fleuth in coner
tice of vndeuelles. & dispisen
lordshipis. & ben boold pletige
hem self. & dreen not to byn
ge yn lectis blassemyge. Wiche
re angels whie pei be moze i
strengpe & vti. beren not pat
was pe exettable dom azens
hem but pes ben as virelona
ble beestis kyndely into takyng
into deap. blassemyge in pes
pigris. & pei knowen not. & thul
len perulhe in her corrupcion.
I relesyne pe hyre of our wyl
nells. and pei gellen delices of de
foulyng. & of weime. to be lyligis
of day. flouyng in her feetis
wip delicias dopuge leatherie wip
zou. & han pzen ful of auouste &
ouceellige trespas. dilleynge
vntide fast. souls. & han pe her
te exetralid to conetysle pe lones
of cunfing. & forlaken pe ryt
wey. & erride synge pe weye
of balam of bowz. which louede
pe hyre of wickidnesse. but he had
de repenys. of his wickidnesse.
a doub beest roudur. & pat spae
wip vois of ma pat forboed pe
vnyltydom of pe psete. & pes be
welhs wipoute watir. & wylde
dynu. wip wyltyg wylndis. to
whiche pe psete myt of derfel
his is referued. & pei spoken i pri
de of vaupte. & dillepueu in deli
ris of leatherie. hem p itapen a
lytill. whiche lyuen in errour. &
bihten freedom to hem. whie

legat

fleuth
of

pei ben seruantes of corrupcion. for
of wihom ony man is overcomen.
of hi also he is seruait. for it me
forlaken pe vndeuelles. of pe wo
ld. bi pe knowyng of oure lord.
sanyour ihu crist. & est soone ben
wylapud in pest. & ben overcomen.
pe lattere pigis ben maid to hem
wylapud van pe forthe. for it was
bette to he to not knowe pe weie
of ryt wylne. van to turne
zen astur pe knowyng. fro pat hoo
ly mandemet. & was brakn to
hem. for wylke. & pzoibe bifet
de to hem. pe hoid turnede zen
to his castyng. And a forke is wyl
thi in wylapud in ferme.
I ze moost dere wylpe
bryen. I wite to zou pis
lectice epistle. in whiche
I ture zou. clere soule by monel
tyng to gide. & se be mytful
of po wordis. & bifore seite of
pe hooly psetis. & of pe maide
metris of pe hooly apostlis of pe
lord. & sanyour. first wite ze pis
pung. & in pe laste dayes dillepue
ris thulen come midillett. goyn
ge astur her oibne conetigis. &
yuge wher. is pe biheete of pe
comyng of hi. for spen pe cadus
dreden. alle pigis lasten fro pe
bigyng of creatur. but it is hoid
fro hem. wyllyge pis pig. & he
nes were bifore. & pe erpe of
watr. was stonde by watir
bigoddis word. bi whiche psete
word clensid rane bi watir. by
watr. pulthide. but pe heuenes
p now ben. & pe erpe ben kept
by pe same word. & ben referud
to fier into pe day of dome. & per
dicion of wyltyd me. but ze mo

ost dere pis o ping. be not hoid to
pat o day anentis god. is as a pou
lend zeeris. & a poulend zeeris be
as o day. pe lord carrey not his by
heest as sume gellen. but he dom
patiently for zou. & wole not p ony
me pulthe. but p alle turre zen
to penance. for pe day of pe lord
shal come as a peef. in whiche
heuenes wyl greet bire thule
palle. & elementis thulen bedissol
ued biheete. & pe erpe & alle pe wer
tis pat ben in it. thulen be bzent
pfoze whane alle pes pigis thul
len bedissolued. whate man men
bihouey it zou to be in hooly
lynyngis. & pitees abidige. & hysye
into pe comyng of pe day of oure
lord ihu crist. bi whiche heuenes bze
nyge thule be dissolued. & elem
tis thule fayle by bze myng of fier.
also we abide by hile biheetis ne
we heuenes. & newe erpe. in whi
che ryt wylne dillep. for whi
ch pig. ze moost der. abidige pes
pigris be ze blyse. to be found to
hi in pees. vnyltyd. & deme ze
long abidying of oure lord ihu
crist. & our heele. as also oure
moost dere broper. poull. woot
to zou. by wyltydom. & wyltyd. as
and in alle epistlis he speky in he
of pes pigis. in whiche ben oibne
harte pigis to vndir stonde. whi
che vnyltye. & vnyltye me dep
nen as also pei doen ope scriptu
ris to her oibne perdicion. pfoze
ze bryen bifore wyltyge kepe
zou self. lest ze be dillepued by
errour of vnyltye me. & falle ankei
fro zou. laduelle. but were ze i
pe grace. & pe knowyng of oure
lord ihu crist. & our sanyour. to hys

apoc. xxi

ze vyl
foulyd

be gloze now. & into pe day of
euerlastig nells. ame. **Here en**
dy pe lectice pille of petre.
I bigyner pe firste pille of john.
Uar ping. & p. **U**
was fro pe bigyng
whiche we herde. whi
ch we syzen. & our
zen. whiche we biheete. & our ho
dis touchten of pe word of liff.
and pe liff is the wyl. & we liff
ze we witten. & tellen to zou
pe enlastige liff. & was anentis
pe fadir. & apperide to us. pfoze
we tellen to zou pat pig. pat we
syzen. & herde. pat also we hane
feloullhye wip us. & our felous
thulpe be wip pe fadir. & wip his so
ne ihu crist. & we wite pis ping
to zou. & ze hane iope. & pat zou
iope be ful. & pis is pe tellig. pat
we herden of hy. & telle to zou.
p god is liff. & per be uoderknel
his in hy. & we seyen. & we han
feloullhye wip hy. & we wande
in derk nells. we ben. & doen not
treupe. but if we walke in
lyt. as also he is in lyt. we han
feloullhye to gide. & pe blood
of ihu crist. his sone. clensid us
fro al syne. if we seyen. & we
han no syne. we dillepue. us
self. & treupe is not in us. if we
knowleche our synes. he is fery
ful. & mit. & he forzyne to us our
synes. & clense us fro al wicki
dnesse. & if we seyen. & we han not
syned. we maken hy a lyer. &
his word is not in us. **C. n.**
I lytle lones. I wite to
zou pes pigis. & ze lyne
uot. but if ony ma sy
ney. we han an aduocat anen

tis pe fadur ihu crist. & he is pe for
zyuenes for our synes: & not con-
ly for our synes: but also for pe
synes of al pe world: & in pis pig-
we write p' we knowe hym: if we
kepen his comādemētis: he p'
seip p' he knoweþ god. & kep-
not hile comādemētis: is a ly-
er & treupe is not in hi: but pe
charite of god is parfyt: verily
in hym: p' kep his word: in pis
pig: we write p' we ben i hi: if
we ben parfyt in hy: he p' seip
p' he dwellyn in hi: he oþer for to
walke as he walkte: moost der-
bryen: write to you not ane we
mañdemēt: but pe elde mañde-
mēt p' ze hadde fro pe bigynnyng:
pe elde mañdemēt: is pe word p'
ze herde. **¶** If soone: write to
you a newe mañdemēt: p' is tre-
we bove in hy & you: for derknes-
sis ben passid: & very lycht: shyn-
ney now: he p' seip p' he is in lycht:
& hatyþ his broþer: is in derknesse
zit: he p' loueyþ his broþer: dwellyn
in lycht & stande is not in hym:
but he p' hatyþ his broþer: is i derk-
nessis: & wandryn in derknessis
& woot not whidur he goyþ: for
derknessis han blyndid his yzen:
lytle sonys: write to you: p' you
synes be for you to you for his
name: fadur: write to you for
ze han knowen hy p' is fro pe by-
gynnyng. **¶** Zonge me: write to
you: for ze han oncomen pe wickid:
write to you zonge childe: for
ze han knowe pe fadur: write
to you bryen: for ze han knowen
hi pat is fro pe bigynnyng. **¶** Write
to you zonge me: for ze ben fro
ge: & pe word of god dwellyn i you:

& ze han ouercomen pe wickid: my-
le ze lone pe world: ne po pigis p'
ben i pe world: if ony mā loney
pe world: pe charite of pe fadur
is not in hym: for al pig p' is in
pe world: is conetyle of flesch: &
conetyle of yzen & pryd of hy: whi-
ch is not of pe fadur: but it is of
pe world: & pe world shal passe: &
pe conetyle of it: but he p' doyþ pe
wille of god: dwellyn wynter-
ende: my lytle sonys pe laste om-
is: & as ze han herd p' ancrut co-
mey: now many aucturitis ben
mañd: wher fore we write: p' is
pe laste om: pei wente for fro
us: but pei were not of us: for if
pei hadde be of us: pei hadde dwel-
elt wyþ us: but p' pei be knowen:
p' pei be not of us: but ze han an-
oyntis of pe hooly goost: & know-
en alle pigis: write not to you:
as to me p' knowen not treupe:
but as to me p' knowen it: & for
ech lechtyng is not of treupe: who
is a lyer: but pis p' demeyþ ihu
is not crist: pis is ancrut: p' demeyþ
pe fadur: & pe lone: so ech p' demeyþ
pe lone: hay not pe fadur: but he
p' knowledhyþ pe lone: hay alle pe
fadur: pat pig p' ze herde at pe bi-
gynnyng: dwelle it in you: for if pat
pig dwellyn in you: which ze herde
at pe bigynnyng: ze shule dwelle
in pe lone & in pe fadur: & pis is
pe biheeste: p' he bihyte to us:
enlastige lyf: write to you pe
pigis of he p' dille yue you: & pat
pe anoyntis: which ze resseynede
of hi: dwelle in you: & ze han not
nede p' ony mā teche you: but as
his anoyntis: techyþ you of alle
pigis: & it is trewe: & it is not

techyng: & as he tawte you: dwel-
le ze in hy: & now ze lytle sonys dwel-
le ze in hy: & whane he shal ap-
pere: we haue a truit & be not co-
foudid of hi in his comyng: if ze wi-
te p' he is iust: write ze also p' ech
doyþ ryt wyshelle is born of hy.
¶ Ze what man? **¶** **¶** **¶**
charite pe fadur: zat to us:
p' we be named pe sonys
of god: & be his sonys: for pis pig-
pe world knowis not us: for it knowis
not hi: moost der: bryen now: we
be pe sonys of god: & it it apper-
de not what we shulen be: we
write p' whane he shal apper: we
shulen be lyk hym: for we shu-
le ze hi as he is: & ech mā p' hay
pis hope in hi: makyþ hi sylf ho-
oly as he is hooly: ech mā pat do-
yþ hyne: doyþ also wickidnesse: &
syne is wickidnesse: & ze witen
pat he apperde to do alle hyne:
& syne is not in hi: ech mā p' dwel-
ellyn in hi: synyþ not: & ech pat
synyþ: seep not hi: neþ know-
en hi: lytle sonys: no mā dille yue you:
he p' doyþ ryt wyshelle: is iust: as
also he is iust: he pat doyþ hyne:
is of pe deuyl: for pe deuyl synyþ
fro pe bigynnyng: in pis pig: pe
lone of god apperde: p' he vn-
do pe werkis of pe deuyl: ech mā
p' is born of god: doyþ not syne:
for pe seed of god dwellyn in hi:
& he may not do syne: for he is bo-
rn of god: in pis pig: pe sonys of
god ben knowen: & pe sonys of
pe fend: ech mā p' is not iust:
is not of god: & he pat loueyþ not
his broþer: for pis is pe tellig: pat
ze herden at pe bigynnyng: p' ze lo-
ue ech oþer: not as cayn p' was

of pe yuele: & slouyþ his broþer: &
for what pig: slouyþ he hi: for his
werkis were yuele: & his broþer
is iust. **¶** Bryen nyle ze wondre:
if pe world hatyþ you: we write
p' we ben translatid fro deap to
lyf: for we loue bryen: for he p'
loueyþ not: dwellyn in deap: ech
mā pat hatyþ his broþer: is a
mā leet: & ze write p' ech mā
leet: hay not enlastige lyf: dwel-
lige in hi: in pis pig: we han know-
en pe charite of god: for he put-
tide his lyf for us: & we open
to prync our synes for our bry-
en: he p' hay pe ratel of pis world:
& seep p' his broþer hay nede: & clo-
lyþ his entrayls fro hy: how dwel-
ellyn pe charite of god in hi: **¶**
ory lytle sonys: lone we not i wo-
rd neþ in tinge: but in werk: &
treupe: in pis pig: we knowe:
pat ben of treupe: & his lycht: we
monette our hertis: for if our
herte repney us: god is more
ran our herte: & knowen alle
pigis: moost der: bryen if our
herte repney us: we ha-
trist to god: & what en we shu-
lenate: we shulen resseynue
of hi: for we kepen hile comā-
demētis: & we doe po pigis pat
be plesant bifoze hi: & pis is pe
comādemēt of god: p' we bile
ue in pe name of his lone ihu crist:
& p' we loue ech oþer: as he zat
heeste to us: & he p' kep his co-
mādemētis dwellyn in hy: & he
i hi: & in pis pig: we write p' he
dwellyn i us: bi pe spyr it whom
he zat to us. **¶** **¶** **¶**
¶ Doft dore bryen nyle ze
bileue to ech spyr: but

preue ze spiritis if ye ben of
god for many false pferis: we
ten out into ye world in yis pig
ye spirit of god is knowen ech
spirit yf knowlechy yf ihu ch
hay come in fleuth: is of god: &
ech spirit yf fordon ihu: is not
of god: & yis is ancrut. of who
ze herde yf he comey: & rist not
he is in ye world: ze lyde lones
ben of god: & ze han ouercommi
hi for he yf is in you is more: pa
he pat is in ye world: ye ben of
ye world: yf ze speke of ye
world: & ye world heery he: we
ben of god: he pat knowy god:
heery us: he yf is not of god: hee
ry not us: in yis pig. we kno
wen ye spirit of treupe: & ye
spirit of errour. For oost der
bryden lone ze to gode: for cha
rite is of god: & ech yf louey he
broy: is born of god: & knowy
god: he pat louey not: knowy
not god: for god is charite: i
yis pig ye charite of god ap
peride in us: for god sente his
oon bigetū lone into ye world:
yf we lyne by hi in yis pig is
charite: not as we hadde lo
ned god: but for he first loue
de us: & sente his lone for yue
nelle for our synel: ze moost
der bryper: if god louede us:
we gauen to lone ech oyr: no
ma say: eue god: if we loue
to gode: god dwelth i us: &
ye charite of hi is par fyt in
us: i yis pig we knowen: yf
we dwelken in hi & he in us:
for of his spirit he zaf to us:
& we syen & wtneile: yf we
fadur sente his lone sauour

of ye world: who eue knowle
chy yf ihu is ye lone of god: god
dwelth in hi & he in god: & we ha
han knowen: & bileuen to ye cha
rite yf god hay in us: god is cha
rite: & he pat dwelth in charite:
dwelth in god: & god in hi: in yis
pig is ye par fyt charite of god
wryt us: yf we haue trust in ye don
of don: for as he is: also we ben
in yis world: drede not in charite:
but par fyt charite putty out
drede: for drede hay peyne: but
he yf drede: is not par fyt in cha
rite: yf ze loue we god: for he
louede us bifoze: if ony mā sepy
yf lone god: & haty his broyr:
he is a lyer: for he pat louey
not his broyr: which he seep:
hois may he lone god: who he
seep not: & we han yis coman
demēt of god: yf he yf louey god
lone also his broyr.

Ech mā yf bileuey yf he is
cit: is born of god: & ech
mā yf louey hi pat genyde: lo
ney hi pat is born of hi: in yis pig
we knowen: yf we loue ye childe
of god: we haue we lone god: &
don his manidmētis: for yis is
ye charite of god: yf we kepe
hile manidmētis: & his man
demētis ben not heuy: for al yis
yf is born of god: omeuy ye wo
ld: and yis is ye victorie yf ou
comey ye world: our sepy: and
who is he yf ouercomey ye world:
but he yf bileuey yf he is ye lone
of god: yis is ihu crist yf canbi
watt: & blood: & ye spirit is he
pat wtneile: yf crist is treupe:
for ze ben yf yue wtneile in
heueue: ye fadur ye lone & ye soo

not in wat conly: but i wat & blood

ly god: & res ye ben oon: and ye
ben yf yuen wtneile: merpe
ye spirit: waty: & blood: & res ye
ben oon: it we ressepye ye wtneile
sig of me: ye wtneile of god
is more: for yis is ye wtneile
of god: yf is more: for he wtneile
sile of his lone: he pat bileuey i
ye lone of god: hay ye wtneile
of god in hi: he yf bileuey to ye
lone: maky hi a lyer: for he bile
uey not in ye wtneile yf god
wtneile of his lone: & yis is ye wt
neile: for god zaf to zonen lasti
ge lyf: & yis lyf is i his lone: he
yf hay ye lone of god: hay also lyf:
he yf hay not ye lone of god: hay
not lyf. & yf ze wite yf ze han eulastige
lyf: which bileueni ye name of
goddis lone: & yis is ye trust: wh
ich we han to god: yf what euer
yis we aren afur his wille: he
shal heere us: and we witen yf
he heery us: what eu pig: we
aren we wite yf we han ye ar
yngis: which we aren of hy:
he yf woot pat his broyr syny:
a syne not to deey: are he &
lyf shal be zoun to hy: yf syny
not to deey: yer is a syne to deey:
not for it: seie yf ony mā preie
ech wickidnesse is syne: & yf syne to
deey: we witen pat ech mā yf is
born of god: syny not: but ye
genacion of god keepy hi: & ye
wickid touchy hi not: we wite
yf we ben of god: & al ye world is
lett in synel: & we wite yf ye lone
of god cam in fleuth: & zaf to us
watt: yf we knowe: verr yf god: &
be i ye lone of hy: yis is god:
god: & euerlastige lyf: my lytle

Soues kepe ze zoun fro manymetis:
Here endy ye furste pistle of iohn:

U bigyny ye secide pistle of iohn:

He eldre man to ye choli ladi: & to her
choldren: which he
lone in treupe: & not yf alone: but
also alle me yf knowe treupe: for
ye treupe yf dwelth in you: & wry
zeon shal be wrypente eude: & ze
be wryp zeon iuey: & pees of god ye
fadur: & of ihu crist ye lone of ye
fadur in treupe: & charite. & wry
ede ful myche for: fond of yf lo
nes goyng i treupe: as we res
sepyede manidmēt of ye fadur: &
now yf preie yer ladi: not as wry
tyge a newe manidmēt to pee:
but pat yf we hadde fro ye bigynnyng
yf we lone ech oyr: & yis is cha
rite: yf we wake afur his man
demētis: for yis is ye comande
mēt: yf as ze herden at ye bigy
nyng: walke ze in hi: for many dyl
sepyeris wente out into ye world:
which knowleche not yf ihu crist
hay come in fleuth: yis is a dylsepy
uere & ancrut: ze ze zoun silt: lest
ze leeken ye pigis yf ze han wryngt:
yf ze ressepye ful meede: wrytge
yf ech mā yf goy bifoze: & dwelth
not in ye teching of cit: hay not
god: he yf dwelth i ye teching: hay
bope ye lone & ye fadur: if ony mā
comey to zoun: & bryngy not: yis
teching: nyle ze ressepye hi into
hous: neyr sepe to hi heyl: for he
pat sepy to hi heyl: comney wryp
his synel workis: lo yf bifoze seide
to zoun: yf we not cofoundid i ye day
of our lord ihu crist: yf haue mo yf
gis to wryte to zoun: & yf wolde
not by parchemyn: & enke: for yf

seuene candilstickis of gold. & in
ye myddel of ye seuene candelstic
kis golden: con lyk to ye sone of
ma cloyd wip along garuemet
& gird at ye teetis wip a golden
girdil: and ye heed of hi & his hee
ris. Were wiput as wiput wolfe.
& as snok: & ye pzen of hi as flam
me of fier: & his feet lyk to la
toil as in a brenyng chymenei
& ye vois of hi: as ye vois of
many watris: & he hadde in his
rythond seuene sterres: & a
sherd sharpon euey side we
te out of his moun: & his face
as ye sunne shynen in his: & in
& whane i hadde seyn hi: i fel
de dou at his feet as deed: & he
puttide his rythond on me: &
seide: wyle p' dret: i am ye fir
ste & ye laste: & i am alyue & i
was deed: & lo i am haryng into
worldis of worldis: & i haue pe
keyes of deap & of helle: p'fore
wryte you whiche pigis p' hant
seyn: & whiche ben: & whiche in
bihouey to be don astur pes pigis
ye sacramet of ye seuene ster
ris. Whiche you sprest in my ry
thond: & ye seuene goldu candil
stickis ye seuene sterres: be an
gels of ye seuene churchis: & ye
seuene candilstickis: ben se
uene churchis. **¶** **¶** **¶**
And to ye angel of ye
church of efesus: wry
te you pes pigis seyn he p' holdy
ye seuene sterres in his rythod:
whiche wallen in ye myddel of ye
seuene goldu candilstickis: i wo
ot in werkis & trauel: & in paci
ence: & p' you want not suffre
ynel me: & you haue alayd he p'

seyn pat pe ben aposthis & ben
not: & you haue foude he heris
& p' haue patience: & p' haue suffrid
for my name: & failed not: but
i haue azens pee afenke pigis:
p' you haue lest in fusthecharite:
p'fore be you myddel fro wihen
you haue falle: & do penance: & do
pe fusthe werkis: & p' ellis: i co
me to pee soone: & i shal moue
ye candilsticke fro his place:
but you do penance: but p' haue
pis good pig: p' you haue deit pe
dis of nycholaytis ye whiche al
so i hate: he p' haue ceis heere se
what ye spyrut seyn to ye churchis
to hy p' ouercomen: i shal zyne to
ete of ye tre of lyf: & i am ye pa
radys of my god. **¶** **¶** **¶**
And to ye an
gel of ye church of Smyrna: wry
te you pes pigis seyn ye fusthe
ye laste: p' was deed & lynes: i
woot in tribulacion: & in pouert:
but you art ryche: & you art bla
ssmed of he pat seyn p' ben
seyn & ben not: but ben ye sy
nagoge of sathanas: & deit you
no pig of pes pigis whiche you
shalt suffre: lo ye deuel shal se
de liue of you into p' dret: p' ze
be teptid: & ze shule haue tribu
lacion: ten dayes: be you fersid
to ye deap: & i shal zyne to pee a
croibne of lyf: he p' haue ceis
heer he: what ye spyrut seyn to
ye churchis: he p' ouercomen: shal
not be hurt of ye secunde deap. **¶** **¶** **¶**
And to ye angel of ye church of per
gam: wryte you pes pigis seyn
he rat haue ye siberd sharpon
ech syde: i woot wher you dwel
lit: wher ye seete of sathanas
is: & you holdist my name: & dem

edit not my seyn: & in yodanes
was autifas my fersid wrytnef
se p' was slayn at you: wher sa
thanas dwelky: but i haue azen
pee a seibe pigis: for you haue per
me holdige ye techis of balaam
whiche tanyte balaam: for to sente
dandze bifore ye sones of ydolis: &
to ete of sacrifices of ydolis: &
to do fornicacion: so also you haue
me holdige ye techis of nycholai
tis: also do you penance: if ony
pig lesse: i shal come soone to p'
& i shal fize wip he: wip ye
siberd of my moun: he p' haue ce
is heere he: what ye spyrut seyn
to ye churchis: to hy p' ouercomen:
i shal zyne angel mete hyd: & i
shal zyne to hym a whyt stoon:
& in ye stoon a newe name wryti
whiche no ma knowy: but he p'
tak. **¶** **¶** **¶**
And to ye angel of ye church
of tyatna: wryte p' pes pig
is seyn ye sone of god: p' haue pze
as flamme of fier: & hile feet
lyk latoil: i knowe in werkis &
seyn & charite: & in seruple & in
patience: & in laste werkis no
pan ye former: but i haue a
zens pee a seibe pigis: for you
suffrist ye woma jelabel whiche
seyn p' she is a profetesse: to te
che & disseyne my seruantis: to
do lecherie: & to ete of pigis of
fryd to ydolis: & i zas to hyr tyme
p' she shule do penance: & she
wolde not do penance of her for
nicacion: & lo i sente hyr into
abed: & ye p' doen lecherie w
hyr: shulen be in moost tribula
cion: but ye do penance of
her werkis: & i shal sle her so
nes into deap: & alle churchis sh

ule wryte: & i am serchige rey
nes & heris: & i shal zyne to
ech man of you astur his werke:
& i seie to you & to opere p' ben
at nature: who eue han pis te
chis: & p' kneibe not ye hymelle
of sathanas: how ye seyn: i sh
al not sente on you anoyr char
ge: nepeles holde ze pat p' ze ha:
tal i come: & to hy p' shal ouercomen:
& pat shal kepe til into ye ende
my werkis: i shal zyne werkis:
i shal zyne pouer on folkis: & he
shal goiue hem i an yru zerd:
& ye shulen be brok in to gidre:
as a ve llet of a potter: as also
i rellequede of my fadu: & i sh
al zyne to hy a moxibe ster: he
p' haue ceis heer he: what ye spyr
ut seyn to ye churchis. **¶** **¶** **¶**
And to ye angel of ye church
of sardis: wryte p'
pes pigis seyn he p' haue
ye seuene spyrutis of god: & ye
seuene sterres: i woot in werkis:
for you haue a name p' you lyued:
& you art deed: be p' wakige: and
coferme p' ope pigis p' were to
dyinge: for i fynde not in werkis
fulle bifore my god: p'fore haue
you i myde hois you rellequede
teit & herdeit: & kepe & do penan
ce: p'fore if p' wake not: i shal
come as a myzt peef to pee: & you
shalt not wryte in what our: i sh
al come to pee: but you haue a se
ibe names in sardis: whiche han
not defouhd her cloyis: & ye shu
len walke wip me in white cloyis:
for ye ben wory: he p' ouercomen:
shal be cloyid pis wip white do
ys: & i shal not do away his na
me fro ye book of lyf: & i shal

castide into erpe / & pūdzis / & voi
ces / & lemgis were mad: & a gre
et erpe mouyng / & pe seuene an
gelis / & hadden seuene trūpis:
māden hem redy / & pei shulde
trūpe / & pe fūste angel trūpi
de: & hail was mad / & fier meyd
to gide in blood: & it was sent
into erpe / & pe pūde part of
pe erpe was hent. & pe pūde
part of trees was hent: & al
pe grene gras was hent. And
pe secūde angel trūpide: & as
a greet hyl hēyngge wip fier: & as
cast into pe see: & pe pūde part
of pe see was mad blood: & pe pūde
part of creatur was deed. & p
hādē lynes in pe see: & pe pūde
part of shippis pulthide. & p
pe pūde angel trūpide: & a gre
et sterre hēyngge as altil hūd
felde fro heuene: & it felde into pe
pūde part of flōdis: & into pe
wellis of watris: & pe name of
pe sterre is leid wermud: & pe pūde
part of watris was mad
into wermud: & many mē were
deed of pe watris: for po were
mad bitter. And pe fourpe
angel trūpide: & pe pūde pt
of pe siue was fūgtū: & pe pūde
part of pe moone: & pe pūde
part of steris / so p pe pūde pt
of hē was derk: & pe pūde
part of pe day shynede not / al
so of pe nyxt. And I say / & herde
pe vois of an egle fleyge bi pe
myddil of heuene: & seygge w a greet
vois / wo wo wo to mē / & diuēllē in
erpe / of pe ope voices of pe angels:
And I shulde trūpe aī / & c. 11.
And pe fūfpe angel trūpi
de: & I say / & a sterre hadde

falle dōū fro heuene into erpe: &
pe keye of pe pit of derknesse was
zōūū to it: & it openyde pe pit of
derknesse: & a smoke of pe pit fū
ede vp: as pe smoke of a greet
furneis: & pe siue was derk: & pe
eyr of pe smoke of pe pit / & locu
tis went out of pe smoke of pe
pit into erpe: & pouer was zōūū
to hem: as scorpionis of pe erpe
han pouer: & it was comāūd
to hem: / & pei shulde not herte pe
gras of pe erpe: neyr ony gre
ne pyg: neyr ony tree / but ony
men: / & han not pe siue of god
in her forhedis: & it was zōūū to
hem: / & pei shulde not sle hē: but
/ & pei shulden beturmetid / & pūe
monepis: & pe turmetig of hem
as pe turmetig of a scorpion: &
shē he lūgtū amā: & in po dāp
es mē shulen seke deep: & pei sh
ulen not fynde it: & pei shulen
desyre to dpe: & deep shal fle fro
hem: & pe lucnesse of locūdis: &
hē horlis mad redy into batel:
& on pe heedis of hem as crownes
hē gold: & pe facis of hē as pe fa
cis of mē: & pei hadde heeris as
heeris of wōmen: & pe teep of
hem were as teep of hōis: & pei
hadde haburionis: as / & hū habur
ionis: & pe voices of her shēyng:
as pe vois of charis of many
horlis rēyngge into batel: & pei had
den taphis hē scorpionis: & pūe
kis were in pe taphis of hē: & pe
myxt of hē was to noye men
fūne monepis: & pei hadde on hē
akīng pe angel of derknesse: to
whom pe name bi etwēy is la
badon / but bi greet apolloū: &
bi latyn hē hap a name extm

nās / & is distret: / & wo is pat
sid: & lo / & comē tūkep woos. And
tur pes rigis alio pe sūte angel
trūpide: / & and I herde a vois fro
four corneris of pe goldū anter:
/ & is bifore pe yzen of god: & septe
to pe sūte angel / & hadde a trū
pe / & vūbynde pou fūnt angels:
/ & ben hōūden in pe greet flood
eufrates: / & pe fūnt angels were
vūbōūdū: / & whiche weren redy in
to our / & day / & monepe / & zee to
slee pe pūde part of mē: & pe
nōūbre of pe oost of horlūne was
twēty pouland / & syris ten pou
and / & herde pe nōūbre of hē / & lo
/ & sayz horlis in vūliou: / & pei pat
lāten on hē: hadde fūp haburionis
/ & of iacūt / & of hūymūton: & pe
heedis of pe horlis were as hee
dis of hōis: & fier / & smoke / &
hūymūton comey forp of pe mo
uy of hē / of pes pūe plagis: pe
pūde part of mē was slayn: of
pe fier / & of pe smoke / & of pe fū
he / & of pe hūymūton / & came out
of pe moūp of hē: for pe pouer
of pe horlis is in pe moūp of hē:
/ & in pe taphis of hē: for pe taphis
of hem ben hē to serpentis: ha
nyge heedis: & in hē pes nōye
/ & yetopir mē / & were not slay
in pes plagis: neyr dide penaū
ce of pe wētis of her hondis: / &
pei wōlthpūde not deuelis / & sh
mylacrīs of gold / & of siluer / & of
bras / & of stōū / & of tree: / & whiche
neyr mōū se: neyr heet: neyr wā
dre: / & dīden not penaūce of her
malleygis: neyr of her wāhet / &
tis: neyr of her forncaciōū: neyr
of her pestis: were slayn: / &
And I sayz amōf / & c. 12.

Strong angel comyge dōū fro
heuene clopid wip a clowde: &
pe reynborbe on his heed: & pe
face of hē was as pe sūne: &
pe feet of hē as a piler of fy
er: & he hadde in his hond altil
book openyde: & he sette his rīst
foot on pe see: & pe left foot on
pe erpe: & he criete wip a gre
et vois: as a lōū whiche he ro
uy: & whiche he hadde cried: pe
seuene pūdzis spaken her voices:
/ & whiche pe seuene pūdzis hadde
spoke her voices: / & was to w
tīge: / & I herde a voīce fro heu
ne: seygge / make pū what pi
gis pe seuene pūdzis spaken:
/ & nyle pū wēypte hē: & pe angel
whō / & sayz / & tōūdyge aboue pe
see: & aboue pe erpe: / & līke up his
hond to heuene: & sūbōū bīhū p
hūney to wōldis of wōldis:
/ & pat made of nouzt heuene: & po
pūgis whiche hē in it: & pe erpe:
/ & po pūgis / & ben in it: & pe see:
/ & pūgis pat ben in it: / & pūme
shāl no more be: but in pe dāpes of pe vois
of pe seuēpe angel. Whiche he
shāl bigyne to trūpe: pe myltie
of god shāl be endid: as he pūch
de by his seruāntis pūctis: / & I her
de a vois fro heuene: & sūbōū
spēdyge wip me: seygge / go pou
/ & take pe book / & is openyde fro pe
hoūd of pe angel / & sūbōū abo
ue pe see: & on pe lond: / & I wente
to pe angel / & seide to hē: / & pūe sh
ulde zyne me pe book: & he seide
to me: take pe book / & deuour it:
/ & it shāl make pi wōmbe to be
bitter: but in pi moūp it shāl be
sūete as hony: / & I took pe book
of pe angels hond / & deuourde

it: & it was in my mouy as sibe
te hony: & whne I hadde deuourid
it: my wombe was battur: & he
seide to me: it bihouep yee estoo
ne to profecie to heepen me: &
to pepis & lagagis & many kig
id a reed lyk a **C** **11**
Azerd was zoni to me: &
it was seid to me: ryle y
i mete pe temple of god & ye aut:
i me y wouthpen i it: but caste
y out pe forzerd y is wyoute pe
temple & mete not it: for it is zo
ni to hepen me: & pei thule de
foule pe hooly citee: bi fourty
moneys & tibeys: & i thal zy
ne to my tibeys witneslig: & pei
thulen pfectie a pouland dayes
two hundrid & sixty: & thulen be
clonid wy sakis: yele be tibeys
ne oshues: & tibeys candelsticks:
i pei stonde in pe list of pe lord
of pe erpe: & it ony ma wole a
noye he: fier thal go out of pe
mouy of he & thal deuour her
enemies: & it ony wole hurte he:
yus it bihouep hym to be slayn
yes han power to close heuene:
y it reyne not in pe dayes of her
pfectie: & pei han poiber on wats
to turue hem into blood: & to luy
te pe erpe wy enery plage:
i as ofce as pei wolen: & whne
pei thulen ende her witneslig:
pe beett y azyer up fro depnel
se: thal make batel azens hem:
i thal oucome hem: & thal sle
hem: & pe bodies of hem thule
ligge in pe strectis of pe greet
citee y is clepid goothly sodom
& egypt: wher pe lord of he ws
crucified: & sume of lynagis &
of pepis & of langagis & of he

rene me: thule se pe bodies of
he by pre dayes & an half: & pei
thulen not suffre pe bodies of
he: to be putt in biriels: & me en
habytige pe erpe thulen haue
iope on he: & pei thule make my
rie: & thulen seide iustis to gode:
for pes tibeys pfecties turmetide
hem y dwellen on pe erpe: & af
pre dayes & an half: yelur it of
lyf of god entride into hem: &
pei stode on her feet: & greet
diecte felde on he y eppen hem:
i pei herde a greet vois fro heuene
ne: seyge to he: come up hider:
i pei stode into heuene in a clou
de: & pei enmyes of he fize he
i in pat our a greet erpe mouy
was mand: i pei ten pe part of
pe citee felde dou: i pei names
of me seuene pouland woren
slayn i pe erpe mouy: & pe
topir werent sent into dede: & a
uen glorie to god of heuene: he
seide wo is gon: & lo pe prude
wo thal come some: & pei seie pe
angel triupide: & grete vois
werent mand in heuene & seide: pe
reidme of pis world is mand our
lord and of crist his loue: & he thal
al regne into worldis of worldis
amen: & pei foun: & tibeys elde
me y sate in her seetis in pe list
of pe lord: felden on her faces:
i wozthpide god & seide: we don
palsis to yee lord god almyghty:
which art: & which were: & wh
ich art to conyge: whiche haue
takn y grete vertu: & haue
regued: & folk is ben wozp: & y
wazappe cam: & tyme of dede me
to be deined: & to zelde meede to
y seruantis & pfectis & halowis

idredige y name to singe & to
grete: & to distre hem y corru
piden pe erpe **C** **11**
Aid pe temple of god i he
uene was openid: & pe
arte of his testamēt was seyn
in his temple: & leutigis werent mand:
i voices & pūdis & erpe mouy
i greet hail: & a greet signe appe
ride in heuene: a wōmā clopid
wy pe liue: & pe moone vnder
hir feet: & in pe heed of hir a cro
wne of tibelst sterris: & she had
de in wombe: & she crie in tra
uelige of childe: & is turmetid:
y she ber chld: & anoy signe ws
seyn i heuene: & lo a greet reed
dragū y hadde seuene heedis &
ten hornes: & in pe heedis of hi
seuene drademes: & pe tail of
hi dzouy pe prude part of ster
ris of heuene: & sente he into pe
erpe: & pe dragon stode before pe
wōmā y was to berige chld:
y whne she hadde born chld: he
thulde deuour hir sone: & she
bar a knaue chld: y was to
reulige alle folkis i an yrū ze
rde: & hir sone was ranslyd
to god: & to his trone: & pe wō
mā flez into wildur neile: wher
she har a place mand redy of god:
y he fede hir pei: a poulynd day
es two hundrid & sixty: & a gre
et batel was mand in heuene:
i myzel & hile angels fouzte w
pe dragon: & pe dragon fauzte
i hile angels: & pei hadde not
myzt: ney pe place of he was
foudū more in heuene: & yllke
dragon was cast doibn: pe greet
olde serpent: y is clepid pe denel
& sathanas pat dilleyn ey al pe

world: he was cast dou into pe
erpe: & hile angels werent sent wy
hi: & i herde a greet vois in heuene:
seyunge: nois is mand heelp: &
tu & kigdom of our god: & pe po
wer of his cit: for ye aculser of
our bypen: is cast dou: which
aculide he before ye list of our
god: day & nyzt: & pei oucam hi
for pe blood of pe loub: & for pe
word of his witneslig: & pei lo
met not her lynes til to deap:
y fore ze heuenes be ze glad: &
ze y dwellen i he: wō to pe erpe
i to ye see: for ye fend is come
dou to zoni: & har greet wazappe:
i wyge y he har lytū tyme: &
astir y pe dragon & z y he was
cast dou to erpe: he purshake
de pe wōmā y bar pe knaue
chld: & tibeys wengis of a gre
et egle werent zoni to pe wōmā:
y she thulde fle into desert
into hir place: wher she is fed:
but tyme & tynes & halt tyme:
fro pe face of pe serpent: & pe ser
pent sente out of his mouy aft
pe wōmā: watir as a flood: y
he thulde make hir to be drayn
of pe flood: & pe erpe helpide pe
wōmā: & pei apenide his
mouy: & loop up: pe flood y
pe dragon sente of his mouy:
i pe dragon was wozp azens
pe wōmā: & he wente to ma
ke batel wy ope of hir seed: y
hepen ye maudemetis of god:
i han pe witneslig of ihū cit:
i he stood on pe grauēl of ye see:
Aid i saiz a be **C** **11**
est azyunge up of ye see:
hanpge seuene heedis:
ten hornes: & on his hornes ten

of god & his puge re long of mo
yles pe seruant of god. & pe lo
ng of re lomb & leide grete &
wondur ful ben piberkis. lord
god almyty. piberkis ben ma
t trewe lord kig of worldis/ lo
rd who thal not drede pee. & ma
gnyfie pi name. for pou aloo
ne art mercaful. for alle folkis
thulen come & woldhyre i pi
syt. for pidomes ben opyne.

And after pes pigis i say. &
lo pe tēple of pe tabernacle of
writenlig was openyd i heue
ne. & seuene angels haunge
seuene plagis. wente out of
pe tēple. & werē clopid wip a
doon clene & whyt. & werē bi
fore gird wip goldū girdils a
boute pe brestis. & oon of pe fou
re beestis. 3af to pe seuene an
gels. seuene goldū violis ful
of pe wrape of god. & tūer
into worldis of worldis. & pe
tēple was ful of smoke of pe
mageste of god. & of pe vtu of
hi. & no mā myzte entre into pe
tēple. til pe seuene plagis of
seuene angels werē endid.

And i herde. **¶** **¶** **¶**
a greet vois fro heue
ne. seynge to pe seuene
angels. go & stede out pe se
uene violis of goddis wrape.
into pe erpe. & pe firste angel
wente & stede out his viol into
pe erpe. & alwoude feers & wout
was maad on alle p hadde pe ca
ret of pe beest. & on he p wout
pide pe beest. & his ymage. **¶** And
pe secūde angel stede out his
viol into pe sea. & pe blood was
maad as of a deed pig. & ech mā

lyngge. was deed in pe see. **¶** And
pe thridde angel stede out his vi
ol on pe floodis. & on pe wellis of
watris. & seide. nist art pou lord.
v art & p wer hooly. p deuest pes
pungis. for pei stede out pe blood
of halewis & pferis. & pou hast so
mū to hem blood to drynke. for pei
ben wout. & i herde anop seynge
the lord god almyty. trewe & nist
ben pidomes. **¶** And pe fourthe an
gel stede out his viol into pe su
ne. & it was zoun to hy to turne
te me wip heete & fier. & me stas
hiden wip greet heete. & blasfemy
den pe name of god haunge po
wer on pes plagis. nep pei dū
penaunce. pat p thulde zyne go
ue to hi. **¶** And pe fyfthe angel
stede out his viol. on pe see of
pe beest. & his kigdom was maad
derk. & pei eeten to gidre her ti
gis for lozwe. & pei blasfemyde
god of heuene for lozwe of her
woutis. & pei dūde not penaunce
of her werkis. **¶** And pe sixte
angel stede out his viol. & p
ilke greet flood enfates. & drie
de pe watir of it. & wepe wer
maad redy to kigis fro pe time
rilyg. & i say. pe vclene spi
ritis bi pe maner of froggis
go out of pe moir of pe dragon.
& of pe moir of pe beest. & of pe
moir of pe fals pfer. for pei be
spiris of deuils. makige sig
nes. & pei goon for to kigis of
al erpe. to gadre hem to a ba
tel to pe greet day of almyty god.
lo i come as anixt reef. blestid
is he p wakip & kep his cloys.
p he wandre not nakid. & pat
pei se not pe fals hede of hi. & he

thal gadre he into a place. & is
clepid in ebrews hermagidon. **¶** And
pe seuene angel stede out his
viol into pe er. & a greet vois
wente out of heuene fro pe tro
ne. & seide. it is don. & leitygis we
re maad & voices & pūdis & a
greet erpe moing was maad.
which mā neie was sipe me
werē on erpe. such erpe moing
so greet. erpe was maad into pe
parties. & pe citees of heuene me
felden dū. & greet babilon cam
into mynde bifore god. to zyne
to it pe cuppe of indignaciō of
his wrape. & ech yle fley alwey.
& hūlis ben not found. & greet
hail as a talent. cam dū fro he
uene into me. & me blasfemyde
god for pe plage of hail. for
it was maad ful greet.

And oon of pe. **¶** **¶** **¶**
seuene angels cam. pat
hadde seuene violis. & spak wip
me & seide. come pou. i thal sthe
we to pee re dāpnaciō of pe
greet hoore. p sittip on many
watris. wip which. kyingis of er
pe dūden fornyaciō. & pei pat
diuullen in pe erpe be maad dū
kū of pe wyn of hir leatherie
& he took me into desert in spi
rit. & i say. a wōmā sittige on
a reed beest ful of names of blasse
mye. haunge seuene heedis
& ten hornes. & pe wōmā was
emzoud wip spū. & reed. & on
gild wip gold. & precious stoon
& peerhs. haunge a goldū cup
pe in hir hond ful of abhomy
naciōis. & vndelne of her
fornaciō. & a name writū
in pe forheed of hir. mysterie

babilon pe greet modir of for
nyaciōis. & of abhomynaciōis
of erpe. & i say. a wōmā drūke
of pe blood of seyntis. & of pe
blood of martiris of ihu. & whie
i say hir. i wondurte wip gre
et wondur. & pe angel seide to
me. wip wondurist pou. i thal seie
to pee pe sacramēt of pe wōmā.
& of pe beest. p berip hir. & hap
seuene heedis & ten hornes. pe
beest which pou szeit. was &
is not. & sthe thal sthe fro dep
nelle. & sthe thal go into. pūth
yng. & me diuellige in erpe
thulen wondre. whos names
ben not writū in pe book of lyp.
fro pe makyng of pe wold se
yng. pe beest p was. & is not.
& p is is pe witt. who p hap wip
dom. pe seuene heedis be seuene
hūlis. on which pe wōmā sit
ty. & kigis seuene ben. spue han
feld dū. oon is. & anopir comey
not zit. & whie he thal come.
it bihouer hi to diuelle a thort
ryue. & pe beest p was & is not.
& she is pe erpe. & is of pe se
uene. & thal go into perulthig.
& pe ten hornes. which pou hast
seyn. ben ten kigis. p zit han
not take kyingdom. but pei thū
len take power as kigis. oon
our astir pe beest. pēle han a
coucil. & thūle brake her. ver
tu & power to pe beest. pes thū
len fize wip pe lomb. & pe lomb
thal oilcome he. for he is lord
of lordis. & kig of kigis. & pei p
ben wip hi. ben clepid chosū & se
yful. & he seide to me. pe watris
whiche pou hast seyn. where
pe hoore sittip. ben peplus & fol

his & langagis / & ye ten hornes
 y'ron hast leyn in ye beest: y'es
 thulen make hir desolat & nakid
 & thulen ete ye fleschis of hir
 & thule brene to gide hir wip
 fier / for god zaf into ye hertis
 of hem: y'pei do y'pat is pleisur
 to hi / y'pei zyne her kyngdom to
 ye beest: til ye wordis of god be
 endid / & ye woman whom you
 hast leyn: is ye greet citee pat
 hay kyngdom on eigis of ye erpe
 / & d'astir y'es / **C. viii**
Angis / & z'anoz angel
 comyge don fro heuene
 haunge greet pouer: & ye erpe
 was lurned of his gloze / & he
 criete wip strong vois: & leide
 greet babiloyu feld don feld don:
 & is maid ye habitacion of deu
 lis: & ye kepynge of ech vnde
 spirit: & ye kepig of ech vnde
 ne foul: & harte ful for alle folkis
 drunken of ye wyppye of fornyca
 cion of hir: & eigis of ye erpe &
 marchantis of ye erpe: dide for
 nyccacion wip hir: & yei be maid
 riche of ye vertu of delis of
 hir: & herde anoz vois of heu
 ne: seyge / my peple go ze out
 of it: & be ze not parceneris of
 ye trespassis of it: & ze thule
 not resseyne of ye woundis of
 it: for ye synes of it came til
 to heuene: & ye lord hadde myde
 of ye wickednesse of hir: zelde ze
 to it: as she zeldide to you: & dou
 ble zedouble pigis. astir her wer
 pis / in yedynke y'she medhude
 to you: meynge ze double to hi
 as moche as she glorified hir
 self & was in delis: so moche
 turnet zyne to hir & weylung

for in hir herte she sey / I litte a
 queene & I am not a widowe: &
 I shal not be weylung / & y'fore
 in o day hir woundis thule come.
 deep & moynys & hysur: & she sh
 al be brent in fyre: for god is str
 ong: y' shal deme hir / & ye eigis
 of ye erpe thulen by wepe & bi
 weple hem self on hir. whiche bi
 den fornyccacion wip hir: & hysur
 den in delis: whiche yei thule
 be ye smoke of ye breynge of
 it: stondige fer for drede of pe
 turnetis of it: & seyge wo wo
 wo: pilke greet citee babiloyu
 & pilke stronge citee: for in con
 our yidoom comey / & marchan
 tis of ye erpe thulen wepe on
 it & moine: for no ma shal bre
 more ye marchandise of hem
 ye marchandies of gold & of sil
 ver & of precious stoon: & of pe
 erl & of bies & of purp & of silk
 & cortyn: & ech tre thym: & alle
 vessels of yner: & alle vessels of
 precious stoon: & of bras & of wu
 & of marbil: & canel & amoye
 & of swete smellege pigis &
 opnemetis & encense & of wy
 & of oyle & of flour: & of wheete
 & of werke beestis & of sheep
 & of horsis & of cartis & of ser
 uantis & of lyues of men: &
 ym applis of ye delis of y'lyf
 wente away fro yee: & alle fane
 pigis & ful dere pitheden fro
 yee: & marchandis of y'es pigis
 thulen no more fynde yo pigis
 yei pat ben maid ryche of it
 thulen stonde fer for drede of
 meynas of it: weylunge & mo
 nyge & seyngge / wo wo pilke
 greet citee pat was clouid w

bys & pur & reed starlet: & was
 ouer gild wip gold & precious sto
 on & margaritis: for in con our
 so many richellis ben destitute
 & ech goi nouit & alle y' sailen bi
 ship: & man meris & pat word
 in ye see: stode fer & cride / seyn
 ge ye plate of ye breynge of it:
 seyngge / what is lyk pis greet
 citee: & yei caste poundir on her
 heedis: & cryede weylge & mo
 nyngge & seyngge / wo wo pilke
 greet citee in which alle y' han
 shipis in ye see ben maid ry
 che of pyles of it: for in con our
 it is desolat / heuene & hooly apol
 tis & phetis: make ze ful out
 wye on it: for god hay demyd you
 redom of it: and o strong angel
 took vp a stoon as a greet myl
 ne stoo: & sette into ye see: & sei
 de / i pis bre pilke greet citee
 babiloyu shal be sent: & now it
 shal no more be foundu: & ye vo
 ys of harpis: & of me of unlyf
 & seyngge wip pipe & tripe:
 shal no more be foundu in it: &
 ye vois of mylne stoon shal no
 more be herd in yee: & ye lyzt
 of lanterne shal no more shi
 ne to yee: & ye vois of ye hole
 boude & of ye wyf shal no mo
 ze ze be herd in yee: for y' mar
 chantis weren pias of ye erpe
 for in y' wachecraftis: alle folkis
 erride: & ye blood of profetis &
 seyntis is foundu in it: & of alle
 men: ben slayn in erpe / **C. ix**
Astir y'es pigis / her te: as
 a greet vois of many tru
 pis in heuene: seyge alle
 luya / heringe & gloze & vertu is
 herd in it: & ech crafti ma & ech
 craft: shal no more be

to our god: for trewe & iust ben
 ye domes of hi: which demyd of
 ye greet hoze pat desolide ye
 erpe in hir lecherie: & vengide
 ye blood of his seruantis: of ye
 hoondis of hir: & est yei leide al
 lchya: & ye smoke of it stger
 vp: into ye wordis of wordis
 & ye soure & trewe my senyours
 & four beestis felden don: & wo
 thypide god litte on ye trone
 & leide ame: alleluya: & a vois we
 re out of ye trone: & leide alle ye
 seruantis of our god sepe ze he
 ryngis to our god: & ze y' dreden
 god: smale & grete: & herde a
 vois of a greet tripe: as ye vois
 of many watris: & as ye vois
 of grete pydis seyngge alleluya
 for our lord god almyty hay reg
 ned / joye we & make we myrre:
 & zyne gloze to hi for ye weddi
 gis of ye lomb came: & ye wyf
 of hi made redy hir self: & it is
 zoun to hir: pat she kener hir
 wip whyt billyn thynge / for
 whi billyn is iustifyingis of
 seyntis: & he leide to me / wryte you
 blelid ben yei y' ben depid to ye
 sooper of weddigis of ye lomb
 & he leide to me / y'es wordis of
 god ben trewe: & / feld don bi
 fore his feet: to wortthipe hym
 & he leide to me / se you y' pou do
 not / I am a seruant wip yee &
 of y' byre: haunge ye is wnel
 sig of ihu: wortthipe you god
 for ye witneslig of ihu: is spurt
 of pfecte / and / I say: heuene ope
 nyd: & lo a whyt hoze: & he y' sat
 on hi was clepid ferful & loyfast
 & wip ryzibylness he demey &

fastip / 7 pe 7zen of hi were as fla
me of fier: 7 in his heed ma
ny diademes / 7 he hadde a name
writen. which no man knew: but
he / 7 he was clopid in a clop
reynit wip blood: 7 pe name of
7h was clepid pe lone of god: 7
pe oostis 7 ben in heuene: huede
him on whyte horlis. clopid w
bulfin whyt 7 deu: 7 a siberd
tharp on ech syde cam forp of
his mony: 7 wip it he smyte
folks: 7 he thal reule hem wip
an 7ru 7erd: 7 he tredip pe prestis
of wipn of strong: 7 venauce of pe
wraupe of almygti god: 7 he har
writen in his clop 7 in pe heme:
fig of kyngis 7 lord of lordis.
And I say: an engel stondige in
pe sunne: 7 he crieð wip greet vol
7 seide to alle briddis 7 floken by
pe myddel of heuene: come ze 7
be ze gaderid to pe greet laper
of god: 7 ze ete pe fleuth of 7ig:
7 fleuth of tribunes: 7 fleuth of
trouge me 7 fleuth of horlis 7
of po 7 sittip on hem: 7 pe fleuth
of alle fire me 7 bonde me: 7 of
smale 7 of grete: 7 I say: pe be
est 7 pe kyngis of erpe: 7 pe oostis
of hem gaderid: to make batel w
hi 7 sant on pe hors 7 wip his oost:
7 pe beest was canzt: 7 wip hur
pe fall 7 fete. 7 made signes by
fore hur: in whiche he disseynede
hem 7 took 7e carect of pe beest:
7 7 worlthipede pe ymage of it:
pes treyne weren sent quike
into pe pool of fier brenyng
wip bymtoon: 7 re ope were
slayn wip pe siberd of 7y pat
sant on pe hors pat comen forp

of pe mony of 7y: 7 alle briddis
were fillid wip pe fleuth of 7e
And I say: an
engel comyge don fro
heuene. hanng 7e keye
of depnele: 7 a greet chayne 7 he
hond: and he canzte pe dragon 7e
elde serpent. 7 is pe deu 7 sathan
was: 7 and he boond hi bi a poult
zeeris: and he sente hi into dep
nele 7 dolice on hi: 7 he disseynede
no more pe folks: til a poultend
ris be fillid: astur pes 7igis 7 bi
honey him to be vuboudu a last
tyme. And I say: seetis. 7 pe
saten on hem: 7 doom was 7ou
to 7e: 7 pe sonis of me biheidd
for pe witnele 7ig of 7y: 7 for pe
word of god: 7 he 7 worlthipede
not pe beest. ney pe ymage of
it: ney taken pe carect of it in
her forheedis ney in her hondis:
7 pei lyuede: 7 reguede wip 7e a
poultend zeeris: ope of deð men
lyuede not: til a poultend zeeris
ben endid: 7 is pe furste a 7ery
fig: bleid 7 hooly is he 7 hap pa
rt in pe furste a 7ery 7ig: 7 pes
me: 7e secude deð hap not potter:
but pei shule be 7is of god 7
of crist: 7 pei shulen regue wip
hi a poultend zeeris: 7 whie a
poultend zeeris shule be endid:
sathanas shal be vuboudu of
his prison: 7 he shal gon out 7
shal disseynede folks: 7 ben on
foum corneris of pe erpe: gog
7 magog: and he shal gadre 7e
into batel: whos noume is as
pe gravel of pe see: 7 pei shule
up on pe broodnesse of erpe: 7
en 7roune de pe castels of 7y

7 is 7e loved citee: 7 fier cam don
of god fro heuene: 7 denounde 7e
7e deu 7 disseynede 7e: was
sent into pe pool of fier: 7 of bym
stoon wher bope pe beest 7 fall
profetis shule be turnetid day
7 wip: into wordis of wordis
amen. And I say: a greet wip
trone: 7 oon sitrige on it: fro 7y
os litz erpe flede 7 heuene: 7 pe
place is not foundu of 7e: and 7
sy: deede me grete 7 smale ston
dige in pe litz of pe trone: 7 bo
pis were openyd: 7 deede me 7e
ren demyd of pes 7igis 7 were
writen in pe bookis astur pe wer
7is of hem: 7 pe se 7at hile deede
me 7 were in it: 7 de 7e helle
sane her deede me: pat weren
in hem: 7 it was demyd of ech: af
tur pe wer 7is of 7e: 7 helle 7 de 7e
were sent into pe pool of fier:
7 is pe secude de 7e: 7 he 7 was
not foundu wip in pe book of
7y: was sent into pe pool of fier.
And I say: ne
7e heuene 7 ne 7e erpe
for pe furste heuene 7 pe
furste erpe were a wey: 7 pe see
is not wip: 7 I say: pe hool
citee 7er 7in ne 7e. comyge don
fro heuene maid redy of god:
as a wip our ned to hur huse bon
de. And I herde a greet vois
fro pe trone: seyinge: lo pe ta
bernacle of god is wip me: 7
he shal dwelle wip hem: 7 pe
shulen be his peple: 7 he god
wip hem shal be her god: 7 god
shal wip 7e wey ech teer fro pe
7ze of hem: 7 de 7e shal no more
be: ney mornng ney 7yryng:

ney 7ome shal be ouer: whiche
furste 7igis were away: 7 he
seide 7e sat in pe trone: lo 7e ma
7e alle 7igis newe: 7 he seide to
me: wip 7e 7e pes wordis be
moost feyful 7 trewe: 7 he sei
de to me: it is don: I am alpha
7 oo: pe bygynng 7 ende: 7 shal
7yue 7yly of pe welle of quike
watur: to hi pat 7yrtip: he pat
shal oucome: shal welde pes
7igis: 7 shal be god to 7y: 7 he
shal be sone to me: but to ferð
ful me 7 vnbileueful 7 can fid
7e maquelleris 7 fornyratours:
7 to wip 7is 7 worlthipers of 7
dols 7 to alle 7yris: pe part of
hem shal be in pe pool brenyng
wip fier: 7 bymtoon: 7 is pe se
cude de 7e. And oon cam of pe
seuene engels hanng violis
fulle of pe laste seuene vesan
ces: 7 he spak wip me: 7 seide: co
me 7ou 7 shal 7he 7e to pee
7e sponse 7e wip of pe lomb:
7 he took me up in spurt: into
a greet hil 7 7y: 7 he 7he wite to
me pe hool citee 7er 7in comyge
don fro heuene of god: hanng
pe clerece of god: 7 pe litz of it
lyt a 7roul stoon: as pe stoon 7al
pis: as crist: 7 it hadde a walle
greet 7 7y: hanng 7elue zatis:
7 in pe zatis of it 7elue engels:
7 names of 7elue 7ynagis of pe
sones of irael: fro pe east 7e za
tis: 7 fro pe uoy 7e zatis: 7 fro
pe louy 7e zatis: 7 fro pe west
7e zatis: 7 pe walle of pe citee
hadde 7elue fundamētis: 7 7e
7e 7elue names of 7elue a
postis 7 of pe lomb: 7 he 7e spak

H	re bigymnyng a rule pat tellyn in whiche chapuris of pe bible ze 1000 contē	
ye leuvis pntis & gofpels	pat ven rad by al pe zeer in haly churchē.	
first tuesday in zomaynus	tu. d. And we knowen	ende Floyd in pe lord ihu crī
aduent	matthew xxi.	a. Whāne ihu cam ȳz
wednesday	James .v.	b. Be ze patient til
ffunday	mark .i.	a. ye bigymnyng of
ffunday	flaie ii.	a. heere me ze pat
ffunday	an. iii.	a. In po dayes 1000
ffunday	Romis xv.	b. ffor ȳher eue yi
ffunday	luk xxi.	c. Tokenes schule tr
ffunday	Sadurie viii.	b. I am turned azei
ffunday	an. xi.	c. Truly I sey to you
ffunday	flaie xii.	d. Upon yi wallis is
ffunday	loon i.	b. Iam leuy wimessig.
ffunday	J. Corinthe iii.	a. So a man gentē us
ffunday	an. xxi.	b. Whāne 1000 i toud
ffunday	flaie ii.	a. And yer schal be i
ffunday	flaie vii.	c. Pe lord qak to adā
ffunday	luk i.	d. ye angel gabriel
ffunday	flaie xi.	a. And yer schal go
ffunday	luk pe first	e. And marie wos.
ffunday	i. les flaie xix.	f. pei schulen crye.
ffunday	ii. les flaie xxx.	a. Glace schal desent
ffunday	iii. les flaie xi.	c. Upon an hii hyl
ffunday	iiii. les flaie xlv.	a. peie pūgis seiy
ffunday	v. les flaie vi.	g. fforsoye an angel.
ffunday	vi. les flaie xii.	a. We preien zou.
ffunday	vii. les flaie xvi.	a. In pe tistreneze
ffunday	viii. les flaie xxi.	b. Joie ze in ye lord
ffunday	ix. les flaie xxvi.	c. Whāne ieiuis sen
ffunday	x. les flaie xxxi.	d. Joie ze sones of
ffunday	xi. les flaie xxxvi.	e. And pis word wete
ffunday	xii. les flaie xli.	f. Donytir of syon
ffunday	xiii. les flaie xlv.	c. Se ze & be war.
ffunday	xiiii. les flaie xli.	a. ffor syon i schal not
ffunday	xv. les flaie xli.	a. Doult ye seruant
ffunday	xvi. les flaie xli.	d. Whāne marie pe

Cristmase nyr mattheu. i. a. pe look of pe ge **ceude** par is depid aut
at laudis. i. i. b. pe puple par wen **ceude** iby onten **ceude**
Cristmase nyr dyte. ii. c. pe grace of god. **ceude** yese pigis + monete
Cristmase nyr luk. ii. a. Al mañdemet wen **ceude** of good wille/
Do pe le i. i. a. pe spirit of pe lo **ceude** of pe lord/
aude mane. dyte. ii. b. pe benygnyte + **ceude** of allastunge lise/
luk. ii. c. pe schepardis qu **ceude** was said to be/
Do pe hy i. i. a. for par my peple **ceude** of oure god/
mañe. i. b. God par quik lity **ceude** situle not fayle/
S. steuene. i. a. In pe bigynnyng **ceude** grace + of tyme/
alrus. ii. d. Steuene ful of yethow **ceude** goot he diede/
a. i. f. lo + sente to zon. **ceude** of pe lord/
S. joon. i. a. who dzeddy god. **ceude** pe lord oure god/
joon. ii. f. i. h. ley to yest **ceude** is trewe/
Cristmase. i. i. a. i. say a boue **ceude** trone of god/
a. i. c. lo pe angel of pe **ceude** for pe ben not/
S. thoms. ii. i. a. Sch bishop taken **ceude** of melchisedech/
luk. ii. b. Al woepi man wen **ceude** to ierusalem/
vi. du. i. a. As longe tyme as **ceude** an er by god/
cristmase. i. i. c. And his fadir + **ceude** of god was i hi/
S. siluest. i. a. lo pe greer prest. **ceude** of swerelle/
a. i. b. Al man par goep **ceude** ioie of pi lord/
Reise pe. dyte. ii. c. pe gre of god oure **ceude** and monete/
ns. i. d. And afe par exte **ceude** conspued i wole/
luk. ii. b. pe benygnyte + pe **ceude** allastunge lise/
Whelpe eue. dyte. iii. d. Whane eroude wa **ceude** depid a nazary/
a. i. e. It was doen wha **ceude** fro iordan/
Whelpe nyr. i. i. a. Rys be you lity. **ceude** pe lord tellunge/
a. i. b. whane i. h. was b. **ceude** in to her tunte/
Souda. i. i. a. pe same pital par is rad of isaye pe **ceude** twelfte day/
yime. i. b. joon pe finte. d. joon an ihu co **ceude** pe sone of god/
ytas. i. i. a. Lord my god. i. **ceude** pe lord almyti/
twelfte. i. d. ihesus cam fro. **ceude** plesid to me/
a. i. b. Zypeten i bishop **ceude** on of a novir/
a. i. c. Whane i. h. was **ceude** god + men/
a. i. d. pe wille of myn **ceude** par dileuey/
wednesday. i. i. c. whane i. h. hadde **ceude** schal come nyz/
a. i. e. i. f. i. speke wip tu **ceude** of pese is charyte

Friday. i. i. a. Every soule be **ceude** pis same ping/
luk. ii. b. i. h. turnede azen **ceude** of his moir/
ii. **S**unday. i. i. b. i. h. par han i. h. **ceude** to melke pingis/
roms. ii. c. a. i. h. beddingis i. h. **ceude** dileueiden i hi/
joon. ii. d. f. A trewe word and **ceude** of worldis amen/
wednesday. i. i. b. i. h. And he cam i to **ceude** vnbileue of hem/
a. i. c. i. h. i. wot + tiste in **ceude** of fey. is syne/
a. i. d. i. h. cam don in **ceude** place of pe aune/
a. i. e. f. Rule ze be pryd **ceude** puel by good/
ii. **S**unday. i. i. a. whane i. h. was **ceude** fro par hour/
a. i. b. i. bishop ze vi ze **ceude** i. h. ze aze men/
wednesday. i. i. a. i. h. entride eftwone **ceude** restord to him/
a. i. b. i. h. i. witen ze not par **ceude** and aut of god/
a. i. c. i. h. i. h. ze aboute al **ceude** mythe puple/
a. i. d. c. To no man owe **ceude** of pe laue/
a. i. e. whane he was s. **ceude** obersthai to hi/
wednesday. i. i. a. i. h. is good to ania **ceude** ze vncoutynete.
a. i. b. i. h. was doen i. h. **ceude** reuine of god/
a. i. c. i. h. man i. h. i. h. **ceude** anentis god/
a. i. d. c. pei broukten to hi **ceude** and bleside he/
a. i. e. ze as pe chosen of **ceude** pe fadir bi hyn/
a. i. f. pe kyngdom of i. h. **ceude** in to my berna/
a. i. g. i. bishop first of **ceude** in fey and tyme/
a. i. h. A man hadde tibo **ceude** dileueiden to hi/
a. i. i. g. i. h. i. witen ze not par. **ceude** stoon was aut/
a. i. j. pe kyngdom of he **ceude** feise ben chosen/
a. i. k. f. for if also oure. **ceude** but i. h. in you/
a. i. l. And pei zeden fro **ceude** par sente me/
a. i. m. d. And we han pe **ceude** ben euerlastunge/
a. i. n. e. i. h. par is not i. h. **ceude** schult be dappid/
a. i. o. d. ze i. h. i. h. gladly. **ceude** crist dwelle i me/
a. i. p. whane mythe pe **ceude** fruyt in patiente/
a. i. q. i. h. i. h. god to wit **ceude** huse pouzys/
a. i. r. And est ihu biga **ceude** of heering heere/
a. i. s. We witinge pe d. **ceude** and was azen/
a. i. t. And he was and **ceude** also pe eglis/
a. i. u. i. f. i. speke wip tu **ceude** of pese is charyte

Monday Luk. xviij. f. Ihesus took hys tyme to god
Joel. ij. d. Be ze confid to in ceute
Mat. vi. d. Whane ze fasten ceute
Tuesday Mat. xviij. a. In po dines likened ceute
Mat. xviij. b. And whane ze had ceute
Friday Luke. xviij. a. One ne ceute pon ceute
Mat. v. & vi. g. ze han herd pat it ceute
Saturday Luke. xviij. d. If pon schalt take ceute
Mat. xviij. h. And whane it was ceute
Monday Luke. xviij. a. We helpeinge mones ceute
Mat. xviij. a. Ihesus was led of a ceute
Tuesday Luke. xviij. c. To i my sif schal. ceute
Mat. xviij. c. Whane man? soue ceute
Wednesday Luke. xviij. c. Schip pe lord whil ceute
Mat. xviij. c. Whane he was ceute
Thursday Luke. xviij. e. Strij up to me in ceute
Mat. xviij. e. Helpen cam in to ceute
Friday Luke. xviij. f. Pe scabris & pe fan ceute
Mat. xviij. f. And pe word of pe ceute
Saturday Luke. xviij. f. Ihesus seide to pe ieris ceute
Mat. xviij. f. Pe soule pat schal ceute
Monday Luke. xviij. a. Per was a feeste d. ceute
Mat. xviij. a. Bilorde lord fro in ceute
Tuesday Luke. xviij. e. If fordope ze liepen ceute
Mat. xviij. e. Pe pntis macedu ceute
Wednesday Luke. xviij. a. Ihaue mif of us ceute
Mat. xviij. a. Forsope an angel ceute
Thursday Luke. xviij. c. Breyen we sien ceute
Mat. xviij. c. Ihesus took petir & ceute
Friday Luke. xviij. a. We preien zou & ceute
Mat. xviij. a. Ihesus zede out from ceute
Saturday Luke. xviij. d. Dure lord god p. ceute
Mat. xviij. d. To i go & ze schul ceute
Monday Luke. xviij. c. Pe word of pe lord ceute
Mat. xviij. c. Ihesus spak to pe pe ceute
Tuesday Luke. xviij. e. Lord kyng almy ceute
Mat. xviij. e. Ihesus wente up to. ceute

Wednesday Jeremie. xviij. b. Cusid be pe man ceute
Joel. v. g. I may no ving to ceute
Thursday Genes. xviij. b. Joseph seide to hys ceute
Mat. xviij. g. Per was an huch ceute
Friday Gen. xviij. b. Reletra seide to hys ceute
Juk. xv. c. Al man hadde dber ceute
Saturday Ester. v. a. Be ze folowers of ceute
Luk. xviij. d. Ihesus was casting ceute
Monday Luk. xviij. a. Ramman pnce of ceute
Luk. xviij. d. Pe farisers seide ceute
Tuesday Luk. xviij. a. Al woman of pe ceute
Mat. xviij. d. If pi broy symer ceute
Wednesday Exodi. xviij. c. Honoure pi fadir ceute
Mat. xviij. a. Scabris & fanises ceute
Thursday Jer. viij. a. Pe word p. is mid ceute
Joel. vi. e. Worche ze not me ceute
Friday Amos. xviij. b. Pe children of isrl ceute
Joel. viij. b. Ihesus cam in to a ceute
Saturday Samuel. xviij. a. Al man was i lab ceute
Joel. viij. a. Ihesus wente in to ceute
Monday Galat. iij. d. It is writu p. abia ceute
Joel. vi. a. Ihesus wente ou pe ceute
Tuesday Luk. xviij. e. pane camen tibo ceute
Joel. vi. c. Pe palk of ieris ceute
Wednesday Exodi. xviij. b. Pe lord forsope spak ceute
Joel. viij. c. Whane pe mpydyl. ceute
Thursday Exodi. xviij. e. I schal halewe my ceute
Luk. xviij. d. Be ze waschen & ceute
Friday Luk. xviij. a. Ihesus palkige say a ceute
Joel. xvi. d. Al woman of sum ceute
Saturday Luk. xviij. d. ap fadir worchipe ceute
Joel. v. e. Pe sone of an huch ceute
Monday Luk. xviij. a. Per was a syk m ceute
Joel. xvi. c. In pleasant tyme ceute
Tuesday Luk. xviij. c. I am pe lzt of ceute
Joel. viij. c. I am pe lzt of ceute
Wednesday Luk. xviij. c. Crist beunge a bi ceute
Joel. viij. h. Who of zou schal ceute



day	Luk. xxiij.	c. To tveyne of he	ceute	bekige of breod
Tuesday	Mat. xij.	f. Bryen & sones	ceute	azeirelde thi
Wednesday	Luk. xxiij.	f. He stood in pe m	ceute	to alle folkis
Thursday	Mat. xij.	c. Petir sayd: & an	ceute	be toen a wey
Friday	Luk. xxiij.	a. He etelone the	ceute	azen fro deef
Saturday	Mat. xij.	e. pe angel of pe	ceute	cam to celarye
Sunday	Luk. xxiij.	c. marke stood at pe	ceute	seide to me
Monday	Mat. xij.	f. Crist conys diete	ceute	myself of god
Tuesday	Luk. xxiij.	e. Euleneue discip	ceute	of pe world
Wednesday	Mat. xij.	a. Dunte ze a wey al	ceute	ze han merk
Thursday	Luk. xxiij.	a. In o day of pe wo	ceute	azen fro deef
Friday	Mat. xij.	b. Al ping yt is thun	ceute	of god in hym
Saturday	Luk. xxiij.	d. Whane it was e	ceute	list in his name
Sunday	Mat. xij.	c. It crist is wechid	ceute	man in his ordi
Monday	Luk. xxiij.	d. He was eerly pe	ceute	teelden to ope
Tuesday	Mat. xij.	e. Obepe ze to zour	ceute	of worldis and
Wednesday	Luk. xxiij.	b. marke mandelei	ceute	in to pis day
Thursday	Mat. xij.	f. Crist suffride for	ceute	of oure soulis
Friday	Luk. xxiij.	c. I am a good lye	ceute	and o sheepherte
Saturday	Mat. xij.	e. Winge pat not	ceute	ibip ouden ceute
Sunday	Luk. xxiij.	a. In o day of pe wo	ceute	pat y was toen
Monday	Mat. xij.	d. It poen pe gilt of	ceute	crist oure lord
Tuesday	Luk. xxiij.	d. pe disciplis of is	ceute	hope ben kept
Wednesday	Mat. xij.	d. I viseche zou as	ceute	to tyrannys
Thursday	Luk. xxiij.	d. A lital & pane ze	ceute	fz zou zoë roye
Friday	Mat. xij.	a. my lital sones y	ceute	lyt schynen now
Saturday	Luk. xxiij.	f. A question was	ceute	dwellyn in hym
Sunday	Mat. xij.	b. ffor alle ze beu pe	ceute	edifie ze ech ovr
Monday	Luk. xxiij.	y. I lzt cam in to	ceute	so I speke
Tuesday	Mat. xij.	d. Ich good zift &	ceute	saue zoure sonis
Wednesday	Luk. xxiij.	b. I go to hi pat sen	ceute	telle to zou
Thursday	Mat. xij.	a. Ryle ze haue pe	ceute	realy doom
Friday	Luk. xxiij.	c. Holy fadir kepe	ceute	hem fro puel
Saturday	Mat. xij.	f. ze seen pat ama	ceute	werkis is deed
Sunday	Luk. xxiij.	f. Lital sones zit a	ceute	sue affurward
Monday	Mat. xij.	f. Be ze doers of pe	ceute	fro pis world
Tuesday	Luk. xxiij.	f. Bruh truly I sey	ceute	out fro god

Excellion James. v. f. knowledhe ze ech **ende** multitude of synes/
moneday Luk. x. b. who of you schal **ende** pat axen hym/
Ascension euen Mat. iij. f. Of ye multitude **ende** was need to ech.
Ascension day Jon. xvi. a. Whane he hadde a **ende** come to pee/
Ascension day Act. i. a. Dreofle first I made **ende** in to heuene/
Ascension day Act. xvi. f. Whane ye euleuene **ende** signes tolesinge
Ascension day f. pet. iij. c. Be ze prudent **ende** crist omre lord/
Ascension day Jon. xv. g. Whane pe confesso **ende** I wolde to you/
Ascension day f. pet. i. d. pat also zesit be **ende** wyf outen **ende**/
Ascension day Luk. xxiij. ij. I schal sente pe bi **ende** + blessing god/
Ascension day f. pet. i. a. God teptide alpa **ende** diuette pere/
Ascension day f. pet. i. f. moyses wrot a so **ende** fulfillde it/
Ascension day i. let. iij. a. And seueue **ende** and hydyng/
Ascension day i. let. iij. a. Heere pon iij. pe **ende** lynes w. men/
Ascension day i. let. iij. a. It bifel whane ap **ende** katom of god/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. If ze lonen me: ke **ende** to him my lif/
Ascension day Luk. x. a. Whane pe dayes **ende** pingis of god/
Ascension day Luk. x. d. If ony man lonen **ende** to me so I do/
Ascension day Luk. x. g. Dentr apene his **ende** pe lord ihu crist/
Ascension day Luk. x. d. God lonede so pe **ende** doen in god/
Ascension day Luk. x. c. Whane pe apostlis **ende** pe holy gost/
Ascension day Luk. x. a. Druli I sey to you **ende** plenteuonshy/
Ascension day Sapient. i. a. Ione ze nylbismesse **ende** hay of vois/
Ascension day Luk. x. c. Petre stode wyf **ende** schal be last/
Ascension day Luk. x. i. No man may come **ende** of pe world/
Ascension day Luk. x. b. f. f. f. cam down **ende** in pat cytee/
Ascension day Luk. x. a. Twelue apostlis **ende** enerywhere/
Ascension day Luk. x. e. agen of iij. heere **ende** wyf pi face/
Ascension day Luk. x. c. It was doen of d. **ende** pingis to day/
Ascension day i. let. iij. a. I schal heelde out **ende** schal be last/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. pe lord spak to m. **ende** lord almyhti/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. moyses seide to pe **ende** zonen to pee/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. pe lord spak to m. **ende** to me a peple/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. pe angel of pe k. **ende** I to pe worldis/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. Al pe cytee cam **ende** I pe holy gost/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. f. Iht rous up fro **ende** kigdom of god/
Ascension day i. let. iij. c. a. I say + lo a toze **ende** of worldis;

Excellion

Ascension day Jon. iij. a. per was a man of **ende** eulastinge lif/
Ascension day f. cor. x. d. For I haue taken **ende** blod of pe lord/
Ascension day Jon. vi. l. my fleisch is vili **ende** wyf outen **ende**/
Ascension day f. Jon. iij. c. God is charyte **ende** also his broyr/
Ascension day Luk. xvi. e. per was a nche **ende** bileene to hym/
Ascension day i. pet. i. e. we not synge in **ende** zoure hertis.
Ascension day Act. v. c. Rile ze deeme y **ende** of heuenes/
Ascension day f. Johis. iij. d. Zile ze wondre **ende** werk + trupe/
Ascension day Luk. xxiij. d. A man made a g. **ende** taste my copet/
Ascension day f. pet. iij. e. perfore I seye + **ende** of trupe/
Ascension day Act. x. f. And whane he w. **ende** yese pingis/
Ascension day f. pet. v. d. Be ze mekid vnd **ende** make sad/
Ascension day Luk. x. a. Pupplicans + syn **ende** dinge penance/
Ascension day i. pet. iij. f. pe lord helpe me **ende** of worldis amen/
Ascension day Act. v. e. ze pon conleifige **ende** in to helle/
Ascension day Rom. viij. e. I deeme pat pe pi **ende** of oure bodi/
Ascension day Luk. vi. h. ze ze iustful as **ende** broyeris ze/
Ascension day f. Joh. iij. b. In pis ping we. **ende** as he wallute/
Ascension day Act. xvi. c. hise discipulis an **ende** fro pat hour/
Ascension day f. pet. iij. c. In seip alle of oo **ende** in zoure hertis/
Ascension day Luk. v. a. Whane pe puple **ende** sueten hym/
Ascension day i. pet. iij. a. I bideche firste of **ende** and in trupe/
Ascension day Luk. viij. b. It was doen ian **ende** obeyen to hym/
Ascension day Romis. v. b. Whiche eise we b. **ende** crist omre lord/
Ascension day Act. v. d. But zoure iustful **ende** oftre pi zift/
Ascension day f. Jo. iij. e. I wrot not to f. **ende** eulastinge lif/
Ascension day Act. x. d. Whane iht was. **ende** anentis god/
Ascension day Romis. vi. e. I seye pat ping y **ende** ihu oure lord/
Ascension day Act. viij. a. Whane myche pe **ende** he leste hem/
Ascension day Romis. viij. a. Rom no pig of **ende** lif and pees/
Ascension day Act. xij. a. Iht wente bi cor **ende** cōtempynd inoent/
Ascension day Rom. viij. d. Bysai we beu det **ende** to gude wyf cit/
Ascension day Act. viij. d. Be ze war of fal **ende** of heuenes/
Ascension day Rom. v. b. God comendip his **ende** lord ihu crist/
Ascension day Act. x. g. paistur we sauen **ende** not quenched/
Ascension day f. cor. x. b. pat we be not **ende** moult luffre/
Ascension day Luk. xvi. a. per was a nche **ende** tabernaculis/

Wednesday Rom. vi. d. Witen ze not p^r **ende** of rntfulnece/
Sonday Luk. xvi. c. He pat is trewe. **ende** ablypacion bi to god/
Wednesday i. cor. xii. a. ze witen p^r ishu **ende** as he wole/
Sonday Luk. xxi. g. He sai pe cytee **ende** day in pe temple/
Wednesday i. cor. xv. a. For eñ fleisch is **ende** p^r is spual/
Sonday Luk. xxi. b. Gake ze heede to **ende** mānys tone/
Wednesday i. cor. xv. c. Bripereñ i make **ende** voide i me/
Sonday Luk. xxi. a. He seide also to **ende** be enhauntyd/
Wednesday i. cor. vi. f. Witen ze not pat **ende** i joure bodi/
Sonday Luk. xxi. a. He seide also to **ende** chuge to hi/
Wednesday i. cor. iii. b. We han sich tuit **ende** in glozhe/
Sonday q. vi. f. Jhe jete our fro **ende** men sphe/
Wednesday i. cor. iii. c. We prechen not. **ende** oure lodys/
Sonday q. vi. e. pane ihe bigan **ende** pan to you/
Wednesday Galat. iii. d. Biheddis weten **ende** pat bileenen/
Sonday Luk. x. f. Glesid be pe ge **ende** lish maner/
Wednesday i. test. ii. d. Bripereñ be ze myn **ende** han bileened/
Sonday q. vi. d. pe farisees weten **ende** in his name/
Wednesday Gal. v. d. Walke ze i quyt **ende** i conertigis/
Sonday Luk. xxi. d. Jhe wente in to **ende** maid pee same/
Wednesday ii. cor. vi. f. Jhe ze here zok **ende** drete of god/
Sonday Luk. xxi. d. Don of pe peple **ende** god feerdy he/
Wednesday Gal. v. f. ff we lyuen bi sp **ende** of pe fey/
Sonday q. vi. f. No man mai ser **ende** ast to you/
Wednesday i. Jhm. i. c. We witen pat pe **ende** in crist ihu/
Sonday Luk. xxi. a. It was coen ion **ende** pese yngis/
Wednesday e. fte. ii. e. I are v^r ze taile **ende** of woldis/
Sonday Luk. vii. b. Jhe wente in to a **ende** his puple/
Wednesday Colos. ii. c. Se ze pat no man **ende** alle gyltis/
Sonday q. vii. e. And vei camen to **ende** to no man/
Wednesday e. fte. iii. a. I bouiden for pe **ende** in us alle/
Sonday Luk. xxi. a. Whane he hadde **ende** schal be hyed/
Wednesday Amos. ii. c. To dayes comen **ende** lord pi god/
Sonday on ymbir e. fte. vii. a. All pe peple gade **ende** zoe strengre/
Wednesday q. vi. d. Don of pe cūpny **ende** i factyng/
Sonday e. fte. xxi. d. Jhe be von coner **ende** walke i hem/
Wednesday Luk. vii. f. Don of pe farisee **ende** pon in pees/

Sunday i. test. xxi. e. pe lord god quik **ende** halp dayes/
Wednesday q. vi. f. pe lord god quik to **ende** lord zoure god/
Sonday i. test. vii. f. lord onre god feer **ende** f^r wite dayes/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. e. pe word of pe lord **ende** lord of woldis/
Sonday i. test. xxi. k. pe angel of pe lord **ende** i to woldis/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. a. pe tabernacle was **ende** redempcion/
Sonday i. test. xxi. b. Aman hadde a tige **ende** coen of hym/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. d. Jo paubingis to m **ende** lord ihu crist/
Sonday i. test. xxi. f. ffandes heeringe **ende** are hym more
Wednesday i. test. xxi. f. i blesche zon by de **ende** zon alle men/
Sonday i. test. xxi. f. pe kigdom of bene **ende** of pe world/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. f. Se ze remild i pe **ende** to pe uedy/
Sonday i. test. xxi. a. Jhu wente up i to **ende** pwer to he/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. g. Bripereñ stonde ze **ende** puaence of cr/
Sonday i. test. xxi. g. Wilaplis came to **ende** of leria lere he/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. d. Se ze: hois warty **ende** drete of crist/
Sonday i. test. xxi. a. Jhe answente i quik **ende** sepe chosen/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. a. Ze confortid i ge **ende** in alle yngis/
Sonday i. test. xxi. c. He seide to hi p^r **ende** reymie of god/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. c. Ze ze confortid i pe **ende** pe word of god/
Sonday i. test. xxi. f. Altil kyng was **ende** al his hous/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. c. ze loued bripereñ of **ende** pe lord ihu/
Sonday i. test. xxi. c. It was coen i ano **ende** co of ihu/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. b. Onaminge pis ilk **ende** p^rying of god/
Sonday i. test. xxi. f. pe k^rngdom of te **ende** zoure heiris/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. d. We witen p^r what **ende** of ihu crist/
Sonday i. test. xxi. e. Truly i sef to you **ende** zoure synnes/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. f. Bripereñ be ze myt **ende** soget to hym/
Sonday i. test. xxi. d. pane farisees zae **ende** ven of god/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. d. ff pozu pe gylt of **ende** crist oure lord/
Sonday i. test. xxi. f. Whane vei came **ende** and for me/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. c. perfore we haue **ende** of synnes/
Sonday i. test. xxi. c. whilis p^r ihu quik **ende** damelid was/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. c. i nyle pat ze be m **ende** glozie of god/
Sonday i. test. xxi. f. Aman hadde tybo **ende** bileuete to hi/
Wednesday i. test. xxi. v. To dayes comen **ende** owne lond/
Sonday i. test. xxi. v. Whane ihu hadde **ende** i to pe world/

for 70

7

Dedicaou Luk. xij. a. The turnede azen eende. pat perichne/
Sunda i vrs Luk. vi. b. Sch y comey to eende was ind greet/
vtas day Ion. x. c. Yur pe feetis of eende. i in pe fadir/
In reuolucio Luk. vi. d. It is not a good eende. maad greet/
Epistal to alle 2 Cor. x. e. I Iou sai pe holy eende. alle pigis uelbe/
Here senden pe conuincals & fenals & bigynen pe comenacionis i vis ordie/
Comenacion of oure lady aduent I saye. viij. & luk. i. as on pe ynde
Wednesday i aduent Also sw citmaste to rauduaste. Dyte ij. & luk
ij. as on crist mane uszr at ye sende malle.
Alo in al. 2 Cor. xij. f. fto ye bigyning eende myn wybolding/
for yme Ion. xij. g. Buidis pe crulle eende i to his modir/
Comenacion of oure lady in alle & ymes epistal. 2 Cor. xij. h. and pe gospel of luk. xij. i. as on ye assumpcion euen/
Comenacion of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. j. ye gte of oure eende ush oure lord/
of pe tynge Romis. xij. k. Al pe huzelle of eende i to worldis/
of pe tynge Ion. xij. l. Whane ye cofarto eende tolde to zou/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. m. Whane ye apallis eende pe holy goot/
of pe tynge Ion. xij. n. If ony mau louey eende to me so i do/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. o. He melere hi taf eende of god ye fadir/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. p. He wente up to ie eende azen to lif/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. q. He seide to me eende worlchye p god/
of pe tynge Ion. xij. r. Alur pe se pigis i eende he was holden/
of pe tynge I saye. xij. s. In pat day zift sh eende lord almyti/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. t. He sutyge azens eende al hir lyfode/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. u. pe pitis maten p eende in yuel tyme/
of pe tynge Ion. xij. v. Lo ye hour comey eende pe world/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. w. Rise up to gidere eende lord my god/
of pe tynge Luk. viij. x. And it was doen i eende obeyen to hym/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. y. Wher vrominge a eende pese yngis/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. z. Rule ze de bisy eende mit to zou/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. aa. Lord kyng almy eende p. lyng pee/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. ab. Truli i sepe to zou eende zou zoure synes/
of pe tynge Romis. viij. ac. I delire to gidere eende mit oure lord/
of pe tynge Ion. xij. ad. It ze diuelsen i me eende doen to zou/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. ae. If oure wikkidnes eende forlabe you us/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. af. Are ze & it shal be eende pat azen hym/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. ag. pe lord god of heue eende before pee/
of pe tynge 2 Cor. xij. ah.

ringe men 2 Cor. xij. b. So ze & pche ze. eende to yulke qtee/
& pilgryms 2 Cor. xij. c. Wren ze not pat eende in zoure body/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. d. Stansees camen eende hay ioyued/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. e. We wolen not p eende in pese wordis/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. f. Spekyng to gide eende fto synes/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. g. I hente a vois fro eende suen hein/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. h. It crist is schid. eende in his ordie/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. i. Martha seide to i eende to vis world/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. j. Al ping pat ye fad eende in pe laste day/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. k. Truli truli i sepe eende azenlig of com/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. l. For as ye fadir i eende in to list/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. m. I am breed of lif eende in pe laste day/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. n. Truli truli i sepe eende in pe laste day/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. o. If ony of zou is. eende ze be saued/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. p. He ros up fro eende & helde hem/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. q. God comendy his eende ye list of hym/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. r. He wente ont & eende to penance/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. s. and bigynney ye prophe sanctor/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. t. ye blessing of ye eende azenne of glorie/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. u. Ion stow & tibe eende on man? sone/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. v. Bi herte me bilce eende of ye world/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. w. He walkide bidad eende sueten hym/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. x. o ye greet prest eende suet of suernate/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. y. As aman p goep eende iore of vi lord/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. z. Bi herte me bilce eende of ye world/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. aa. Alur pat ion wa eende sueten hym/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ab. I as a vyne fruy eende euastange lye/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ac. pe bock of ye gra eende is clepid crub/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ad. pe blessing of pe eende azenne of glorie/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ae. I am a vy vyne eende be doen to zou/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. af. How ze ben not gide eende pe holy goot/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ag. Thomas oon of eende han bileued/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ah. Saul yit a blower eende pat is crist/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ai. Deur auzende & eende euastange lye/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. aj. Lo i sende myn an eende pe lord almyti/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. ak. And alur pat ye eende vi peple israel/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. al. Deur apital of ihu eende of ihu crist/
for weidigis 2 Cor. xij. am.

euangelist: Luk. x. a. pe lord ihu ordey cende worpi his husre
vigil of s. Sap. iii. b. pe soules of pe nrt cende wip outen cende
syndor rinde loon. xv. c. i am a vyne. ze pe cende be doen to you/
S. Symour. Romis viij. d. we witen p'to nre cende oure lord/
day rinde ap. loon. xv. e. vis is my coman cende xene to you/
zihalewen. elph. v. c. i say + lo in pe mys cende of wordis/
euen. Jan. xvi. c. holy fadir hepe cende + i in hem/
S. zihalewen. elph. vii. b. i say a nos angel cende of wordis amen/
day. q. v. a. ihu seinge pe pu cende in heuenes/
Alle coulen. i. test. iij. c. we wolen not p't cende in yere wordis/
day. loon. xi. c. martha seide to ihu cende to vis world/
S. Clement. filip. iij. a. my berperen moost cende bok of iust/
Luk. xi. b. Anworpi ma wete cende to ierlm/
Here cendip ye propre cautoy. and bigymen pe comou law/
S. b. v. a. Esh bishop taken cende of melchisedech/
ffor pope. q. xij. c. Se ze wake ze cende wake ze/
+ martir. Luk. xix. b. Al worpi man we cende in to ierlm/
S. b. xij. c. Aile ze led a wey cende is distressed/
ffil. iij. a. my berperen moost cende pe bok of list/
S. b. v. a. Esh bishop take cende of melchisedech/
q. x. c. No ping is hid. cende is in heuenes/
ffor bishop. Ephew. xij. c. Aile ze be led a cende is distressed/
+ martir. loon. xv. a. i am a vi vyne. cende doen to you/
i cor. iij. d. we den maid a qm cende denborpe sones/
q. x. d. whane pei p'suen cende diete ze not he/
ii tym. ij. b. No man holdige cende heueli glorie/
ij tym. ij. x. b. Be p' m'ful + but p' hast cende p'seruaon/
Luk. x. d. The v' hery you cende writu in heuenes
S. b. xij. c. Blissid is pe ma cende of halewis/
Luk. xij. c. It ony man comy cende my distyphs/
S. b. ij. a. my lord god you cende of pe lord/
q. xij. b. pe ligitom of heue cende pigis + olte/
S. b. ij. c. i schal knowlede cende susteynyge yee/
S. b. xij. d. pe lord hay zonen cende be blestid/
i cor. vii. c. Of vugyns i ha cende lod + spyr/
q. x. a. pe ligit of heue cende day ne pe hour/
Sap. iij. b. Thore fair is a cha cende i refraichyng/
P. x. full. p' ma is blestid cend
loos oure god. q. xij. It ony
ma wole as i his kyngdom

Vingpus +

martin. math. x. a. pe reyne lyk to ten cende ne pe hour/
S. b. ij. a. my lord you halt cende name of pe lord/
q. xij. b. pe ligit lyk to tre cende yingis + olte/
S. b. x. c. whiche bi fey oner cende wittetig of fey/
John. x. e. But a torn of wyse cende worlchye hi/
S. b. xij. c. blestid is pe ma cende of halewis/
q. x. f. It ony man wole cende i his kyngdom/
ij tym. iij. a. i wittetig difore cende his comyng/
Luk. x. d. Strif was maid cende lymedis of iust/
q. x. d. stene ful of g'f and pei wete cende he diete/
q. x. f. lo i sente to you cende name of pe lord/
S. b. ij. c. ze dzedynge pe lo cende is pe lord / ony god/
q. x. g. So ze i to al pe w. cende were hool/
S. b. ij. a. i schal knowlede cende susteynyge yee/
S. b. x. c. Aile ze be lad a cende god is distressed/
pe nrtwile forso cende chosen of hi/
Luk. x. a. Be ze war of soure cende angels of god/
S. b. xij. b. pat man is blestid cende lord oure god/
q. x. e. No ping is hid. cende p' is i heuenes/
S. b. v. a. Esh bishop tak cende of melchisedech/
q. x. c. shc wente a dou cende his nyp corn/
Sap. v. d. kytibise me for cende certeyn place/
q. x. d. whane pei p'sue cende ote ze not he/
Luk. v. f. whane hie zen cende myche i heuene/
i cor. iij. d. we den maid a cende denborpe sones/
q. x. c. lo i cende you as cende schal be fait/
Sap. iij. b. pe soules of nrtw cende wip oute cende/
Luk. x. c. whane ze schulen cende i to wittetig/
P. x. d. blestid is pe man cende wexen to gite/
Luk. x. d. The v' hery you cende writu i heuenes
Sap. x. b. pe lord ladde pe nrt cende eulastynge deernede/
q. x. b. Ama par goep i pul cende loye of vi lord/
S. b. ij. a. my lord god you cende name of pe lord/
q. x. f. Se ze wake ze + cende wake ze/
P. x. xij. lo pe gret prest. cende smel of swetneste/
S. b. x. pe lord hay zone. cende be blestid/
q. v. b. ze den fait of ety cende sa i heuenes/
ffor bishapis +

confessours Sap. i.º. þe lord lade þe **ceute** chylantige cleernes/
 Luk. xii.º. b. I woyþi man wen **ceute** up to ierlū/
 Sap viii.º. wisdom oñcomey **ceute** werlus of hi/
 qñ. xvi.º. a. þe kyngdom of to **ceute** ne þe hour/
 ij. cor. x.º. g. the pat gloney in **ceute** vgyu to aut/
 Jer. i.º. b. waen is þe word **ceute** + plaunte/
vingyū not Luk. i.º. a. þer was a prest **ceute** to þe lord/
martir Ba. li.º. qñ. lxx.º. god you **ceute** of þe lord/
 qñ. xii.º. b. þe kyngdō lyk to **ceute** vīgnis + colde/
 B. lxxv.º. f. þe ofe were maid **ceute** offryge hi silt/
 Luk. xii.º. f. Be zoe leendis god **ceute** schal come/
Confessour Sa. xlii.º. þe lord hay zoue **ceute** be blestid/
+ doctour qñ. v.º. b. ze ven salt of þe **ceute** is i henenes/
 Sap. i.º. þe lord lade þe ngt **ceute** deruene/
 qñ. xii.º. f. Se ze wale ze + **ceute** wake ze
 Sa. xlii.º. þe iustise man **ceute** i to genaciou/
for an abbot Luk. xi.º. f. so man tendy a **ceute** lgt to þee/

There ceudy þe table upon þe table upon þe tennal and upon þe
 propie cō. and upon þe comoun cō. of pūstis + goſpels of þe
 newe lawe þat ben red in þe churche þom þe zeer: wiy þe cotagous
 of hē where þei schulen be founden i þe zeer/

from ye myddys of September unto ye myddys of December is open tyme of plantyng and yet from ye
myddys of January unto ye myddys of March is open tyme of gade to chese whan ye ayone is wrythyn
or up dayer clae tasez plene lunc. *ppp ppp ppp ppp ppp* ppp dayer afor ye comthay
it is gode to graffe in or in dayer befor ye change
It for plantyng of al man thynge ye day of ye change, ye secnde and ye m^{de} ben
ye best dayer

Putte a stokke of welsh in ye erth in a longe rutte lyke a forde, and lette hit growe, yam a bone in
make hole endeloge, in whas dyffyr put smale hole of a milbery tree end in wylf of weggys at
plantyng end to stonde in ye dyffyr hole of a milbery tree end in wylf of weggys at
And noon oper tree shal peryshe yat is planted in this wyse, after ye first yer or ye secnde yer
albye ye brammth with a sharpe sawe and transplante him in apte place
make a bare place ye quarte of yf fynyge brede in a faw bolle of apperence or perence, clage hit and
hit fast with moste as ye doo in graffynge and so lette it growe al ye yer and yer wol rise a greet
And ye next yer ye may unbrynde it, and set it wher yon delych, and thus may ye have a gardyn in
tyme of goetnesse of a gode staffe
Take longe rodde dyffyr and sette him in a mydd grounde in a mydd grounde by elvene the. n. seyn
many dayer, and than a none upon ayghelmasse sleve ye rodde end and put ye rodde downe in
ye erth, and so lette him growe, and in any fore whan seson comth sette a graffe, and so let it w
al ye next yer, than sawe of saye knotte and in tyme of seson sette him, and within .3. or 4. y
ye may have a fyny gardyne without cost that wol be ye secnd or ye m^{de} yer
Slyfyn also of trees sette in tyme of yer wol be sone, but it wol be longe or they be greet
Take ye harde peppys of rose yat ben ripe, and sawe him in ye erth in februl or in marche, d
whan yey spryngge delbe him wel with water, and after a yer complete y mayse fuplante by
delve a bone ye rose ye space of an hand brede or .n. and ayofte her syngs with warme lunc
So mayse y have rose tynny
Synde Onyon seide or leke seed in a softe lymmen douce, were him wel and putte in ye erth mo
th fyny depe, so shal thay wege greet
Graffe on an holme tree a graffe of an Oke, and it shal be grene wynt and sament





To Rome

Ad Romayns

۱۲۱

Refert Ioseph^{us} in p^{re}dicente d^{omi}no egiptu non fuisse templu i egipto in q^{uo} n^{on} cadert p^{er} c^{on}firmert aliq^{ui} idoli^{um} m^{ul}ta
 in p^{re}dicente egiptu i c^{on}uocibuntur simulacra ei^{us}
 p^{ro}ph^{eta} antia^{ti}u rex p^{ro}ph^{eta}u f^{ili}u d^{omi}nⁱ i p^{ro}ph^{eta} d^{omi}nⁱ
 i ieroloma neceat pueru^m antia^{ti}u iohem^{um}
 i ieroloma i nepos herodis magni
 i ieroloma iacobu dandem in carcere p^{ro}ph^{eta}u

Here bigynne we newe testamēt

Born as he is putt first i orde.
 so first he wroot pe gospel in ier
 is langage whos clepys to god wa
 fro pypplicanis dedis he takige bi
 fore. pe bigynnyngis of tureyne. Abrahim
z daun in genacioun of cat.
of oon f is abrahim of pe which pe
firste curcialiou was in fleuth of
anoy daun whos elecon was aftu
herte / of hope fadris forfore cat ws
born z so pe nouibre of fourtene y
es putt. he treathige for pe bigyn
nyng. fro pe feyr of blesnyge f was
in abrahim into pe tyme of chesnyg
f was in daun z chesnyge fro chesig.
 anoon into pe day of tynnyngioun / z
 oufnyge fro pe day of tynnyngioun.
 anoon ito cat. he thewys pe genaci
 on of re comyg of cat / fulfille epr
 passinge in renyng y he makige go
 od bove to pe nouibre z to pe tyme bo
 ve schilde thewe hi ilk what he we
 re / and in hym self mynistrige pe
 werk of god. also in hem whos kyn
 rede he putte of schilde not denye
 pe witnesse of cat. worchige fro pe
 bigynnyng of alle. whiche pygis pe
 tyme pe ordre pe nouibre pe dispo
 sicion ep pe rekon is y cat is god
 pat is necessaie to pe feyr pe whi
 ch was maid of albmman maid on
 der latte. born of amayde sustre
 in fleith al ryg. fathid i pe croll
 y he oucomygge pulke pygis in hy
 silk ryfge in body bove pe name
 of pe fadn. in fadris to pe sone. z
 pe sones name to pe fadn. restoi
 ge in sones wyrounte bigynnyng is
 wite endyng thewpyng pe fadn.

to be oon wip hi for he is oon in ve is
hich gospels it is profitable to me de
sirige god so to knowe ye furste ye
mydmeite of ye laste y^e yei redige
bi alle pigis vnderstonde bope ye
clepig of ye apostle & ye werke of ye
gospel & ye loue of god kennege i fle
uith and yei be knowe in hym in ye wh
ich yei be knowe & desir^e to knowe
to us forsope it was to studie of pre
uige bope to take ye fey of pig do
& not to be stille to me lechige bish
liche ye ordynance of god wordhige
to be vnderstonde // **Here endy ye**
prolog: & bigynney ye gospel of maad

The book of re/

generationi of ihu
 en: pe lone of dauid
 pe lone of Abrahā
 Abrahā gedrite or bigat
 ac Isaac forloze byggat iacob
 iacob forloze byggat iudas & his
 breperē iudas forloze byggat pha
 res & zaram of thamar / feres for
 loze byggat ešrom / Ešrom forlo
 ze byggat aram / Aram forloze
 byggat ammadab / Ammadab for
 loze byggat nason / Nason for
 loze byggat salmon / Salmo forloze
 bigat booz of raab / Booz forloze
 bigat obeth of rith / Obeth forlo
 ze bigat ielle / Ielle forloze bigat da
 uid / David forloze byggat
 Salomon of f. wōmā f. was
 vires wif / Salomō forloze bigat
 roboam / Roboam forloze bigat ab
 as / Abas forloze bigat ala / Ala for
 loze bigat iosephath / Iosephath forlo
 ze bigat iozani / Iozani forloze bigat
 osias / Osias forloze bigat ioathan
 ioathan forloze bigat achaz / Achaz